

# I'M REALLY A SUPERSTAR

**BOOK 13** 

Chang Yu

**EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES** 

### I'm Really A Superstar

(我真是大明星) by Chang Yu (尝谕)

#### Synopsis

Zhang Ye was originally a mundane college graduate with aspiring dreams to become a star, but unfortunately has below average looks and height. However one day, he woke up and suddenly found himself in a parallel world!

It's like the same world, but wait a minute...many brands, celebrities and even famous works from his world changed and are gone in this new world!

Armed with the profound literary knowledge of his previous world and a heaven-defying Game Ring that gives him magical items, stats and skills, Zhang Ye embarks on a journey to pursue his life-long dream of becoming famous!

Follow Zhang Ye as he takes the new world by storm, one plagiarized piece at a time, to hilarious reactions!

### Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Legge & CKtalon @ Wuxiaworld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

### Chapter 1101: Changhe 9-dan gets utterly demolished!

Later that morning.

In the study on the second floor of Old Wu's house.

"Old Wu, I'll be using your computer for a while."

"Go ahead."

"You're really not going to the office today?"

"I've already asked for the day off, so I won't be going and will be resting today."

"Yeah, don't exhaust yourself. Let the people below handle things for now."

"I'll leave you to whatever you're doing. I'm going out to buy some groceries so that I can whip up something good for you when noon rolls around."

"Alright, thank you so much."

Wu Zeqing went back to her bedroom to get changed.

When Old Wu left, Zhang Ye turned on the computer immediately. This was not the computer that Wu Zeqing usually used. That laptop was kept in her bedroom. This computer in the study was just an extra one. Other than the commonly used programs, it was basically clean and did not have much software installed on it.

He connected to the Internet and loaded a web page.

He downloaded a software client from the Online Go Server.

After installing it, Zhang Ye launched it and had a look. The interface was very clean and professional looking. It was worthy of being the country's largest Internet Go server. It was split into many different sections, including the beginner section, the

amateur section, the professional section, the practice section, the free play section, and even had an events and tournament mode. Zhang Ye logged on to the server as a guest and found that he could only access the beginner section. So he typed in some information to register an account.

What should he call himself?

Alright, I'll just go with "YE." This was the romanized spelling of his Chinese name "烨."

After he completed the account registration, he managed to gain access to most of the sections in the server.

In the public chat box, there were quite a lot of people "shouting."

"Someone come to the amateur section!"

"Amateur <u>5-dan</u> player <u>LF</u> similar level opponent!"

"LF teachers for instruction."

"LF good player with good connection speed. No handicap!"

"Haha, I've won three in a row and got promoted in rank!"

"There's a live broadcast of a professional match in the afternoon. Who's watching?"

"Not me. Today's match won't be interesting as those two pros are both newcomers, so there's a limit to how good they are. Tomorrow's match between Daqi and Liu Di 7-dan is the match to watch!"

"I have to say, Old Liu is no longer as strong as he was back when."

"Yeah, he's getting old."

There were many people online and the server was bustling with activity. The atmosphere in here was also quite good.

• • •

Meanwhile.

Old Wu's parents' house.

After breakfast, Wu Changhe asked his wife, "What did that kid say?"

Li Qinqin said, "What else can he say? If you don't want him to be here, do you think he would come over?"

Wu Changhe harrumphed, "If he ever calls again, don't answer. His character is much too awful!"

"I don't see that at all." Li Qinqin shook her head.

Wu Changhe scorned, "That's because you don't have enough social experience. Let me tell you this: We mustn't let our daughter mix with him too much. Quickly continue looking for a few more candidates that we can introduce to her. How dare he try those dirty tricks on me? He even dares to sneak up on me while I had my defenses down? Does he take me, Changhe 9-dan, to really be a weakling? He must not know that even I am afraid of myself when I get serious! Just because he beat me once by sneaking up on me, he's getting all arrogant? He even dares to find his way up to my house now to challenge me? Fancy that! How very impulsive! If it weren't for our daughter's sake, I would definitely have made him come over. I would slaughter him in a 10-game match and leave him without a win. Don't you believe me?"

Li Qinqin rolled her eyes. "Whatever you say."

Wu Changhe stood up and strolled back inside the den. He powered on his computer and said, "Don't disturb me. I'm going online to see if I can find an opponent to play against."

The computer turned on.

He went online.

Then signed into the Online Go server.

As Wu Changhe was quite old, he wasn't too familiar with operating a computer and was still using "two-fingered typing."

Li Qinqin brewed a pot of tea for him as usual.

Wu Changhe sipped the tea and hummed a Peking opera tune as he bobbed his head around while searching for players on the server.

All of a sudden, he received a message from someone on his friends' list who probably saw him come online.

Beep beep.

Sun Minqi: "Teacher Changhe, you're online today?"

Wu Changhe hunt-and-peck typed: "Oh, it's Little Sun."

Sun Minqi: "Are you free now? Could you give me an instructional game?"

Wu Changhe smiled and said: "Sure, I was just looking for an opponent."

Sun Minqi said excitedly: "I'll wait for you to set up a room then. I'll go look for you there."

Wu Changhe quickly got a room set up with a password. Other players were allowed to access this room to view the match, but not allowed to play against him. Only the person with the password was allowed to do so. This was what was commonly known as a "private game" on the Internet Go servers. Then he sent the password to Sun Minqi and his opponent joined the game very quickly.

The battle was about to start.

With this matchup, many of the netizens on the server were attracted to the game.

"Wow, Table 288 in Zone 2! Quickly come and see this!"

"It's Changhe 9-dan vs. Sun Minqi 3-dan!"

"A battle of Go pros!"

"Is it an instructional game?

"It's probably a serious match!"

"Is that so? Then we must definitely go over and watch!"

"Changhe 9-dan? A god of the Go world!"

"Yeah, he once stood at the top of the Go world. The current number one and number five players in the World Go Ratings List were both his disciples once!"

Wu Changhe clearly often came online to play Go and had many netizens following his games. When the game began, the netizens received a notification and came over to watch immediately!

The number of viewers soared!

100!

500!

1,000!

There were also a few professional players' accounts that appeared in the viewers list in the room. These players were all the more well-known ones among the currently active professional players!

The Go match began.

Wu Changhe would be playing second as he took the white stones.

Sun Minqi, who took black, would start the play.

This match went by quickly, due to Sun Minqi committing an error that a pro shouldn't have made around the 30th move. Wu Changhe seized on this and pressed him hard. In the end, Sun Minqi was forced to resign midmatch.

The viewers exclaimed endlessly.

"What a beautiful match!"

"Teacher Wu is still as good as ever!"

"Yeah, a master is a master. He plays so steadily!"

"Actually, if Teacher Changhe had continued to play in professional Go tournaments, he would definitely still be a very high level pro. I wonder why he decided to retire."

"Amazing!"

"I had fun watching!"

Wu Changhe started to give his opponent an explanation of the game through replay. "Over here, why did you make this move?"

Sun Minqi typed: "It was a mistake."

Wu Changhe: "It would have been better to go this way."

"Thank you for your guidance," Sun Minqi said earnestly.

Back at home.

Wu Changhe was laughing loudly. "Fill the teapot, fill it up!"

Li Qinqin came over with a thermos. She said with a smile, "Did you win?"

"But of course!" Wu Changhe was very happy.

Li Qinqin asked, "Who did you play against?"

Wu Changhe said, "Sun Minqi, Little Sun."

Li Qinqin said, "Little Sun hasn't been ranked all that high this year. He's been average."

"Haha, it's not that he's bad, it's that I'm too good," Wu Changhe bragged. "If I took part in a pro tournament, I'm sure that I could still play as I did 20 years ago. Do you believe me?"

Li Qinqin reluctantly said, "Of course I believe you. Is that good enough for you?" She followed up with, "But I wonder who it was that got defeated by an amateur yesterday even though he had been given a two stone handicap."

But Wu Changhe didn't even seem to hear these words. "I'll

continue playing. This time, I'm going to find a higher level player. Otherwise, it won't be fun to play!"

On the server.

There were a lot of people who were asking to play him. Some were amateurs, while others were professionals.

Wu Changhe just laughed as he started picking who he wanted to play next. The number of netizens who came to view the game also increased!

But right as Wu Changhe was deciding on who to play against next, he suddenly saw that someone had come in to take Sun Minqi's place after Little Sun had left the room. It wasn't a viewer but a player who had taken the seat across from him. However, Wu Changhe remembered that he had set a password for the room, so an outsider couldn't have just taken the seat like this. Could Little Sun have given this player the password then? This Little Sun, how could he be so unparticular like that!

Who was this person?

YE?

It wasn't a real name?

The fellow Go players were all getting thrilled.

"Someone's here!"

"There's another player!"

"Who is it?"

"I don't know."

"His registration date is today?"

"Damn, who could this be? Did Teacher Changhe send the invite?"

A lot of the spectators were startled.

YE spoke: "Teacher Changhe, please instruct me."

When Wu Changhe saw this, he decided not to kick YE out. He thought that if it was someone that Little Sun had invited, then they should not be too bad. So he decided to go ahead with the game.

The two of them clicked the "Ready" button.

The game began!

YE took black and went first.

Wu Changhe smiled as he used the mouse to place his stones.

Five moves.

10 moves.

20 moves.

In the beginning, Wu Changhe did not sense anything.

The Go players spectating also did not seem to have noticed anything.

It was just a very common opening, and a very common way of playing. There wasn't anything new or unusual about the moves, and it even felt a little boring to watch. This game was just too by the book with neither side getting an advantage. But when Black reached the 23rd move, things changed!

It was a beautiful move!

So beautiful that it astonished the viewers!

"Holy shit!"

"What a great move!"

"Wow, this is a good one!"

"This move by the black stones is so powerful!"

This unrestrained move had allowed the black stones that were almost dead in the upper left corner to come back to life!

Wu Changhe was very surprised and tried to rectify the situation!

But after another two moves, he realized that there was nothing he could do about it. He could only clench his teeth and calmly step back from the deadlocked situation in the upper left corner. He would just have to attack in the middle so that he could set up his opening in advance!

However, YE did not fall for it. As he had gained the tempo, he played right in the lower right to take on Wu Changhe's white stones!

His attack was extremely ruthless!

It was extremely aggressive!

Wu Changhe was caught off guard and had to try to turn things around again!

Move after move!

YE kept pressing harder and harder!

Wu Changhe was slowly being pushed back!

Even before they reached the endgame, Wu Changhe's opening was taken apart when YE placed another stone down on the central region of the board. Wu Changhe stared at the screen with a dark look. He stared at it without blinking and thought for a full ten minutes before giving up and resigning!

YE was victorious!

The room flew into an uproar!

"YE won?"

"Fuck!"

"Changhe 9-dan lost?"

"This...this..."

"How ruthless! Which godly person is this YE?"

"Yeah, which Go pro's alt is this?"

"Damn, weren't these territorial battles just so beautiful?"

A lot of the people were simply in disbelief!

This was because to them, Changhe 9-dan was already the highest peak to conquer. Although his Go skill had already regressed by a lot, he still should not have lost this badly to an unknown person, right? He didn't even manage to make it to the endgame? He resigned right in the midgame? H-How could this be!

Wu Changhe broke out in cold sweat!

He immediately went looking for Sun Minqi. "Little Sun, who did you give the password to?"

Sun Minqi was still replaying the match he had just had with Wu Changhe. He was completely confused by this question. "Ah? Teacher Changhe, what password? But I didn't give it to anyone?"

Wu Changhe quickly typed: "Then who is this YE?"

Sun Minqi said: "I, I don't know. What YE?"

Only then was Wu Changhe convinced that Sun Minqi did not know anything about this. This YE person that suddenly went into the match room was not invited by Little Sun at all!

Then who are you?

Who the fuck are you?

Dan Rank

Looking for

**Hunt and Peck** 

<u>Fuseki</u>

## Chapter 1102: Wu Changhe calls for reinforcements!

4,000 viewers.

5,000 viewers.

6,000 viewers.

The number of people in the room kept increasing.

After a big commotion in the public chat box, numerous people came into the room to view the game!

"What?"

"Changhe 9-dan really lost? He resigned in the midgame?"

"It was just a lucky win, right?"

"Which professional player could this be?"

"I don't know him at all!"

"This YE's playing style seems a little strange. Could it be a Go pro from Japan or Korea trying to provoke us? I've never seen any of our Chinese pros use such a playing style!"

"Let's watch another round."

"Are they going to play again?"

Wu Changhe often played online Go and would also play games with some of the domestic players or even foreign pros. It wasn't like these online Go players had never seen Changhe 9-dan lose before. Even at his peak some 20 years ago, it was impossible for him to never lose a match. There were too many factors affecting the outcome of a Go game. Things like skill, state of mind, luck, and even the air quality and temperature of the venue could decide the victor. But rarely had anyone seen Changhe 9-dan lose so badly!

In the room.

Wu Changhe said: "Another game!"

YE: "Sure."

• • •

In the courtyard house.

Wu Changhe's angry voice sounded, "I won't believe this!"

Li Qinqin entered the room. "What's the matter?"

"Nothing!" Wu Changhe grunted.

Li Qinqin knew that her husband must have lost a game of Go, so she sat down curiously beside him and looked at the computer screen. "YE? Which master is this?"

The second game began.

Wu Changhe took black and went first this time.

"Make your move!" Wu Changhe placed his stone and muttered to himself, "I'll get serious with you this time!"

His opponent placed a stone.

Wu Changhe moved again.

Li Qinqin could tell that her husband had really become serious this time as he thought very long for each move that he made. But seeing how his opponent named YE continued his next sequence of moves, Li Qinqin's expression slightly changed as well. First, the opponent played very quickly like he did not require much time to consider his moves. Second, his strategy was a little odd. Although the majority of his moves followed a traditional sense of play, some of them were very strange moves. But what was even stranger was that YE's moves, which would not be considered the best moves by most people, had actually ended up making a very nice shape on the Go board that no one could have expected!

Who was he?

Li Qinqin was very surprised!

Wu Changhe's expression became darker as he played on!

When YE made a diagonal move in an unexceptional position on the board, Wu Changhe finally realized who he was. Li Qinqin wore an expression of shock as well!

This move was way too familiar!

Other people might not know it, but they were really familiar with it!

This diagonal move was not made that cleverly and was not even considered a standard move. From the looks of the opening strategy and the <u>framework</u> in the smaller division of the board, this was not the best move to make. However, Wu Changhe and Li Qinqin had witnessed someone make this same move just yesterday, and he had relied on this diagonal move as a foundation to instantly reverse things and completely destroy Wu Changhe!

Li Qinqin gasped, "It's Little Zhang!"

Wu Changhe cursed angrily, "That young bastard! So it's him!"

They finally found out who it was!

They finally realized who it was!

In the entire Go world, no one would play that way other than him!

Li Qinqin didn't know how to react. "Didn't you refuse to play him? Didn't you tell him not to come? Look now, he came looking for you instead. This Little Zhang's temper is really interesting." Li Qinqin couldn't help but laugh. The more she laughed, the more she couldn't stop. This was the first time she had witnessed and heard of a future son-in-law getting into this sort of feud with his future father-in-law after his first visit. This Little Zhang was indeed just like the rumors said. He really was not a normal person!

Wu Changhe shouted, "I'll fight him!"

Clink!

He bumped with a stone!

YE nonchalantly placed another stone down!

Wu Changhe said angrily, "That move again? He's trying that move again? Shameless! Shameless to the extreme!"

He was forced to make an attack!

However, YE counterattacked!

When Wu Changhe saw this, he nearly went crazy. "Damn, this young bastard is too devious!"

The house was filled with the sounds of Wu Changhe's cursing!

"Despicable!"

"Shameless!"

"Don't you dare!"

Half an hour later, the outcome was decided.

Even after adding the compensation, YE still beat Wu Changhe by over seven points!

With that, the crowd viewing the match broke into chaos!

"Holy shit!"

"Which god could this YE be!"

"Isn't this too fucking awesome?"

"He was taken totally apart, alright?"

"Where did this amazing person pop out from?"

"Those moves by YE were just so classic!"

Immediately, the public chat box in the Online Go Server was flooded with comments!

"Come quickly!"

"Something big has happened here!"

"Changhe 9-dan was utterly demolished!"

"What?"

"Are you sure?"

"Yes, I'm sure. Quickly come and see!"

Meanwhile.

YE sent a private message.

Only Wu Changhe and he could see this private message.

"Uncle, were you being serious this time?"

Wu Changhe nearly fainted from anger. "Alright, kid! You're great! You're just great!"

"Now will you take back what you said about me having a questionable character?"

Wu Changhe quickly hunt and pecked: "No! You definitely have big issues with your character"

"But I beat you."

"Did you really think I played seriously? Hahahaha, ridiculous! You are too laughable! I only used 60% of my strength to play against you just now!"

"What a coincidence. I only used 50%."

"I used 40%!"

"I used 30%!"

"I used 20%!"

The two of them got into an argument again!

Li Qinqin tugged at him and said with a smile, "That's enough, Changhe. What's the point of boasting like that? A loss is a loss. Previously, you even said that you could beat Little Zhang with your eyes closed. But you're getting smacked in the face by him

now, aren't you? Come on, both you and Little Zhang, just what sorts of tempers do you two have?"

Wu Changhe stared at her. "Go away. Don't bother me!"

Then he sent a message to Zhang Ye. "Rascal, don't get too cocky. If you're so skilled, let's play another game. Do you dare? Ah? Will you accept?"

"I'm waiting!"

"Alright, wait right here! Just wait!"

Wu Changhe stayed in the room and online. Then he stood up and looked for his cell phone. He cursed as he was looking for it, "I'm so pissed off! I'm so pissed off! I'll teach him to act cocky! Watch how I'm going to teach him a lesson!" When he found his cell phone, he picked it up and browsed through his contacts. He found his disciples and called them immediately.

Li Qinqin was stunned. "What are you doing?"

Wu Changhe ignored his wife. The call connected.

"Hello, where are you?"

"Teacher, I'm at the Go Academy."

"Come to my house right now!"

"Huh? We're practicing. You want us to go over now?"

"I want you to come over right now! I want to see you here within 10 minutes! Are your fellow disciples around?"

"They're all here."

"Call them over as well! I don't believe it!"

"Teacher, what happened?"

"Why're you still talking! Come quickly!"

"OK, we'll be there soon!"

Dumbfounded, Li Qinqin asked, "What are you doing, Changhe?"

Wu Changhe said coldly, "I want to make teach that rascal a lesson and teach him what 'there is always someone better out there' means!" Then he returned to the computer and he typed out to Zhang Ye with a sneer: "Wait ten minutes for me!"

YE: "OK."

Li Qinqin rolled her eyes. "This is cheating!"

Wu Changhe objected, "What do you mean by cheating? I'm giving a lesson to the youth! I'll teach that kid what Go is all about!"

Li Qinqin said in a speechless manner, "Those disciples of yours are all ranked within the world's top 30. Do you enjoy getting them here to take on an amateur like Little Zhang?"

Wu Changhe roared with laughter. "Yes! A lot!"

Li Qinqin couldn't think of anything to say.

项/Dǐng/tsukiatari - White bumps into a black stone. The Japanese term is tsukiatari. The <u>bump</u> is not a very usual move, but it has its uses.

### Chapter 1103: Zhang Ye vs. Hu Liang 7-dan!

Later that morning.

10.30 AM.

Downstairs, the door opened. Wu Zeqing returned.

Zhang Ye called out to the floor below, "Old Wu, you're back from grocery shopping?"

"Yes. There were so many people at the market today. I had to line up for a really long time." She placed the grocery bags in her hands down and went upstairs to the study. "What are you doing?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I didn't have anything to do, so I played Go for a while."

Wu Zeqing sniffed the air. "You were smoking?"

Zhang Ye said a little embarrassed, "Hai, I tend to smoke when I'm concentrating on something. I've already opened up the windows to clear away the smell." He quickly wiped off some of the scattered ashes on the table with his hand.

"It's fine." Wu Zeqing said, "I'll buy an ashtray for you later."

Zhang Ye quickly said, "No, no, you don't have to. I'm not going to smoke anymore. I'm planning on quitting."

Wu Zeqing found a saucer for him. "Flick the ashes into this."

"Ai, thanks." Zhang Ye said, "My Old Wu is the best."

Wu Zeqing smiled. "Don't smoke so much. It's bad for your health."

Zhang Ye said, "Alright, I'll remember that and listen to your advice."

Wu Zeqing giggled. "Continue playing. I'll go and make lunch. I'll call you down when it's done."

• • •

Elsewhere.

Old Wu's parents' house.

A minivan suddenly pulled over at the entrance to the courtyard house. The car door opened and a tanned young man in his twenties rushed out of the car, yelling with wooden staff in hand. He ran into the courtyard with a few others trailing behind him.

"Teacher! Ma'am! We're here! What's going on? Did something happen at your house?"

"Hu Liang, why'd you bring that wooden staff along!" snapped the only girl among them.

The oldest person in the group, which was a man in his thirties, boomed, "Find out what's happening first. Little Hu, don't be rash. Let's clear things up first!"

They went into the courtyard.

Li Qinqin came out to receive them when she heard the commotion, but was given a scare. "Little Hu, what's that in your hands?"

Hu Liang said anxiously, "Ma'am, what happened?"

Li Qinqin didn't know how to react. "Put aside the staff for now. You're making me dizzy. How can a current world-class Go player behave like this."

"Aye yai yai." Hu Liang immediately let go of the staff.

Tian Weiwei, the youngest of the group, scratched his head. "Ma'am, Brother Liang was just anxious about you two. When Teacher called us over, we thought that something bad had happened."

Li Qinqin pursed her lips. "What could possibly happen to him!" Chen Ying said, "Then what's the matter, Ma'am?"

Li Qinqin said with a laugh, "Your teacher lost a game of Go."

```
"Ah?"
```

Wu Changhe strode out of the northern house and glowered at his disciples. "Who are you all accusing of losing all the time? Who? I usually lose because I'm trying to coach you. I wasn't playing seriously, understand? None of you are even close to good enough and don't know a lick about humility!"

Chen Ying laughed and said, "Yes, Teacher is the greatest player."

The slightly older Xu Han said, "So you called us over just because of that? We still have a tournament to play in next week. Chen Ying will be going up against Korea's Park Jaeha 8-dan, while I will be taking on Japan's Shinji 7-dan. They're both really tough opponents to play against."

Wu Changhe stared hard at him. "You always have something to say, you always have a lot to do. Do you have to fuss over some minor international tournament? I made you all come here today because I found all of you an opponent! Come with me!" He led the group of his disciples into the house, then pointed at the computer screen. "See that? It's this guy. I want you all to annihilate him! Bury him!"

```
They looked at the screen.

"YE?"
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;Is that it?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Doesn't Teacher lose all the time?"

W---1 111 1

<sup>&</sup>quot;Who could he be?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Is it a pseudonym?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Not many pro Go players use pseudonyms, right?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;I've never heard of this name before?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Ma'am, who is this person?"

Li Qinqin replied, "Him? He is—"

"Don't worry about who he is," Wu Changhe interrupted. "All I can tell you is that this person is an amateur. He's not even a pro Go player and has never received any kind of professional training before. Just treat him as a practice partner and destroy him! Make him cry uncle! Crush him so that he'll shudder at the mere mention of Go!"

Fuck!

Just what kind of grudge is there between the two of you!

The disciples were all sweating and looking at each other, not knowing what to do.

Li Qinqin smacked her lips. "Has Little Zhang tricked and annoyed you?"

Wu Changhe said, "Yes, yes, he has!"

"He's not even part of the Go world. You're just great. Why do you have to keep butting heads with him?" Li Qinqin really had to wash her hands of her husband. "Can you behave more like an elder to these young people? If you lost, then so be it. When did you become such a sore loser?"

Wu Changhe was getting irritated. "Who's a sore loser? Who?"

Li Qinqin pointed at him. "Look."

Hu Liang was the first to step forward. "Teacher! I'll avenge you!"

Wu Changhe nodded in satisfaction. "Good! Take him on, Little Hu!"

"Let me log in to my account first," Hu Liang said.

But Wu Changhe calmly said, "You don't have to; it's too troublesome. Isn't my account already logged on? Since I'm already logged on, just play on my account."

"Huh?"

Wu Changhe glared at him. "What are you hemming and hawing

about?"

Hu Liang wiped away his sweat. "Uh, nothing."

Wu Changhe hunt-and-peck typed: "Rascal! Let's start now! I'll make sure to play you seriously this time! Don't run away!"

You'll be playing seriously?

Aren't I playing?

What's going on? I'll be playing on your behalf?

Hu Liang and his fellow disciples coughed at this for a while but were afraid to voice their thoughts.

YE replied: "I've waited forever. Come on!"

Wu Changhe patted Hu Liang on the shoulder. "Get him for me! Show him your best offense. Beat him to hell!"

Hu Liang rubbed his hands together. "I will, Teacher! Since he's just an amateur, leave him to me!"

Hu Liang.

A Go 7th dan.

As an elite pro Go player, he was ranked 27th in the world this year and ranked 11th in China. He joined the ranks of professional Go when he was 17 and defeated a once legendary Japanese player when he was 20. That match catapulted him to fame and he was recognized as a top-level professional. He was known for an aggressive playstyle and was considered an attacking player.

Unlike Wu Changhe, Hu Liang was currently a high-level star player in professional Go. In terms of experience, he was definitely far behind Wu Changhe. He didn't have as broad an outlook either, or else he wouldn't have become Wu Changhe's disciple. But if they truly played a normal game of Go, Wu Changhe clearly wouldn't defeat Hu Liang. Out of ten games, Hu Liang would probably win nine. This was the difference between an active Go player and a retired one.

As a result, no one thought that Hu Liang would lose.

YE might have been able to beat a retired 9-dan player, but he definitely wouldn't beat an active 7-dan player. No matter how good an amateur player was, even if it were that fella with the nickname Amateur Devil, they would at most be able to equal a 2nd or 3rd dan player. It would be impossible once a 4th dan player came into the picture!

Wu Changhe felt this way, as did Li Qinqin. It was also the same for all those top Chinese Go players in the house. They found a place to sit down and took this opportunity to watch the game for their entertainment and amusement.

• • •

The room reopened!

The fellow Go players got excited once more!

"It's starting, it's starting!"

"It's starting again!"

"Haha, let's see who will win this time!"

"Teacher Changhe was so utterly demolished in that last round!"

"Yeah, even I could feel the humiliation just from watching!"

"Could it be Amateur Devil's alt?"

"It can't be. He isn't as good as YE!"

"YE must be a Go pro, right? If he's really just an amateur, he shouldn't be known as the Devil. He should be called Amateur God instead!"

Countless people started spectating the match!

Some of them were analyzing the game, while others were gossiping.

. . .

At Old Wu's residence.

In the study, Zhang Ye had already made his move. He was Black this round and could go first. But this time, he went for a <u>corner opening!</u>

His opponent placed his stone.

Zhang Ye smiled and placed another stone. He put on some music as well and hummed along as he played. He didn't concentrate fully on the game. Without giving a handicap, he could play completely casually against Wu Changhe. He did not notice that his opponent had changed even after over a dozen moves had been made. As he didn't really belong to this world, he basically had no idea about Wu Changhe's playstyle. Even the name he had learned of just yesterday, so how could anyone expect him to be able to recognize him via playstyle?

On the 15th move, his opponent forced an atari on him.

Zhang Ye gasped and said to himself, "This old comrade is rather good. He's playing better and knows not to contend with me anymore? He's playing active and attacking? Come on then, let's see how you respond to this move of mine!"

Click.

He placed the stone.

"Yo, that's not a bad response. What about this move then?"

"Haha, you got bamboozled, didn't you?"

"Come, let me give you an even more ruthless move!"

"Yoho, is this your last stand? Off you go! Keep struggling! Continue struggling!"

"Oh, you're resisting now? You want to bring it into the corner?"

"See how I surround you! You walked right into my trap! Haha!"

. . .

At the computer.

The people in the house fell silent!

Li Qinqin was dumbfounded!

Chen Ying was dumbfounded!

Hu Liang was also dumbfounded!

At this point, Hu Liang found that he no longer had any way left to play his stones. The stones in the upper left corner were dead, while he had lost the tempo on the stones in the right corner. He was also unable to expand on the framework in the center of the board after being restricted!

Hu Liang resigned!

Chen Ying said, "Th-This guy..."

Xu Han was shocked and said, "Who the hell is this guy?"

Tian Weiwei said in astonishment, "Even Brother Liang lost?"

Hu Liang could no longer hold it in. In anguish, he looked to the somber Wu Changhe. "Teacher, I'm sorry. I, I was too careless."

Wu Changhe said angrily, "You can't even beat an amateur?"

Hu Liang gave a wry smile, not replying.

Careless?

This was just an excuse that he had come up with so that he could save some face for himself!

He had not actually been careless at all. The man who beat his teacher had to be a professional Go player at the very least. With his teacher and his wife observing the game from the sidelines, he couldn't possibly be careless. Yet Hu Liang still lost. A star professional Go player ranked top 30 in the world had lost to an amateur? And he was even crushed like he was an amateur? Thinking about how Wu Changhe had wanted him to beat this YE to hell just now, Hu Liang felt like he was about to vomit a

mouthful of blood!

Who the fuck was the one beating up whom?

However, Hu Liang did not feel frustrated at all. He was not at all frustrated by the game he had just played! Nor did he speak further about it. This was because he knew that even if he played the same opponent again, he still wouldn't beat him!

In fact, Wu Changhe was feeling even more shocked than Hu Liang!

He would never have thought that this Zhang kid could have won against active 7-dan pro Hu Liang!

Fuck!

Are you on fucking steroids or something?!

打吃/Dǎ chī/Atari - <u>Atari</u> is a term used in Go for a situation where a stone or chain of stones has only one liberty

#### Chapter 1104: Zhang Ye vs. Xu Han 8-dan

Old Wu's voice came up from downstairs.

"Little Ye."

"Yes?"

"Shall I start cooking now?"

"You can do it a little later. I'm going to play another game."

"You're not hungry yet?"

"Haha, I was a bit ago, but not anymore!"

Zhang Ye was full of energy. After sadistically demolishing Wu Changhe over the course of three games, he felt like he was endlessly powerful. There was nothing more enjoyable than this!

I have a questionable character?

I'm not a good person?

I have a terrible temper!

Don't say any more. I'll crush you every time you play against me!

. . .

The spectating Go players were once again dumbfounded!

"He won again!"

"Oh my goodness, YE won again!"

"Changhe 9-dan has been destroyed so badly!"

"But why do I get the feeling that Teacher Changhe's playstyle has changed?"

"Yeah, I also feel the same!"

"Although this playstyle is one of the stronger attacking styles, it doesn't seem like how Teacher Changhe usually plays. Hai, maybe I'm just overthinking it?"

"Teacher Changhe is gonna cry soon!"

"This YE is too mean! How can he keep taking apart Teacher Changhe like this? Doesn't he know what position Changhe 9-dan holds in the Go world?"

"This YE fellow is a little too aggressive!"

"Hahaha, but I like it!"

"Who cares what happens when I'm just watching! More!"

...

At Old Wu's family's house.

Tian Weiwei said while sweating, "Ma'am, h-he's really not a pro Go player?"

Li Qinqin gave a wry smile and nodded. "He's not."

Hu Liang said gloomily, "That's not possible. There's no way an amateur could play so well. How can an amateur beat a pro 7-dan player? Then what are us pro Go players still needed for!"

"Yeah."

"Ma'am, could you be mistaken?"

The several of them did not believe it. This was totally illogical!

But Li Qinqin told them with certainty, "He's really not a pro Go player, but you all must not consider him to be a normal person either. He's not normal at all."

Xu Han, who had been silent for a very long time and was studying the defeat on the board, suddenly spoke up. "Ma'am is right. He's really not a pro Go player. As long as they're a pro, even if they're a pro who's participating in a tournament for the first time, we'd be very familiar with them and know who they are. But whether within the country or outside of it, there are no pro Go players who play like this. I've never seen anyone play this way

before!"

The others looked at him and did not say a word.

Tian Weiwei asked, "How high should he be ranked?"

Chen Ying clenched her teeth and said, "He's at least a 7th dan no matter how you look at it."

Hu Liang judged, "He's definitely not just a 7th dan. Even if he's not an 8th dan, he's definitely at a higher level than your usual 7th dan!"

Tian Weiwei said, "Even Brother Liang could not beat him, so I guess I can't either."

Tian Weiwei. A professional 6th dan Go player. He had entered and been in the ranks of professional Go for a mere three years but was already hailed as the player with the most potential in China. He was the darling of many of the senior players. There was even a retired 9th dan senior player who claimed that if China were to produce another 9th dan player, Tian Weiwei would most likely be the person to achieve that rank. He was quite young and had the most potential. However, he was still at the stage of rapidly improving his game. He hadn't hit his ceiling yet and was not ready to be the flag bearer at many of the international tournaments. He had to be protected and slowly groomed and trained to fulfill that potential.

Beep beep.

YE sent a message.

"Are we still playing? I'm going to eat lunch if not."

How arrogant!

He was too arrogant!

Hu Liang yelled in anger, "He holding us pro Go players in utter contempt!"

Wu Changhe was trembling with rage. "Hurry up! It's time to put

you all to the test! Destroy him! He's only at the level of a good 7th dan. Is that all he needs to scare you all shitless? Ah?"

Hu Liang looked at Chen Ying and Xu Han. "Sister Ying, Brother Xu."

Chen Ying and Xu Han looked at one another. "Who?"

Chen Ying was a 7th dan Go player, but was publicly acknowledged to be at the level of an 8th dan. She had played particularly well in every competition she took part in for the past two years, and she was the world's highest ranked female player from China. She was 16th in the world.

Meanwhile, Xu Han was the only 8th dan player of the lot here. He was one of the top players in China and had won many medals at various world tournaments. He was also the most accomplished player among these disciples of Wu Changhe. The only problem was that he was already in his thirties and his skill had peaked. There wasn't much more that he could improve on and could even be said to be declining. One could even go as far as saying that he would never reach 9th dan. He was currently ranked 13th in the world and was the highest ranked 8th dan. The remaining rankings above 13 were practically all active 9th dan players, although there was a 6th dan and a 7th dan player who occupied two of the spots in the top 13. Those two players were there because they had played especially well this year.

Xu Han said, "Let me do it."

Chen Ying said, "Alright. It's better if it's you."

Hu Liang gave up his seat.

Xu Han exhaled and sat down.

Wu Changhe urged, "Play well, give him hell!"

"OK!" Xu Han typed out: "Let's begin."

YE replied almost instantly with: "Alright."

Chen Ying, Hu Liang, and the others immediately gathered around Xu Han!

A good 7th dan? To them, Xu Han should most definitely win this. At least, he stood an 80% chance of winning. Xu Han was playing pretty good this year. He was also one of the better 8th dan players around, unlike Chen Ying, who was just a 7th dan but recognized as an 8th dan ranked player. Xu Han had been ranked as an 8th dan for several years, so whether it was his strength or experience, he was incomparable to the others. Although this amateur was astonishingly good, no matter how they thought about it, it would be impossible for him to beat a player ranked in the world's top 15!

Wu Changhe was already sneering!

Come on!

Come and play!

If you can even beat a professional 8th dan player, then I'll really have to give it to you!

Hahaha!

• • •

The room was nearly packed to the brim.

"Wow, it's starting!"

"The match has started!"

"Come quickly!"

"Time to watch the excitement unfold again!"

With all that had happened, more and more professional Go players took notice and were starting to come over to watch as well.

The amateurs could not see the signs, but how would they as professionals not know what was happening? Besides, they knew

very well what Changhe 9-dan's playstyle was. A lot of them read Changhe 9-dan's game records growing up and had even received coaching from him personally.

At a Go academy.

In the lounge.

A female 5th dan player was stunned. "Th-This isn't how Teacher Changhe plays!"

A male 7th dan player frowned. "It's been this way since the previous game. The game before this one seemed more like Hu Liang 7-dan's playstyle. It was very masterful and the moves were more radical. With this opening, who do you think's playing?"

An 8th dan player next to them laughed. "I think it might be Old Xu?"

"Old Xu?"

"Teacher Xu Han?"

"Damn, isn't this a fake game then?"

"Hur hur, don't you guys know what Teacher Changhe's temper is like? To get his disciples' help after losing is something Teacher Changhe would definitely do."

"That's true."

"But who could this YE be?"

"I don't think I have any memory of such a player?"

"Yeah, where did this guy come from?"

"Look! Xu Han 8-dan is counterattacking!"

"It's really Teacher Xu Han. This is his typical strategy!"

"Hasn't the opponent figured out that he's playing against someone else by now? Is he really a pro? Isn't he too amateurish not noticing it?" However, someone else had appeared behind this group of people at some point in time.

When one of them realized, they got startled and quickly stood up!

When the others saw this man, they quickly gave up the good seats and excused themselves!

It was Xiang Rong 9-dan!

30 years old, and an active 9th dan Go player!

A legend who was the current world number one. He had retained his rank of first place for the past three years in a row. He was also the three-time champion of the World Go Championship. The current number one in the Go world, and arguably recognized as the best player in the world—with no one coming close!

After spectating the game for a few minutes.

Xiang Rong smiled. "Interesting."

• • •

At Old Wu's residence.

The music was rocking out the study.

Zhang Ye had his legs crossed, playing Go as he spoke to himself.

"This old comrade is pretty good!

"Whoa, that's a good move. Very clever!

"Whoa, you're getting better and better?

"Haha, but you're still not good enough!"

He was truly very amateurish. This fellow totally did not know that his opponent had already changed twice. He still thought that he was playing against Wu Changhe as he continued destroying him!

"Off you go!

```
"Yo, well defended!
```

"Come on, show off! Why aren't you showing off anymore? Weren't you trying to counterattack? Why are you shell-shocked? Oh? You even dare to make this move? You're quite brave!

"Do that again!

"Do it!

"Haha, why aren't you moving?

"Hurry up! The flowers are wilting as I wait!"

• • •

At the computer.

They saw a barrage of messages from YE.

He sent so many of them that it amounted to over twenty messages in just a short while.

"The flowers are wilting as I wait!" was accompanied by a picture of a withered flower.

Infuriating!

So infuriating!

The spectators in the room were all roaring with laughter!

"Pfft!"

"This YE is hilarious!"

"This is Go! Why are you typing all that?"

"LMAO! Do you think you're fucking playing <u>Fight the</u> Landlord?!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Try that against me again!

<sup>&</sup>quot;Heh, you're still holding up? Show that to me again!

<sup>&</sup>quot;Haha, you can't hold on anymore!

<sup>&</sup>quot;Watch this! I've even shredded your pants!

"Hahahaha, this person is so weird!"

"But he's really good!"

"I feel bad for Teacher Changhe!"

At the courtyard house.

Wu Changhe's face was green from anger. "This young bastard! We're now sworn enemies! Sworn enemies!"

Xu Han, who was versing YE, was sweating profusely!

Chen Ying was getting anxious. "Brother Xu, you can do it!"

Hu Liang said, "Get him! Senior Bro, get him!"

Xu Han was on the verge of tears!

Who do you want me to fucking get!

Are you guys blind?!

It's clear from this that I'm the one getting played, alright!

After another seven, eight moves, Xu Han was finally unable to hold out any longer. He gave up and resigned. His face had paled and he was couldn't even turn around to face his teacher and fellow disciples!

Who is this!

Who the hell is this?

Chen Ying, Tian Weiwei, and the others were all silenced!

You can even beat an elite, professional 8th dan player?

Damn, are you really an amateur Go player? Are you trying to ascend?!

Li Qinqin looked at the mess of a game on the computer screen. She had also been shocked. This time, she had really been shocked! If a world-class mathematician like Zhang Ye could beat an average professional Go player, she might be surprised but still wouldn't find it strange. But the issue here was that it was not that simple!

He had won against a professional 7th dan player!
And now, even a professional 8th dan was not his equal!
This turn of events was far too shocking!

## Chapter 1105: Zhang Ye vs. China Qiyuan!

The game ended.

The Online Go Server was flooded with messages once again.

"Come and see this!"

"This match was a spectacle!"

"Yeah, it was really intense!"

"What was the result? How did the game end?"

"Damn, Teacher Changhe lost again."

"Pfft, Teacher Changhe has been taken apart yet again!"

"He's indeed the famous Changhe 9-dan. Rather than getting upset about this, it seemed like he did not even get affected. If it were me, I would have smashed the computer after losing all those games! But just look at Teacher Changhe! He wasn't annoyed at all and continued playing despite losing so many times. What a good sport he is!"

"Yeah, that's how a Go grandmaster should behave."

At this time, YE sent a private message to Wu Changhe: "Uncle, do you still want to play?"

Wu Changhe was so angry that he grabbed the keyboard for himself and hunt and pecked. Very agitated by the loss, he even typed the words wrong many times. "Of course! Come!"

"I think I won't be playing for now. I have to eat."

"Are you running away, kid?"

"Lunch is waiting."

Wu Changhe was floored. He shouted and ranted in a fury!

If you're not going to play, why did you ask me if I wanted to keep playing?

How dare you!

You're great!

You're just great!

Li Qinqin, who had been in a state of shock, laughed at Zhang Ye's messages. "This kid."

Wu Changhe rolled up his sleeves in preparation to charge out. "I'm going to look for that damn rascal!"

"What are you doing?" Li Qinqin hurriedly pulled him back, overwhelmed. "You still intend to pick a fight with him?"

Wu Changhe said angrily, "I'm going to beat him to death!"

"Teacher!"

"Calm down! Calm down!"

"Damn! Teacher, no! You mustn't!"

His disciples all ran to hold him back.

How could a game of Go almost lead to a fight?!

Li Qinqin laughed and said, "Serves you right. Who told you to question his character? Look what you did, you've shot yourself in the foot."

Wu Changhe pointed at his disciples and said, "What in the world were you all doing playing like that? All of you have disgraced me! Completely disgraced me! All of you!"

Xu Han scratched his head. "Teacher, why don't I try playing against him again?"

Hu Liang said, "Right, right, there's too much random chance to decide things with just one game. Even Xiang Rong 9-dan could not possibly win every game that he plays. We must decide this in best-of-three series!"

Chen Ying sighed. "Teacher, this YE really is very good. We—"

"More like the several of you aren't skilled enough!" fumed Wu Changhe. "Very good, my ass! I won't believe it! I don't believe that no one can beat him!"

• • •

At Old Wu's villa.

Downstairs, the smell of cooked food greeted him.

Zhang Ye eagerly made his way downstairs. "Aiyo, lunch is ready?"

"It's almost cold." Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "Eat quickly."

Zhang Ye sighed as he sat down and started eating. "I'm getting addicted to playing Go."

Old Wu asked, "But I never knew that you enjoyed Go so much?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I didn't have time for it in the past, but I'm finally discovering the fun in playing it." He did not explain what kind of fun he was referring to.

Ring, ring, ring.

Old Wu's cell phone was ringing. When she saw the caller ID, she answered.

"Hello, Dad."

"Where's that brat!"

"Who are you talking about?"

"Who do you think! That Zhang brat!"

"We're having lunch."

"So he's really with you! You cooked for him, didn't you?"

"Yes, what's wrong?"

"How dare you cook for him! Are you trying to drive me to my grave? Are you? Throw away all the food! Grab a container of salt and pour it into his bowl! I'll make him eat it up!"

"Whoa, what's the matter?"

"Tell him this for me! Don't go anywhere! Tell him not to go anywhere! I'll fight him 300 more times in the afternoon! I'll show him why all the flowers have turned red!"

Du du. Wu Changhe hung up.

Zhang Ye, who was listening closely beside her, quickly lowered his head and continued eating. He feigned ignorance and said, "Aiya, the dishes you whipped up are so delicious. My Old Wu's cooking is still the best!"

Wu Zeqing put down her cell phone and asked, "Did you play Go with my dad just now?"

Zhang Ye said in surprise, "What? No?"

Old Wu smiled and said, "If you did, you did. Why don't you admit it? From my dad's tone, he must have lost quite a few matches to you. He was so mad that he asked me to grab a container of salt and pour the salt into your bowl. He even wanted me to tell you to play him again in the afternoon."

Pour salt into my bowl?

How can you be so mean!

Zhang Ye harrumphed inside his head. Fine, we'll play. Do you think I'm afraid of you?

He looked at Old Wu and said, "If I drive your dad into a corner, don't tell me off."

Old Wu smiled and said, "Why would I tell you off? Go is won by whoever is more skilled. Every competitive game winners and losers. It's quite normal."

"Ha, I'll rest easy then!" Zhang Ye was delighted and devoured the food.

Old Wu said, "Eat slowly."

Zhang Ye said, "I'll be playing Go after lunch."

Old Wu smiled and said, "You two have really clashed?"

Well, with things progressing to this point, one of them had to give in first. Otherwise, this "fight" would definitely not come to an end!

After lunch.

Old Wu put on an apron and washed the dishes.

Zhang Ye couldn't wait and headed straight up to the study while humming a ditty. When he turned on the monitor, he realized that there was no one left in the room!

Where did he go?

Where did he run off to?

He snorted and began flooding the room with messages!

• • •

In the afternoon.

Near Tiantan East Gate.

At China Qiyuan.

This was an official agency responsible for China's strategy board games under the State General Administration of Sports and acted as the integrated training hub and competition venue for the various sports. It oversaw the management of the national Go team, chess team, and Xiangqi team, as well as taking responsibility for organizing various domestic and international tournaments.

Due to the recent international Go tournament, there were many experts gathered at China Qiyuan today. Some of them were practicing, some were playing matches against others, but the majority of them were watching the furor surrounding Changhe 9-dan!

The moment Wu Changhe arrived, he was surrounded by a large group of professional Go players.

"Teacher Changhe!"

"Why are you here?"

"Pfft, who have you offended this time?"

"Who is that YE?"

"Was it Hu Liang and Xu Han playing just now? The two of them lost too?"

"Take a look at this! YE is online and searching for you!"

"He has been flooding the chat box for hours! The entire Online Go Server exploded with activity!"

"There's a commotion on Weibo as well!"

"Everyone knows about this now!"

Everyone was wondering what had happened.

Wu Changhe kept silent, a dark look on his face. When he heard, he walked straight up to a computer and saw YE shouting without end in the Online Go Server's room. He even brought the fight to the public chat!

YE: "Where are you?"

YE: "I waited until my face turned green."

YE: "I'm here, where did you disappear to?"

YE: "Paging Teacher Changhe!"

YE: "Are we still playing? If not, I'll take my afternoon nap."

When Wu Changhe saw this, he flew into a rage. "This rascal is really pushing it too far!"

Many of the professional Go players didn't know how to react. They were wondering why he was only targeting Teacher Changhe. Just what kind of fucking grudge existed between the two of them!

Wu Changhe immediately logged in to his account. He entered the password and went back into room they were in. He messily hunt and pecked out: "I'm here! Wait for me! Don't go anywhere!"

"I've already been waiting for half an hour."

"Don't be so impatient! I'm going to make you lose ugly. Do you believe me?"

"Hur hur."

Wu Changhe turned around and ordered, "Did you see his clamoring? Did you see it? A layman, an amateur Go enthusiast is openly provoking us pro Go players. Can you tolerate this? Can you? Quickly destroy him for me! Send him to his death! Crush him so that he won't play Go ever again! Humiliate him so that he'll puke at the mere sight of Go!"

Everyone was floored.

But he didn't provoke us professional Go players at all!

He was clearly just directing his provocations at you, no?

But what Wu Changhe said was not without reason. An amateur Go player was bullying one of their fellow pros. And he was provoking Changhe 9-dan, who was once the biggest icon in the world of Go, and winning against active players like Hu Liang 7-dan and Xu Han 8-dan. This really made them lose a huge amount of face as professional Go players!

China Qiyuan's president appeared at this time.

Dan Donghe walked out with a grin on his face. "Brother Wu, I heard that you and a few of your disciples were swept aside by an amateur Go player? Did it really happen?"

Wu Changhe said angrily, "You're smiling, you old fool? Hurry up and come over to help me!"

Dan Donghe. A professional 9th dan Go player and the current

president of China Qiyuan. He was a 9th dan Go player from the same generation as Wu Changhe and also his junior brother. They had dominated the world of Go back in their heyday for many years and were known in the country as the "He Twins." They had a very good personal relationship as well.

Dan Donghe wondered, "What kind of feud do the two of you have?"

"A blood feud!" Wu Changhe said as he rolled his eyes.

Dan Donghe asked curiously, "Is he really an amateur?"

Wu Changhe nodded but knew better in his heart of hearts. Was his opponent really an amateur? In reality, that Zhang fellow could not even be considered an amateur Go player!

Changhe 9-dan's disciples arrived as well.

"That guy is posting another thing!" Chen Ying said angrily.

On the screen, they saw YE urging endlessly: "Are you ready yet, Uncle? It's not that you're scared of playing me, right? But that's fine too, if you take back your words from earlier."

A professional 8th dan player could no longer stand idly by. "I'll play him! What kind of person is this! He's too big for his britches!"

"I'll take him too!"

"Count me in as well!"

"Damn, does he really think that pro Go players are pushovers?"

"How dare he come knocking on our door looking for trouble?"

"An amateur who only got a little lucky. Does he really think he's invincible?"

A lot of people could no longer sit still and began denouncing him!

Dan Donghe nodded. "Alright, Little Qi. Practice some with him."

Qi Qi was up?

Damn, was this even necessary?

Qi Qi. A professional 7th dan Go player. Although his rank was not high, he was seemingly imbued with the power of the gods this year. He was even higher on the world rankings than Xu Han. During an international tournament last week, he even won a game against a Korean 9th dan player!

Everyone was gloating as they thought that they would be in for a treat.

Wu Changhe came to China Qiyuan to seek assistance. His disciples might not have been good enough, but this place was filled with all the best Go professionals in the country. As it was also close to the tournament period, nearly all the professional players above 5th dan were present today. The strongest Go players in the country were all here, and there were also a few active 9th dan players around as well!

Ha!

I'll see how long you can continue being so smug!

Wu Changhe wanted to make Zhang Ye beg for mercy as he felt that he would lose ugly. You might have gotten lucky and won one or two games, but I don't fucking believe that you can beat so many of our best Go players!

Come!

You dare woo my daughter?

I'll teach you a lesson, rascal!

## Chapter 1106: Sweeping China Qiyuan single-handedly!

In the study.

Old Wu came in with a cup of tea.

Zhang Ye was still staring at the computer screen.

"Have some tea."

"Oh, thanks."

"Has the game begun yet?"

"We'll be starting soon, haha."

"OK. Let's see just how good my boyfriend is at Go."

Old Wu pulled a chair over and sat down.

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I'm actually not that good. Your dad's still pretty good. When I started playing him, I didn't need to put in much effort at all. But the more we played, the better he became. It was as though his skill had been restored to how good he was in the past. At times, I even had to get serious. Otherwise, I would really have been beaten by him."

"Of course. My dad once stood at the top."

"But I'm not bad either. Eh, it's starting. Hur hur, watch how I play!"

"You can only win against my dad because his skills have regressed a lot. If you went against active 4th or 5th dan pros, it would be very difficult for you to win."

"I know that."

Zhang Ye deeply believed that as well. He actually did not even know how good he was. All he knew was that he had maxed out his Lottery Draw (One)'s Go skill, and added another 100 million Reputation Points' worth of the Lottery Draw (Two) Go skill experience books on top of that. From the looks of it, the Go players of this world seemed to be really strong. If a professional Go player whose play had regressed by that much since his retirement 20 years ago was still this strong at Go, then Zhang Ye felt that what Old Wu had said was correct when she mentioned that he could only win against her father. But it was enough if he could beat him. Right from the beginning, this fellow was just aiming for Wu Changhe anyway.

The game began!

"WuChanghe," who was "sitting" opposite, had already placed his stone.

When Zhang Ye saw this, he followed up by placing his stone in the opposite corner. An opening with moves in opposing corners could easily throw the framework into disarray. This method was often employed by weaker opponents against a stronger one. The idea behind it was to win amid the chaos it brought. But Zhang Ye was not afraid of that. Instead, his character suited such a method even better!

About eight moves later.

Old Wu said curiously, "Eh, this doesn't look how my dad usually plays?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Yeah, your dad often changes his strategy. He would change his playstyle after every game he lost to me."

Old Wu understood. "It must be because he couldn't find a way to deal with you, so he deliberately changed his strategy. My dad is pretty good. When did he become so adaptable?"

"Whoa, this is a good move!"

"Mhm."

"Haha, but watch me now!"

"How are you going to respond?"

"Watch as I trick him."

"Eh, why did you place your stone there?"

"Hehe, you'll know why in a bit. Ha, look at this! Your dad has taken the bait. Wait a bit. Just wait a bit and I'll show you a clever play!"

After Black made the 85th move.

Zhang Ye smiled as he took a white stone and clinked it down!

His opponent was silenced!

This silence lasted for a full ten minutes!

Zhang Ye cackled with laughter. "He fell for it! I bet your dad is getting frustrated!"

As Wu Zeqing's Go skill was just average, her observational skills were lacking by quite a bit. It wasn't until this moment that she understood why Zhang Ye had played his stones in those positions in the opening!

Wu Zeqing marveled, "Very beautiful."

Zhang Ye was overjoyed at receiving praise from his girlfriend.

Then a dialog box popped up!

His opponent resigned!

Zhang Ye typed: "Are we still playing, Uncle?"

"Yes. Wait a little! Don't run off!"

"Alright, I'll be here."

Very quickly, another game started!

This time, his opponent changed to yet another opening playstyle!

Zhang Ye did not think anything of it. He chatted with Wu Zeqing as he simultaneously played and explained his moves.

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "If you keep playing like this, you might really end up losing. Don't other people play Go silently?"

However, Zhang Ye was accustomed to playing and chatting at the same. He really hadn't played much Go before and did not have a subdued personality either. He had played a lot of Fight the Landlord, so this fellow was actually using the mentality of that game to play Go. Every now and then, Zhang Ye would send some offending words to "WuChanghe" to harass him. He even felt that this was very normal behavior in Go. If you played like a slowpoke, you would definitely be hurried!

```
"Are you in the toilet?"
```

Wu Zeqing could not refrain from laughing. This was the first time she had seen someone play Go in such a way. Furthermore, those messages he sent sounded really mean as well!

In reality, Zhang Ye was having a very difficult time this game. "Your dad is playing really well in the midgame. He's playing really well this game, really well. Look at this setup here. He's trying to trap me!"

Wu Zeqing said, "He making you make forcing moves."

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "That might not be the case. He wants to trick me? Your dad is really overthinking things. Alright, I'll confuse him by responding with a horizontal stretch."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Uncle, where did you go?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Are you taking a dump?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Why aren't you moving?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Please move?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;The flowers are wilting as I wait!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Did you forget to bring toilet paper?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;A horizontal stretch?"

"Haha, I have to make him think that I've actually taken his bait."

"And then?"

"Then the midgame will be mine!"

His opponent placed his stone!

Zhang Ye placed his stone!

His opponent placed another stone!

Zhang Ye smiled as he played an atari on his opponent!

And then, there were no more thens!

His opponent's timer started counting up.

Three minutes...

Five minutes...

His opponent resigned.

Zhang Ye said to Old Wu, "In fact, this game can be played on until the endgame. But there's no point in playing any further than this. Your dad has no hope of turning things around."

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "My dad's skill has really regressed a lot over the years."

In Zhang Ye's heart, his attitude toward Wu Changhe was slowly changing. He was starting to think that this old man was really quite skilled. Wu Changhe made some moves that nearly landed him in an unfavorable position and the standard of play increased the more games they played. It was as though he had changed persons with every match they played. He was indeed worthy of being the best Go player all those years ago. He was truly a force to be reckoned with!

But still, Zhang Ye did not lose!

One game!

Three games!

```
Five games!
 Zhang Ye defeated all in his way, emerging victorious!
 Near the computer.
 Inside the Go association at China Qiyuan.
 Silence reigned in the hall.
 Wu Changhe was dumbfounded!
 President Dan Donghe was dumbfounded!
 All the professional players in the Go association were
dumbfounded!
 "Qi Qi 7-dan lost?"
 "Chang Han 9-dan lost?"
 "Tian Xi 9-dan lost too?"
 "Li Yi 9-dan is also no match for him?"
 "Dammit! Dammit!"
 A total of five professional Go players had played against YE!
 One of them was ranked 12th in the world!
 One of them was ranked 10th in the world!
 One of them was ranked 9th in the world!
 One of them was ranked 7th in the world!
 The highest ranking player was 4th in the world!
 All of them lost!
 All of them fucking lost!
 "Holy shit!"
 "Oh my God!"
 "Who the fuck is he?"
```

"H-How could this be!"

They could not believe their eyes!

Chen Ying, Xu Han, and the others nearly pissed their pants!

A lot of the 5th and 6th dan players were staring at the computer screen while rubbing their eyes, dumbfounded. They could not react to it for a very long while. They were almost going crazy as their concept of the game had been completely shattered in these moments!

The reason Wu Changhe came to seek assistance from China Qiyuan was because he wanted to get the top Go players to take turns teaching Zhang Ye a lesson. But in the end, YE, by himself, destroyed everyone from China Qiyuan!

They were crushed!

He did not suffer a single loss!

The most crucial part was that this joker called YE kept harassing them throughout the games. He constantly sent messages like "hurry up," "even the flowers have wilted," "why are you taking your sweet time," and "are you taking a dump." He even repeatedly sent those messages, taking those 9th dan players to the brink of collapse and making them see red!

Taking a dump?

Forgetting to bring toilet paper?

Why the hell would you care if I brought any toilet paper or not!

What the fuck has that got anything to do with you!?

<u>Time control in Go</u> (weiqi/baduk) - The short of it for higher-level tournaments is that if you don't move within a certain period of time (usually 30 seconds), you have one of your blocks of thinking time deducted. Once you're out of time, you lose.

## Chapter 1107: The world number one in Go makes his move!

At China Qiyuan.

Everyone was sorely beaten!

"Go on!"

"Get him!"

"There are so many of us! I don't believe that we can't beat him!"

Quite a few people started calling for action!

They could not take it lying down!

They were reluctant to accept the results!

This was too embarrassing! This was way too embarrassing!

With so many of the world's top Go professionals on their side, how could they have possibly been defeated by an amateur?

Li Yi 9-dan said angrily, "This bastard is too rude! Causing trouble! He's making trouble! How can he keep sending those offending messages during the game! If I wasn't distracted by his messages, I would have won!"

"Yeah!"

"Despicable!"

"Extremely despicable!"

"This person is so evil!"

A group of professional Go players were hurling all kinds of abuse!

But all of a sudden, someone came out from behind them. "If he can still send that many messages while playing, that means he has not given his best effort yet. Even if he plays a few more games, you guys still might not be a match for him."

It was Xiang Rong!

No one knew when Xiang Rong had arrived!

The computer's display here at the Go association was hooked up to the big screen. Everyone had been watching the games on it earlier, so Xiang Rong must have also been spectating all this while!

"Master Xiang!"

"Teacher Xiang!"

"Ah, Master Xiang is here!"

"Master Xiang, that fella is too cocksure!"

Everyone looked over.

The moment Wu Changhe saw Xiang Rong, his spirits lifted. "Little Xiang! What are you also doing here?"

Xiang Rong said politely, "Elder Wu."

At the association, or even within the Chinese Go world, whoever met with Wu Changhe would have to speak to him very politely. That applied even to the current number one in the world of Go!

Dan Donghe was still in a state of shock. The losses suffered by several of those 9th dan players had rocked him to his very core. He wouldn't have believed it if someone told him before today that his Qiyuan players would fall so easily. He said, "Little Xiang, there's something very odd about this guy! He clearly does not play by the book and uses many moves that no one has really used before. Yet every move of his has meaning, and the openings were played exquisitely! If you were playing, do you think you could win?"

Xiang Rong smiled and said, "Without going up against him, I won't know."

But Wu Changhe said, "How could you possibly not win!"

Qi Qi was on the verge of tears. "Master Xiang, you have to avenge us!"

"Master Xiang!"

"Master Xiang, please play him!"

"Only you're capable of defeating him!"

"Get him!"

Yes!

Everyone knew that Xiang Rong was just being humble. No one believed that he could lose!

Xiang Rong? Lose? What a joke! This was the current number one in the world of Go. Comparing the current Xiang Rong and Wu Changhe 9-dan at the peak of his prowess when he went undefeated, it would be difficult to tell who would win. Xiang Rong's name alone was the greatest reputation in the world of Go, which was a stage all to his own. Some experts predicted that within the next two years, there would be no one who could compare to Xiang Rong even if he was not that young anymore—he turned exactly thirty this year.

Wu Changhe suddenly said, "Little Xiang, it was good that I took you in, right?"

"But of course. It was all thanks to your coaching when I was in my teens," Xiang Rong replied. Although his teacher was not Wu Changhe, his career in Go was still considered to have been initiated by him. Therefore, Xiang Rong owed him an enormous favor.

Wu Changhe immediately said, "Hurry up. I'm depending on you to save me some face!"

Xiang Rong gave a wry smile. "Since Elder Wu has spoken, I wouldn't dare to say no. But I will have to use my own account. Playing a game on someone else's behalf is not something that I can

make myself do."

Dan Donghe asked, "You have an account?"

Xiang Rong calmly said, "Yes, but I've rarely used it."

Wu Changhe said, "That's fine. Just make sure to utterly demolish this guy!"

Xiang Rong was actually also quite eager to play against him. Earlier, when Wu Changhe's disciple had played on his behalf, Xiang Rong took notice of YE. At that time, he could already see that YE did not play to his best of his ability against Hu Liang 7-dan and Xu Han 8-dan. He was really hoping to verse this so-called amateur Go player who had won four matches in a row against four 9th dan pros. He was incredibly curious!

Xiang Rong was already seated in front of the computer.

Everyone crowded around to watch!

Even the professional Xiangqi and international chess players from the neighboring associations came over after they heard about it. News had long since spread, so who wouldn't know about it?

"Holy shit!"

"Master Xiang is going to play?"

"This is a big deal!"

"Master Xiang will be playing? Is that really necessary?"

"The opponent is most definitely not an amateur! Even a few of our 9th dan players lost to him!"

"Yeah. If Master Xiang still does not take this matter into his own hands, then China Qiyuan can no longer hold its head high!"

Presently, all of the Qiyuan was making a ruckus. YE had stirred the pot and turned everything upside down such that even a few executives came running over! A deputy chairman: "What happened?"

A director: "Even Li Yi 9-dan lost?"

Another deputy chairman: "Could it be Korea's Old Park trying to mess with us?"

Li Yi said angrily, "I don't know who it is, but he's extremely devious. Teacher Changhe claims that he's just an amateur. But when we asked who it was, he wouldn't say."

The executives all had solemn looks on their faces. But when they realized that Xiang Rong would be taking care of things, they brightened up a bit.

Wu Changhe's account went offline.

In its place, Xiang Rong's account appeared in the room. Xiang Rong turned off the spectate option for this match and forbade any outsiders from watching.

• • •

Several thousand fellow Go players saw their monitors turn dark after they were kicked out of the room.

"What the heck!"

"What happened?"

"Why can't we spectate anymore?"

"I was having fun watching!"

"Why did I think I saw Xiang Rong's account appear in the room?"

"Huh? Surely not, right?"

"Haha, you must've seen wrong."

"Xiang Rong 9-dan does not play Go online."

• • •

At Old Wu's residence.

Wu Zeqing went to pour some tea.

Zhang Ye discovered that Wu Changhe had suddenly gone offline.

Eh?

Where did he go?

Then he saw an account by the name of Xiang Rong appear in the room.

Xiang Rong sent a message. "Elder Wu needs to rest. Shall we play a game?"

Us two play?

Who are you!

Xiang Rong?

Never heard of this name before!

When he checked his opponent's account, he saw that it had a very low rating but a 100% win rate. The total number of games played was only ten. Zhang Ye sneered to himself. Only ten games played? A newbie? And you dare to challenge me to a game? Where did you come from? Who gave you the courage to come in here, little comrade!

Zhang Ye replied: "How did you get into the room? Don't make trouble. I have important business to handle. I don't play against newbies."

Then he continued to flood the chat box.

"Teacher Changhe?

"Why did you leave?

"Is it because you're a sore loser?

"Uncle, why don't I let you play with a handicap?

"It's boring if I keep winning.

"Please speak. How many games do I have to win before you admit defeat?"

...

At the computer.

The people at the Qiyuan blew up!

Xiang Rong's eyebrows twitched wildly!

Chen Ying 7-dan's jaw dropped!

Xu Han 8-dan stared, slack-jawed!

YE's messages displayed on the big screen had silenced the hall in the blink of an eye!

I don't play against newbies?

I don't play against newbies?

Everyone was dumbfounded by what they saw!

Everyone was aghast!

You don't even fucking know Xiang Rong?

As long as someone played Go, how could they possibly not know Xiang Rong!

A newbie?

Xiang Rong was a newbie?

Goddammit, you're done for!

This time, it's really over for you!

Are you trying to offend the entire world of Go with that!

But in this moment, everyone finally believed while shocked that this joker called YE was really not a professional Go player. He wouldn't even be considered an amateur Go player. This idiot did not have the first fucking clue about the world of Go!

## Chapter 1108: Who's playing?

At China Qiyuan.

"This idiot!"

"I'm convinced!"

"Master Xiang, you might be able to take this lying down, but I can't!"

"This YE is basically insulting us!"

"I'll smack that newbie face of his!"

"You're the one who's the goddamn newbie, alright?"

But the second, a notification popped up: Xiang Rong has been kicked from the room by YE!

He even got kicked!

YE had actually kicked Xiang Rong 9-dan out!

Everyone was floored!

The room and the password had been set up by Wu Changhe. YE had entered the room first, followed by Xiang Rong. When Wu Changhe left the room, the second person to enter was handed the administrative rights and got the highest privileges. He could kick any person he wanted to.

Wu Changhe cursed, "This young bastard!" He pointed at Xiang Rong and said, "Little Xiang, use my account! Let him have a taste of what it means to play Go!"

"Right!"

"Show him what we are capable of!"

"Teach him that there's always someone stronger out there!"

"Master Xiang, it's your turn!"

"This joker is infuriating!"

"Destroy him!"

"Let this idiot know what it really means to be a pro Go player!"

Everyone was clamoring!

• • •

On the other end.

Wu Zeqing returned to the study.

"I brewed another pot of tea." Old Wu placed it on the table. "What's the matter? You're not playing anymore?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Your dad went offline without saying where he was going. After that, some silly fool came into the room wanting to play me, but I kicked him out."

Old Wu asked, "Who was it?"

Zhang Ye smacked his lips and said, "I don't know. It was a newbie. I ignored him."

All of a sudden, someone came into the room!

It was Wu Changhe's account which reappeared after going offline a while ago.

Zhang Ye chortled. "He's back, he's back!"

His opponent sent a message right off the bat.

Wu Changhe: "Begin?"

Zhang Ye replied: "Sure!"

It was nearly 6 PM. Go is a relatively time-consuming activity, with a typical match between the masters easily taking up to an hour or two. And that would be a rapid match. In a real high-level tournament, it would not be unreasonable for a match to take up to 10 hours or more. Even further back, in ancient times, a match could drag on for three whole days and nights and would not even be uncommon.

But Zhang Ye had been playing a fast game today. It was the same for "WuChanghe." This was very common for online Go and a match would seldom get dragged out for too long. Due to the atmosphere being different, it naturally brought about a difference in the pace of the game. You couldn't possibly expect an online game between two players to be dragged out for over ten hours. But of course, the length of a match was also affected by the time limit, the opponent, and skill levels.

On the screen.

"WuChanghe" picked Black.

Zhang Ye went second with the white stones.

With the laying of the first stone by the black side, another round began!

. . .

At the computer.

The players at the Qiyuan all shifted back, trying to give the most space and quiet to Xiang Rong for his match. Everyone watched the monitor as the match took place and their mood swung with the progress of the game!

```
"Ah, Master Xiang has made his move!"
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;An approach?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;And it's even a high approach?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What a good move! Great move!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Splendid!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Haha, Master Xiang has almost never lost as Black!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Aiyo, White has made a stand!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Damn!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;This fellow is so slippery!"

"What a miser!"

Many of the professional Go players were taken by surprise!

Xiang Rong thought for a long while before placing his next stone down without any expression.

His opponent switched from his fast game of responding with immediate moves and went into a long thought process before making a horizontal stretch.

The game had only just started, but it was already making a lot of people tremble nervously just from spectating. Some of them were even sweating profusely from the intensity of the match!

"How marvelous!"

"This horizontal stretch was great!"

"Just where did this strange YE person come from?"

"Master Xiang still has a huge lead!"

"Xiang Rong 9-dan turned serious!"

"YE, prepare to cry! This fella definitely doesn't know who his opponent is! If he did, he'd surely be scared to death. Hahahaha!"

But before that person finished speaking, YE's absent spamming started up again!

YE: "Make your move."

YE: "Uncle, what are you doing?"

YE: "Did you fall asleep?"

YE: "Why don't I go take a nap as well? Call me when you've made your move, OK?"

Long strings of text totaling more than 20 messages were sent over!

Xiang Rong maintained indifference, pretending like he didn't see the messages.

But the other Go players started to hurl abuse!

"He's so arrogant!"

"He's willing to distract himself with typing while playing against Xiang Rong 9-dan?"

"I doubt he's even distracted. This is his style!"

"He's doing it on purpose! He's absolutely doing it on purpose!"

The pace of the game had been slowed!

The two of them started playing slower!

• • •

On the other end.

Wu Zeqing was looking at the computer screen and said, "This game doesn't seem to be going as smoothly?"

Zhang Ye was still unaware of things. He looked rather relaxed as he laughed and said, "Your dad really is strong. He's improving with every game. Looks like I underestimated him. He's really not that bad when he gets serious."

Old Wu smiled. "You've already won so many times. Why don't you let him win for once?"

"Ai, that won't do." Zhang Ye said, "I have my bottom line."

Yet, for a future son-in-law who had just visited his future father-in-law for the first time yesterday to demolish him to such a sorry state, that lacked any kind of bottom line!

On the board, the game progressed with much tension.

The stones of both sides were stuck in "mutual life"!

Old Wu looked at him with a smile. "What do you want for dinner?"

"Anything is fine."

"Then I'll go make dinner now?"

"Alright, thank you so much."

Zhang Ye placed another stone down. "Haha, watch me harass your territory!"

As he played, he continued to talk to himself and type out messages to send to his opponent. It wasn't that Zhang Ye did not take this seriously, but that this was just his style. He enjoyed playing Go this way.

He prattled:

"Yo, that was a great one! What a great move!"

"You're making things difficult for me, Comrade Changhe!"

"You're trying to trick me! How can I allow you to succeed?"

"Come, let me see how you will defend this move!"

"Yoho, nice! How about this move?"

"Whoa, you captured my stone? But I sacrificed it!"

"Haha, it would be impolite if I don't respond in kind. This bro will capture a stone of yours too!"

"What? You're still capturing? Aren't you afraid of <u>overeating</u>? I'll let you capture them then! Go on? Why aren't you capturing them? Good thing this bro thinks quick. Otherwise, I would really have been forced into a corner by you!"

Old Wu's voice sounded from downstairs.

Old Wu asked, "How's the game going?"

Zhang Ye shouted from the room, "It's really close! I wonder if your dad is on steroids or something. It feels like he got possessed! I was nearly overwhelmed by him!"

This old guy!

He's too stubborn!

Old Wu laughed. "Don't underestimate a 9th dan pro Go player. A

retired 9th dan is still a 9th dan, after all. If you don't mind, let me invite my dad's disciples over some time to play you. They're all active players ranked 6th dan and above, and they all play better than my dad. You can practice by playing them."

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Forget it. I nearly couldn't even hold out against your dad. With my skill level, I should just play against retired pros and amateurs. I can bully them a little. But I can't win against a true pro Go player for sure, so this bro shouldn't try to look for trouble." He did not know how well was playing Go, nor did he care. All he wanted was to beat Wu Changhe. That was enough. "Haha, respond to this move!"

. . .

At China Qiyuan.

Everyone at the place was shocked!

"This is amazing!"

"This YE is so fearsome!"

"How did he train?"

"After taking White, he can equalize against Master Xiang in the opening?"

Earlier, no one thought that Xiang Rong 9-dan would lose!

But now, there were some people thinking otherwise!

Like Chen Ying.

Like Tian Weiwei.

These two disciples of Wu Changhe exchanged a glance and saw the disbelief in each others' eyes. Th-This was truly too frightening!

Would Xiang Rong 9-dan really be able to win?

All of a sudden, for some reason, they were feeling very uncertain!

YE's messages were still as sarcastic as ever!

Talking about going to the bathroom!

Talking about how the flowers have wilted!

Talking about remembering to bring toilet paper!

But now, no one was swearing. YE's messages were just like voodoo curses being recited to hasten their demise. It made them all tremble nervously!

Ring, ring, ring.

Chen Ying's cell phone rang.

She quickly answered it. "Ma'am."

Li Qinqin's voice came from the other end. "Little Ying, where's your teacher?"

Chen Ying gave a bitter laugh and said, "Teacher is watching the game."

"Who's playing right now?" Li Qinqin said, "I was watching too until I suddenly got kicked out of the room. I think they're not allowing us to spectate or something? This latest game has already been going on for over an hour, hasn't it? Have they not determined a winner? Could it be a 9th dan player going up against YE? Is it Li Yi 9-dan?"

Li Yi?

Chen Ying didn't know whether to laugh or cry. She said, "Ma'am, Li Yi 9-dan already lost to that guy way before this game."

"What?"

"That's right."

"Then who's playing?"

• • •

Elsewhere.

Dinner was ready. Old Wu brought the dishes upstairs.

Zhang Ye picked up a chopstick's worth of food, his eyes glued to the computer screen. He chuckled as he placed a stone with the mouse. "I finally got to see you make a mistake! What an opportunity! I miscalculated earlier and nearly got crushed by you and almost didn't recover. It looks like it's finally your turn to experience that! Watch this! Haha!"

Wu Zeqing inched close and took a look.

Evenly matched?

It looked like it would take a tough time to determine a winner?

At this moment, Wu Zeqing's cell phone rang. Checking the caller ID, she saw it was from her mother. She put down her chopsticks and left the study to answer the call.

```
"Mom, what's the matter?"
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;Dinner is server."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Smells great. I'm hungry just from the smell!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Play on, play as you eat."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Alright."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Where's Little Zhang?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;He's at my place. We're having dinner right now. Why?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;He's not playing Go?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;He is. Hasn't he been playing against Dad the entire day?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Are you sure it's him who's playing the match?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What's the matter?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What's his account name?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;YE?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;So it's really him!"

Li Qinqin's voice over the phone became very loud. After confirmation, she sounded like she was quite shaken!

Wu Zeqing laughed and said: "Is Dad getting frustrated from losing too much?"

Li Qinqin said: "It's not only your dad who's getting frustrated! All of China Qiyuan is getting frustrated as well!"

Old Wu was taken aback and couldn't help but let out a laugh. "China Qiyuan? Why are they getting frustrated?"

"Daughter, did you really think that Little Zhang has been playing against your dad?" Li Qinqin said.

Old Wu didn't know how to react. "Huh?"

Li Qinqin said: "Your dad retired many years ago, so how could he still play that well! Your dad only played two games against him this morning. The rest of the day, the games were all played on behalf of him by the pro Go players from the Qiyuan! Hu Liang 7-dan, Xu Han 8-dan, Chang Han 9-dan, Tian Xi 9-dan, Li Yi 9-dan, all of them lost! All of the Qiyuan has been swept by Little Zhang!"

Old Wu found that funny and said: "Mom, stop joking."

Li Qinqin said: "Why would I joke about this! Do you know who's playing against Little Zhang right now? Do you know?"

Old Wu said: "It's really not dad?"

Floored, Li Qinqin said: "How could that be your dad! If your dad could still play like that, would he have to retire! Would he have lost to Little Zhang after being given a two stone handicap?"

Old Wu asked: "Then who's playing?"

Li Qinqin inhaled and said: "Xiang Rong 9-dan!"

Old Wu: "What?!"

"Capturing" uses the same verb as "eating" in Chinese.

挂/Guà/kari - Approach is a general term which includes any

move which reduces the liberties of an opposing stone or chain of stones

A corner approach which is one space away in a straight line, is called in full a one-space <u>high corner approach</u>

## Chapter 1109: Who won?

In the study.

Zhang Ye was playing Go while eating at the same time.

Wu Zeqing came back into the room from outside.

Zhang Ye asked, "Was that your mom?"

Wu Zeqing gave a soft affirmation.

Zhang Ye blinked and said, "Is it because your dad is getting angry?"

"More or less." Wu Zeqing walked up behind him and took a look at him. Then she looked at the game on the computer and asked, "Oh yeah, Little Ye, what was the name of the account you just kicked?"

Zhang Ye did not really know who she was talking about. "Which one?"

Old Wu said, "The person that you said came into the room and offered to play against you."

"Oh, that newbie?" Zhang Ye placed a stone down and said without much care, "I think he's called Xiang something, I can't remember. That's right, he's called Xiang Rong?"

Wu Zeqing was speechless.

"What's the matter?" Zhang Ye was confused.

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "It's nothing. Just carry on playing."

Zhang Ye nodded while pointing at the screen. "Your dad is playing this game to such a godly level. If I hadn't kept a trick up my sleeve, I couldn't have held him back. Since he took Black and went first, he had the advantage right from the start. So I was forced to respond to his moves and had to slowly find an opportunity to trick him whenever I got a chance. Haha, look,

look, here's another opportunity. I can trick him again with my next move! Hehehe."

He smiled slyly as he directly counterattacked with another move without much thinking!

Zhang Ye boasted, "How's that, Old Wu? This move isn't bad, right?"

Not only was it not bad!

This move had helped him to close the gap by at least two or three points!

"...Just who did you learn Go from?"

"Go? The first person to teach me was my elementary school teacher. After that, it was my extracurricular class teacher in middle school."

"Is that all?"

"That's all. Why?"

"Erm, it's nothing."

"Why don't I let your dad win this round?"

"There's no need to do that. Just play as you would."

"Alright then, I won't hold back!"

• • •

An hour.

Two hours.

It was already past 8 PM.

But those people from China Qiyuan were still around and had not left. In fact, the number of people gathered here even increased. Many of them were holding bowls of wonton soup as they sat there watching the match on the screen, not moving an inch! Several 9th dan players and national Go team coaches who had been resting at home also came running back after hearing about this.

When these people came in, they immediately started asking, "How is the match going?"

Xu Han 8-dan, who was nearest to them, turned around and said, "It's gotten to the midgame!"

Someone asked anxiously, "Who has the advantage?"

The others looked up at the screen.

Chen Ying 7-dan walked toward them and said, "Master Xiang took Black, so he definitely has the advantage in the game. But if we account for the compensation at the end of the game, the two of them are on par. No one really has the upper hand!"

"Dammit!"

"Why is this guy so strong?"

"Where did he pop out from?"

"Even Xiang Rong 9-dan can't beat him?"

"More importantly, he's just a goddamn amateur?"

"Who is he?"

"We have to ask Teacher Changhe about that. No one else besides him knows!"

"Shh, keep your voice down. I heard that it was Teacher Changhe who somehow offended him. As a result, this YE came to confront him!"

Li Qinqin arrived at China Qiyuan as well.

"Ma'am!"

"Ma'am, what are you doing here?"

"Auntie Li."

"Auntie Li."

Everyone greeted her since they knew her.

Li Qinqin asked, "Where's Changhe?"

Tian Weiwei immediately pointed to him and said, "Teacher is having an argument with President Dan over there."

When Li Qinqin approached, she heard them disputing over something.

Dan Donghe said loudly, "Brother Wu, you must get this guy here!"

Wu Changhe rolled his eyes. "He's just an amateur. Why do you want him!"

"Have you ever seen an amateur play like that?" Dan Donghe pointed at the big screen in a speechless manner and said, "Anyone who can play against Little Xiang that well, no matter how amateurish he is, I want!"

Li Qinqin said, "Old Dan."

Wu Changhe frowned. "Hey, what are you doing here?"

Dan Donghe immediately said, "Sister Li, we have to get this person to join our Qiyuan. I will give him special approval to join us so that he can officially start participating in pro tournaments. I will also reserve a spot for him on the national team next year! Can you bring him here? No, there's no need for you to bring him here. Just let me know who he is and I'll have my way of persuading him! I can definitely get him to join us!"

Wu Changhe scowled and said, "Don't even think about it."

When Li Qinqin heard that, she gave a wry smile and said, "Old Dan, I think it's better for you to give up the idea."

"But why?" Dan Donghe was very thirsty for talent and panicked at this response!

Li Qinqin said very helplessly, "You really won't be able to persuade him. Changhe is right. He's really an amateur and would never join China Qiyuan."

"Joining the national team and becoming a national Go player, do you know how prestigious that is?" Dan Donghe said.

Li Qinqin sighed. "That is exactly what he does not lack."

Dan Donghe said, "What about money? As a Go player at that level, he should be earning at least a few million yuan per year. Although it's not that great monetarily, I don't believe that he won't be tempted. Can he get that kind of income from other jobs?"

Li Qinqin did not know how to answer him. "I don't think income level is a problem for him. Besides, if he really wanted to earn money, he would not be earning just a few million per year. It'd be more likely to be in the figure of a few million per month."

Dan Donghe was stunned. "What?" He looked at Wu Changhe. "Is that true?"

Wu Changhe grunted and did not reply. But that was clearly an answer.

"But..." Dan Donghe refused to give up and said anxiously, "If he joined us, he would be among the top players in the world of Go. It's better than being just average in other professions—"

"But Old Dan, from what I know," Li Qinqin interrupted, exasperated. She thought for a while, then said, "He's considered to be at the top of other professions as well."

Dan Donghe had no reply

What the hell!

Can't we talk this out?

Can't we have a proper discussion?

Dan Donghe was almost in tears.

When the other executives of China Qiyuan and the Go players who were nearby heard that, they were also extremely surprised!

His annual income was in the tens of millions?

He was very famous?

He was considered to be at the top of other professions as well?

Dan Donghe said, "Sister Li, just who in the world is this man?"

Li Qinqin threw up her hands and said, "Without his consent, I don't know if I should reveal him. Anyway, it's probably impossible if you are thinking of pulling him into the world of Go."

Dan Donghe heaved a sigh. "Hai! That's such a pity! It's really such a pity!"

Wu Changhe sneered. "What's so pitiful about that, Old Dan? If you really managed to get him, you would be the one to get pitied instead. If that kid joins, he would definitely turn everything upside down and the entire world of Go would no longer have any peace and quiet!" Wu Changhe did not usually pay much attention to the entertainment industry. But clearly, after Zhang Ye's visit yesterday, he went to check and found out about the news and events related to him. He got to know more about the things Zhang Ye had done in the past.

Li Qinqin glanced at him and said, "Don't keep criticizing him. I think he's quite good."

"That's your opinion. I just don't like him!" Wu Changhe said angrily.

Wu Changhe really felt like today was the longest day of his life. When had he ever been tortured to such a state by someone like this in the world of Go? Never! This was the first time it had happened!

All of a sudden, someone exclaimed in shock!

"He's been surrounded!"

"The white stones in the right corner are in danger!"

"Great move!"

"Master Xiang is all-powerful!"

"Hahahahaha!"

Dan Donghe, Wu Changhe, and the others immediately looked over as well.

Wu Changhe laughed loudly as he slapped his thigh and applauded, "Good, good!"

However, when the next white stone was played, another uproar ran through the place!

Wu Changhe's expression darkened again!

Li Qinqin was tickled at the sight.

"Holy shit!"

"This...this..."

"He has broken the hold!"

"White has broken the hold!"

"The right corner has actually been brought back to life!"

"This is so wonderful to watch!"

"Aiyo, I'm sweating!"

"He can even bring those stones back to fucking life?"

"White is really godly!"

"Damn, whose side are you on?"

"Man, I'm on Master Xiang's side of course, but White played really well! As someone who can make that move, he's definitely at the level of the top three in the world!"

Everyone was exclaiming endlessly!

Then the game fell into a state of monotony again.

Right into the midgame, the two of them began a series of territorial battles. They played very conservatively and neither rushed to make any ruthless moves again!

Half an hour.

An hour.

It was almost 10 PM now.

Neither had managed to take the initiative. The game was still deadlocked!

When Li Qinqin saw that Zhang Ye had actually managed to be locked in such a close battle with Xiang Rong 9-dan, the current number one in the world of Go, she felt an indescribable feeling of shock and confusion. This Little Zhang was way too talented. How does he know everything? And he even manages to do well in any of the industries he goes into?

Suddenly, something unexpected happened.

Xiang Rong yawned and chuckled as he typed something. This was the first time that Xiang Rong was having a conversation with YE since the game began. "If we play to the end, we would need at least another five, six hours to finish the game. Then it would last until tomorrow morning, so why don't we stop here for today. I'm getting sleepy and should sleep soon."

Everyone was stunned!

They weren't going to play on?

Master Xiang did not want to continue playing?

YE replied very quickly: "Then who's the winner?"

Xiang Rong said: "Let's call it a draw, what do you say?"

"Sure."

"Let's play another game some other day."

Xiang Rong then went offline on Wu Changhe's account.

Everyone gathered around him at once.

"Master Xiang!"

"Why didn't you keep playing?"

"If you played to the endgame, you would definitely have won!"

"That's right! How can you call it a draw?"

A lot of people could not accept this result, because in their eyes, Xiang Rong was the legend of the Go world. No one had won against him, and it was unlikely that there would be anyone who could do so!

But Xiang Rong just smiled as he shook his head and stayed quiet.

Wu Changhe, Dan Donghe, and the others went up to him.

Wu Changhe asked, "How was it?"

Xiang Rong gave a wry smile. "He's a very strong Go player."

Wu Changhe said in frustration, "Even you can't beat him? Were you holding back?"

He was raging mad!

Could it be that there was really no one who could deal with that Zhang fellow?

"He is really strong." Xiang Rong said, "Although I'm not too used to playing online Go, and that definitely affected my ability to perform, my opponent probably did not really give his best either. Some of his moves were even more casual than mine. Besides, he also played a lot of games with others before me, and it would surely have affected his mental state. If we continued to play, it would have been difficult to tell who the victor would be." He then threw his hands up and surprised everyone with, "And the most important thing is, even if we carried on that game to the end, the victor might not necessarily be me."

At this, many people fell silent!

## Chapter 1110: YE appears again!

The next day.

In the morning.

Someone broke the news on Weibo and a discussion followed.

"Changhe 9-dan was utterly demolished in Go yesterday?"

"Yeah, it happened on the Online Go Server. It was really ruthless!"

"Yeah. That opponent of his was also particularly funny. He played Go in the style of Fight the Landlord and kept urging his opponents to hurry up with their moves. He even asked if they had forgotten to bring toilet paper with them to the bathroom. Those of us viewing the matches at that time laughed our asses off! I've never seen such a rude person before. Is he even playing Go?!"

"I saw it too! I was dying of laughter!"

"But that guy is really very good at the game!"

"By the way, I think I saw a flash of Xiang Rong's account appearing!"

"I noticed it too. Could Xiang Rong 9-dan have really played against him?"

"I don't know. The room was no longer accessible after that!"

"Even Xiang Rong 9-dan was called upon? That's impossible!"

"Damn! If it really happened, I want to know who won!"

On Weibo.

In the Go forums.

Within the Go community.

Similar discussions were taking place everywhere. Among those who played Go, this matter had caused quite a big stir.

Some of the netizens were muttering about this, but many of them could only make guesses as to what really happened. Only the people from China Qiyuan were in the know, and they even knew exactly how the matter had come about and its specific details. However, the outcome of yesterday's events were still unacceptable to many of them. As a result, none of them said a word about it to anyone. To them, this was not something to be proud of at all!

...

At Zhang Ye's parents' house.

In his bedroom.

Zhang Ye woke up happily with a smile, probably from some dream that he was having. After he got up, he immediately went to brush his teeth and wash up, all the while singing, "We the common folk, we are so happy today!"

His mother looked at him. "Did you win a prize? What are you so happy about?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I'm just happy, that's all."

"Why did you come home so late again last night?" His father asked.

Zhang Ye sighed out, "I went out to play Go. Just messing around and having a little fun."

His parents knew that he could play Go, but they did not know how good he was. His mother said in amusement, "You only had some lessons in elementary school and signed up for an extracurricular class in middle school. You even attended the classes on and off for only a semester, so who could you possibly play against at your level? You can't even beat your dad."

Zhang Ye said with a chuckle, "That's not true. I won't have a problem winning against Dad for sure."

"I haven't seen you touch the game in many years. What made you suddenly want to play again?" his father asked.

Zhang Ye said, "I'm on leave for half a month, aren't I? So of course I'd have to find something to relax with."

His mother pursed her lips. "Rather than playing Go, you should be out earning money."

His father gave her a look. "Our son's been tired out by work recently. It's only right that he should get some rest."

"It's still Dad who loves me more." Zhang Ye laughed.

What was so important about work?

What was the urgency of making money?

He had to get the matter of his marriage settled first and foremost!

He still hadn't managed to "convince" Old Wu's father yet!

After breakfast.

He went back to his room to prepare for another day of playing Go. Talking about it, this fellow was really starting to get addicted to playing. Especially that last game with "WuChanghe." He enjoyed it quite a lot. Although the game ended in a draw, it was only decided as so after they both agreed to it. Go was unlike Xiangqi in that no games could be drawn. As long as they played until the end, a winner would be determined. Zhang Ye didn't know if he could have won because the game played by "WuChanghe" was spectacular. Zhang Ye did not know whether he had hidden his strength before that, or if he had finally found a way of dealing with him after playing so many rounds.

He had to be wary!

Comrade Changhe was indeed still pretty strong!

Zhang Ye was so petty that he immediately thought of a way to deal with that. He decided that he would strengthen his Go skill so

that Comrade Changhe would not have a chance to make a comeback and gain an advantage over him. Since he wanted to win, he would have to win every game. Only then would Wu Changhe be convinced that he was really serious and determined to marry his daughter!

Right!

It was time for the lottery!

He needed to get several more of those skill experience books!

Zhang Ye was very spontaneous about it and immediately brought up the lottery draw system. He had already maxed out on the Lottery Draw (One)'s Go Skill Experience Books, so there wasn't any meaning in getting more of those. So he selected the Lottery Draw (Two) system to play. He did not add many additional stakes to it since he had already spent quite a bit of Reputation Points the previous time. Although he still had a lot, he did not want to be so wasteful. He had to save for a rainy day, after all. And so, he only added four additional stakes to the draw for a total of five stakes which cost 50 million Reputation Points. Then, he readily activated the Lucky Halo (Upgraded). When the halo appeared, he was imbued with luck and his Reputation Points started dropping every second!

-100,000!

-100,000!

Zhang Ye quickly started the lottery draw!

When the slot machine was activated, he wasn't sure if he could be so lucky to really get the Go Skill Experience Books. This was a good time to test the effects of the Lucky Halo again!

The icons flashed by quickly!

5 seconds...

10 seconds...

Slowly, the machine came to a stop!

Zhang Ye had already closed his eyes. When he heard the ding signaling the end of the lottery draw, he opened his eyes to take a look. Then he laughed out loud when he saw that the icons had lined up with the Skills Category icons. This made Zhang Ye very excited and he couldn't wait to open up all the medium-size treasure chests!

The golden treasure chests opened up!

A golden flash of light emitted from them!

[Xiangqi Skill Experience Book] × 5.

When Zhang Ye saw the prize, he nearly burst into tears!

Dammit!

Why weren't they the skill experience books for Go?

Xiangqi? Why would I need Xiangqi skills!

Zhang Ye felt a twinge of pain. But since he had gotten the prize, he had no way to give it back. He deactivated the lucky halo in sadness and then started studying the Xiangqi Skill Experience Books one by one. The books dissolved into glowing light particles and surged right into his mind! Zhang Ye could clearly sense that his Xiangqi skill was growing. He had not drawn any Xiangqi Skill Experience Books before from Lottery Draw (One), and instead "ate" the Lottery Draw (Two)'s skill experience books. In doing so, Zhang Ye discovered that the effect was essentially the same as "eating" the equivalent amount of Reputation Points worth of skill experience books from Lottery Draw (One).

For example, these five Lottery Draw (Two) skill experience books had cost him 50 million Reputation Points. This was equivalent to 500 Lottery Draw (One) skill experience books for the Xiangqi skill. It was only after the lower level skill had been maxed out that the higher level skill experience books would be able to stack on top of that experience.

Hai.

If it was Xiangqi, then so be it.

After he gained a better understanding of the system, Zhang Ye did not continue playing the lottery draw. He decided to forget about it since his luck today didn't seem too good. The Lucky Halo (Upgraded) didn't felt like it was too effective today, so it was better not to force it.

He went online and logged in to his account. Zhang Ye entered into the Online Go Server again!

Where was everyone?

Where's Comrade Changhe?

I, Hu Hansan, am back!

• • •

At China Qiyuan.

There was a sudden commotion at the computers!

"He's here!"

"Damn, YE is back again!"

"His account is online now!"

"What's he back for?"

Quite a few people had arrived at the Qiyuan this morning. When they heard the commotion, everyone rushed over to have a look.

"Ah, Teacher Changhe is also online!"

"Is he currently playing anyone?"

"He already finished a game."

"Eh? How did YE get into Teacher Changhe's room again?"

"I'm floored. Where the heck did he get the password from?"

"Ah, quick, see this!"

```
"Changhe 9-dan has kicked him out of the room!"
```

Everyone was laughing on as they watched the ruckus!

This drama of the year was incredibly funny!

Hu Hansan is a villainous character in a movie whose classic line is this. Similar to the catchphrase by Arnold Schwarzenegger's 'I'll be back'!

<sup>&</sup>quot;Teacher Changhe has changed the password!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Ah, YE got into the room again!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Pfft, Teacher Changhe has kicked him out again!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Teacher Changhe doesn't want to play him anymore!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Aiyo, the room's administrative rights have been stolen!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;YE has become the administrator!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Teacher Changhe can't kick him anymore!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Ah, Changhe 9-dan has left the room!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;He has set up a new room!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Damn, YE came in again!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;YE has been kicked again!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Ah, he came in again!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;The administrator role has been taken!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Aiyo! Teacher Changhe has been kicked by YE!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Damn!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What sort of grudge do they have!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;I'm dying of laughter!"

## Chapter 1111: Just who could this godly person be?

At Zhang Ye's parents' house.

He snorted!

What are you doing? You said that we would play again some other time after agreeing to end the last match yesterday as a draw. Oh, you're already going back on your word? You won't play me anymore? You even kicked me out of the room? What have I said? Why did you have to kick me?

Don't make me mad!

You're pushing your luck!

You want to challenge my computer skills?

Do you think this bro's world-class hacker skills are meant for messing around with you?

On the other end.

Old Wu's parents' courtyard house.

Wu Changhe could be heard shouting nonstop!

"Who wants to play against you! I'm going to kick you out!"

"Whoa, you can still come back? I'll just have to kick you again!"

"Hahaha, keep being cocky! Go on, keep at it!"

"Damn, why am I not the administrator anymore?"

"Damn! You little bastard, how dare you kick me?"

"Are you trying to play dirty with me! I'll fight it out with you!"

Li Qinqin pushed open the door in a speechless manner. "What's with you?"

Wu Changhe said furiously, "That rascal Zhang is playing dirty

with me! How dare he come looking for trouble! I'll show him what he gets for disrespecting me!"

Li Qinqin said in amusement, "He's looking for you again to play Go? Then just play him for a little while."

Wu Changhe rolled his eyes. "Why would I play him? Who wants to play him! He's not worth my time, understand?"

Li Qinqin smiled but did not say anything.

Not worth your time?

You're clearly just saying that because you can't beat him!

. . .

The netizens also learned about this!

They all came over to watch when they heard what was going on, and all bent over laughing!

"YE and Wu Changhe are fighting again!"

"Do they have to be this funny?"

"What's with this YE? Why did he come here again today?"

"Why is he so insistent on targeting Changhe 9-dan?"

"How did he manage to steal the administrator's role?"

"Who knows? Pfft, this person is so funny!"

Wherever Wu Changhe went, YE followed. These two started an epic chase!

• • •

At the SARFT.

Wu Zeqing was in her office.

Secretary Bai fast walked in. "Chief Wu."

"Yes?" Wu Zeqing looked up.

Secretary Bai hesitated a little before saying, "It seems like your

father has met with some trouble. There's someone on the Internet who's arguing with him. It's been going on for two days."

Wu Zeqing asked a few probing questions before powering on her computer to take a look at the Go server. She then had a laugh and said, "OK, I see."

Secretary Bai blinked and said, "Why don't I get someone to check out who that YE—"

Wu Zeqing waved it off and said with a smile, "Don't worry about them."

"Uh, alright then," Secretary Bai said.

. . .

At China Qiyuan.

A lot of people could not help but laugh at the happenings.

But the disciples of Wu Changhe who were gnashing their teeth in hate.

Hu Liang remarked angrily, "Teacher, get him! Fight it out with him!"

Chen Ying, Xu Han, and the others all looked at him but did not say a word.

Fight it out with him? Even Xiang Rong 9-dan could not beat him! Fight? What fight! This person's Go skill was just too crazy. Other than Xiang Rong 9-dan, who else would be a match for him?

The Qiyuan's president, Dan Donghe came over. He was also at a loss for words when he saw what was going on. "Why are they at it again? Didn't they play all of yesterday? Which jinx has Brother Wu offended!"

Suddenly, a professional 8th dan player pointed at the computer screen and said, "Teacher Changhe went offline!"

Beside him, a professional 5th dan female player clicked with her

mouse and said, "No, he's not offline. Teacher Changhe switched over to the Xiangqi server!"

"Xiangqi?"

"Pfft! Teacher Changhe has been forced to the Xiangqi server?"

Dan Donghe shook his head and laughed.

The Go server and the Xiangqi server were both operated by the same company and were accessible using the same account. The only difference was that their login pages were different. But the account status of those on the friends list could still be seen, like which server they were currently playing on, which room they were in, and even if they were in an active match at the moment.

The next moment, everyone discovered that YE had actually followed him over!

When those at China Qiyuan and many of the netizens realized this, they all headed into that room to watch the fun!

Now, even the Xiangqi players were alarmed. This was because Wu Changhe was also known to be a good player in the Xiangqi world. Although his achievements here could not be compared to that of the world of Go, Wu Changhe was one of the very few who could play both Go and Xiangqi at the master level. This was a rare phenomenon in the history of both games. Even now, Wu Changhe's Xiangqi skill was maintained at a very high level. His skill might not be at the same level as that of a grandmaster, but it was still comparable to a master. In the past, he had even dabbled in many of the Xiangqi world's tournaments. This was why Wu Changhe was also very well-known within the Xiangqi world. Some of the professional Xiangqi players who had just debuted would not even be a match for him!

• • •

Inside the room.

Wu Changhe and YE were coming face to face for the umpteenth

time!

Wu Changhe was almost going crazy. "Rascal, why do you keep following me around? Ah?"

Zhang Ye typed: "To play Go."

Wu Changhe harrumphed. "You're not worth my time!"

Zhang Ye said: "Then take back what you said the other day."

Wu Changhe said: "Why would I do that? I'm not taking back any words!"

Zhang Ye said: "Then let's decide things on the board of Go."

"I'm not playing you!"

"Then take back what you said!"

"I'm not taking them back! Let me tell you this: you definitely have a questionable character!"

"Then lay the terms."

A moment of silence ensued.

Suddenly, Wu Changhe laughed loudly and said: "If you want me to take back what I said, fine! Why don't we play a game of Xiangqi? Do you dare?"

Xiangqi?

Zhang Ye was taken aback. But at the same time, he was very happy about it. "Sure!"

...

Li Qinqin could no longer watch on. "You couldn't beat him at Go. And now, you're challenging him to Xiangqi? Is there any meaning to that?"

"Of course there is!" Wu Changhe laughed heartily. "I think this is going to be particularly interesting! If I don't show this kid something, he's going to get all arrogant!"

Li Qinqin rolled her eyes and said, "Your Xiangqi skills are at the pro level. How do you expect him to be able to play against you?"

"I don't care about that!" Wu Changhe said, "He wants to win over my daughter? He'll have to get past me first!"

Li Qinqin shook her head and said, "You're really intent on bullying others!"

Wu Changhe harrumphed, "What do you know! This is my way of testing him!"

Li Qinqin pursed her lips and said, "How's this a test? You're only doing this because you lost to him at Go and have nowhere to hang your head."

Wu Changhe pretended not to have heard her. He immediately hunt and pecked at the keyboard and sent a message to Zhang Ye: "Hurry up already. We're starting. Faster! Faster!" He was finally feeling spirited again!

If I can't beat you at Go!

Then I will make sure to thrash you at Xiangqi!

Hahaha!

On the other end, YE clicked the "ready" button!

The game commenced!

• • •

The netizens exclaimed.

"Wow!"

"Yesterday was Go. And today it's Xiangqi?"

"Pfft, what fun this is!"

"Teacher Changhe can finally vindicate himself today!"

"Yeah, Teacher Changhe's Xiangqi is very advanced too!"

"YE has been tricked. He probably does not know that Teacher

Changhe's Xiangqi skill is at the level of a pro as well!"

"Hur hur, Wu Changhe is even going to move first."

• • •

Indeed, Zhang Ye really did not know that Wu Changhe's Xiangqi skill was at the professional level.

Moving the horse.

Shifting the cannon.

Advancing the soldier.

But after playing for a while, he suddenly let out an exclamation when he realized something was up.

Hey! This standard of play is pretty good! Only then did Zhang Ye realize that Wu Changhe could actually play so professionally. He realized that Comrade Changhe was actually trying to trick him, so he immediately focused and continued playing on!

Trying to trick me?

You're overrating yourself!

If you had played me yesterday, I might really not be able to beat you!

But today? Hur hur! You're as good as walking into my direct line of fire!

Zhang Ye didn't expect that the five skill experience books from Lottery Draw (Two) could actually be put to use so quickly!

"Come on!"

"Whoa, you're sending out your chariot already? Watch this!"

"Haha. I've got your <u>horse's leg hobbled</u>, haven't I? <u>Jump! Why</u> <u>aren't you jumping!</u>?"

• • •

At China Qiyuan.

At the beginning, no one really gave much thought to the game since everyone knew that Wu Changhe was an expert in Xiangqi. But when they got to the <u>middlegame</u>, everyone was dumbfounded!

Chen Ying was taken aback. "This..."

Xu Han was wiping away his sweat. "Damn!"

Hu Liang could also see it. "Teacher Wu is at a disadvantage? How's that possible!"

Beside them, there were quite a few Xiangqi pros who also came to watch the game. At first, they thought it was a game of Go being played. But when they came over, they saw it turned out to be a Xiangqi battle. Further, it was an extremely high level game!

At this point, those people from the Xiangqi world were also stunned!

"Fuck!"

"Who could he be?"

"Why is he so good?"

"He can even play Xiangqi?"

"This is bad! That was a bad move by Teacher Changhe!"

"Aiyo, this horse is done for!"

Indeed. With the next move, Wu Changhe's horse was captured and taken by YE!

"This formation was really well-planned!"

"Yeah, Teacher Changhe has been tricked by YE again!"

"That move earlier by YE was actually just a diversion!"

• • •

At the courtyard house.

Wu Changhe had started off the game with a big smile on his

face. It later turned into a slight smile before he turned completely expressionless, and then finally looked like he was about to vomit a mouthful of blood!

The game lasted only half an hour!

Check!

When YE moved his cannon, Wu Changhe was checkmated!

Li Qinqin was also dumbfounded from watching. "This Little Zhang, he's..."

Wu Changhe was so angry that he was trembling. He typed: "Again! I dare you to play again!"

"You're up for another game?"

"Best of three!"

"Sure."

The second game was won by YE. It took one hour.

"Again!"

"Isn't it supposed to be a best of three?"

"Do you even know how to play Xiangqi? Any proper official tournament states that a match is decided in a best of five!"

"Oh, OK."

In the third game, YE won. It took 45 minutes.

"Again!"

"But I've already won three times."

"A pro match requires a best of seven!"

"Oh, so it's like that."

"Come on!"

"OK."

In the fourth game, YE won in 50 minutes.

For the entirety of the daytime, Wu Changhe played ten games against Zhang Ye, not believing that this was happening. In all ten games, Wu Changhe lost. He even lost all of them very quickly and easily!

Wu Changhe was dumbfounded!

China Qiyuan's people were dumbfounded!

The observing players were also dumbfounded!

Yesterday, Wu Changhe had been utterly demolished in Go!

But who could have thought that today in Xiangqi, Wu Changhe would get utterly demolished once again by YE!

Just what sort of person was he!

Which fucking godly person was this!?

They were all so shocked that they didn't know what to say!

...

At the courtyard house.

Wu Zeqing came back to her parent's place after work.

The moment she entered the house, she saw Wu Changhe with a dark look on his face and not saying a word. Every now and then, he would even bang on the table out of anger.

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "Dad, what's going on?"

"You dare to ask? You have the cheek to ask me that?" With her question, Wu Changhe got even angrier!

Li Qinqin laughed and said, "Your dad lost again."

Wu Zeqing said, "Isn't that very normal?"

Li Qinqin shook her head and said, "This time, he lost to Little Zhang in Xiangqi. Out of ten games, he did not even win once. Just look at how he's throwing a tantrum now, hur hur."

Wu Zeqing was taken aback. "Little Ye knows how to play

Xiangqi as well?"

"He more than knows how to play it," Li Qinqin said with a giggle. "This boyfriend of yours is really no ordinary guy."

The horse does not jump as the knight does in international chess. Zhang Ye hobbled/trapped Wu Changhe's horse.

The opening in Xiangqi is basically the first 10-15 moves by each person, that is, 20-30 moves in total.

## Chapter 1112: An artificial intelligence issues a challenge to humanity!

The next day.

It was another morning.

An entertainment circle without Zhang Ye was always going to be missing that bit of liveliness. Although there were still countless celebrities involved in all kinds of news and scandals, those were mainly either hyped up by their companies to promote a new film or show, or the headlines themselves being hyped up when in fact the news was nothing that interesting. It was always lacking that realism and impact that Zhang Ye brought when he was active. He would so often start some trouble that was so shocking that it would send everyone into panic. Everything was definitely more exciting when he was around.

On Weibo.

"Is Zhang Ye still on break?"

"It's only been three days."

"Ai, I'm starting to miss him already!"

"Me too! I wish that Teacher Zhang would return soon and create yet another masterpiece!"

"I wonder what Zhang Ye is doing right now."

"Could that fellow be sleeping every day?"

"What about that girl who is like the lilac? How's it going with her?"

"@ZhangYe! Wake up!"

"@ZhangYe! Wake up!"

"@ZhangYe! Don't sleep anymore!"

In the end, someone kicked off a mass mention of Zhang Ye, with a lot of people gleefully joining in. In an instant, several hundred people on Weibo started to @ZhangYe to make this fellow get up from bed.

But unknown to them, Zhang Ye had awakened long ago.

• • •

Back at home.

7 AM.

After breakfast, Zhang Ye eagerly went back to his room and logged on to the Online Go Server again.

Then a call from Wu Zeqing came in.

"Old Wu?"

"You're awake?"

"Yes, I am. I'm getting ready to play Go."

"You still want to play?"

"Yeah, I have nothing to do anyway."

"Don't play anymore. My dad is starting to get frustrated. If you keep beating him, I think he might really get into a fight with you. Don't overdo it."

"Ah? Surely not, right?"

"Why not? When I got back yesterday, I heard my dad cursing you for the entire night, hur hur. Oh yes, my mom wants me to ask you something. She wonders if you'd be interested in joining a pro Go tournament. A Go celebrity is also a celebrity; they get a lot of attention too. My mom asks if you will consider it for a moment?"

"No thanks."

"Why is that?"

"With my level, I can only occasionally come up against someone

like your dad, who's a retired pro."

"Have some faith in yourself. You're very good."

"Forget it. I'll just stick to the entertainment industry and make an honest living there instead."

"True. Alright then."

"Old Wu, what about the two of us?"

"It won't be an issue with my mom. But as for my dad..."

"I've won so many games against your dad. Is he still not going to recognize and accept me? Then wouldn't I have done all that for nothing?"

"It's not for nothing. This time, you've really changed the way that my parents perceive you. My dad may be cursing you very fiercely, but I can see that he has been moved. As for my mom, she rather likes you too. How about this: I'll bring you to my parents' place again in a few days' time."

"Sure."

"Then you rest well today. I need to get to work."

The call ended.

He has been moved?

Zhang Ye smile slightly, thinking about how there was finally some progress, at last.

He wasn't at all thinking of becoming some Go celebrity. Although it was good to have another title, and would contribute to the course of his career as well as add some shine to his résumé, the intensity of the tournaments was too high with too much competition and spanned too long a duration. Every day for the entire year, they would be required to train and compete against one another. All those professional and world rankings were actually earned by sacrificing one's time. Zhang Ye did not have such time to do something like that. If it were not for the matter

with Wu Zeqing, and his differences with Wu Changhe, he would probably not have touched Go and Xiangqi at all in his lifetime. These sports celebrities might look very glorious and positive, and also gain the respect of many, but it was simply too high of a price to pay. Besides, Zhang Ye had always thought that his Go skill was mediocre. He couldn't even beat a retired pro who couldn't play in professional games and had even nearly lost to him too, so why would he want to join any pro tournaments? Wouldn't he be looking to get abused then? Even if he got matched against a pro 5th or 6th dan Go player, he probably still couldn't win!

Suddenly, the door opened.

His mother came into the room. "Oh, you're not playing Go today?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "No, I'm not playing anymore. I won so much that I got bored."

"Keep bragging, kid!" His mother naturally did not take his words seriously. She said, "If you have nothing to do, get changed quickly. Come with me and your dad and do some grocery shopping. Your three sisters will be coming over this afternoon to have fun."

"Bring me to the market with you?"

"Yeah, that's right."

"What if I get surrounded by people at the market?"

"If you get surrounded, then so be it."

"Whoa, you're really throwing me out there huh?"

"It wasn't easy for me to have such a famous son. Why aren't you allowing me to flaunt you?"

"Alright then!"

"Hurry up, we're leaving!"

• • •

Meanwhile.

At China Qiyuan.

Exceptionally more people came here today.

President Dan Donghe, Xiang Rong 9-dan, Li Yi 9-dan. It was especially crowded here at the Go association. Basically, all those who were called celebrity professional Go players were here. The remaining professional players who were not that highly ranked also gathered around. Everyone had looks of incredulity on their faces!

Chen Ying said in shock, "Is the news true?"

"Yeah, th-that can't be impossible!" Xu Han said in a stunned manner.

Dan Donghe said sternly, "I've just received the news. It's true, the news is indeed true. This will be reported on the news very soon!"

No one cared about YE anymore!

They also stopped caring about the dispute between YE and Changhe 9-dan!

That was because at this moment, the world of Go was facing a battle of life and death. Everyone was unable to react to the news. They were even completely unprepared for it because this news had come about too suddenly!

"Chen Chi 9-dan lost?"

"How could he have lost!"

"That's impossible!"

"How could that thing possibly win against Chen Chi 9-dan?"

"Could it have been a one-off?"

"It definitely did not get lucky. It won two games in a best of three. Chen Chi lost two games in a row." "Heavens...this..."

"I just called Chen Chi and asked him what was going on. He didn't say much except to warn us to be careful! I could hear that he sounded very defeated!"

Wu Changhe just arrived, walking rapidly. "Is it true?"

Li Yi 9-dan sighed and said, "Yes."

Wu Changhe's expression darkened. "Old Dan, I want to look at that game."

Xiang Rong 9-dan spoke, "I would like to see it too."

Dan Donghe nodded. "I've already requested for it. They'll be sending it over soon."

Soon after, the game record was sent.

Chen Ying volunteered, "I'll recreate the match."

She operated the computer and recreated the match from the first move on the big screen.

Everyone's face turned sullen the longer they watched. The atmosphere in the entire Qiyuan fell into a very oppressive tension!

• • •

At home.

His three sisters arrived.

Zhang Ye was unaware of these developments in the outside world.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "What made you girls want to come over today?"

His eldest younger sister smiled. "We came to look for you to play of course."

"Brother, aren't you on break now? The three of us are on our

summer break, and we're bored to tears," his second sister said with a giggle. "How boring!"

Zhang Ye was amused by them. He pointed at the cabinet behind him and said, "You all came at the right time. I have nothing to do today either. That's right! After the show's recording ended a few days ago, Beijing TV handed out a lot of freebies to us. I also received some gifts from other people. Things like VR headsets and perfumes, just take whatever you like. Since you're here today, there's no need to be a stranger. Just tell me whatever you want. As long as it's something that I have, you can take it if you like it. There's no need to be polite—" Before he finished speaking, Zhang Ye looked back and was stunned.

His third sister was already holding a pile of boxes in her arms. "These are all mine!"

His second sister was panicking. "Damn, leave some for me! And leave some for Big Sis as well."

His eldest younger sister said, "I want the perfume. Don't take it from me!"

Zhang Ye said, "Can you guys be a little more polite? Can you?"

In the end, his three sisters stared at him in confusion. "Didn't you insist for us to not hold back?"

"But you should still have listened to me and let me finish. Oh, look at this. Even before I finish speaking, everything is already gone?" Zhang Ye didn't know how to react. "Are you bandits raiding a village?"

His parents laughed at that.

His mother said, "Take as much as you want. Little Ye doesn't have any use for them anyway."

"Yes, ma'am! Thank you, Auntie!" His third sister playfully gave a military salute to her.

Zhang Ye couldn't do anything about them and just shook his head. He turned on the television with the remote control as he wanted to watch the news. Although he was taking a break from work, he still saw the need to keep up with the entertainment industry and society's news and affairs.

However, when the television turned on, the news that was currently being reported on TV stunned Zhang Ye!

On Central TV News Channel.

The anchor: "An artificial intelligence named Peter that was developed by an American company has shockingly made its debut by defeating the American-born Chinese Go player, Chen Chi 9-dan, two to zero in a match that ended at 5:10 AM Beijing Time. At the same time, the artificial intelligence Peter officially issued a challenge to humanity. According to information our reporters gathered from China Qiyuan, Peter's development company has already sent out official letters of challenge to the Chinese, Japanese, and Korean professional Go players. The reason they chose Go was that it was acknowledged as the most difficult and complicated board game. It is also a game that represents humanity's wisdom. Could a machine's intelligence soon surpass the wisdom of humans? This is destined to be an unprecedented battle!"

Zhang Ye was stunned!

Peter?

An AI?

A challenge to all humanity?

Go?

Damn!

Wasn't this that famous AlphaGo 1 from his previous world?

## Chapter 1113: Xiang Rong? I think I've heard of him before!

When the news was released!

It created quite the stir throughout Asia!

On Weibo.

"Challenging all of humanity?"

"Holy shit!"

"The Americans are way too arrogant!"

"Didn't they only beat one person? What's that to brag about!"

"The issue here is that the AI defeated Chen Chi 9-dan. Old Chen is an American-born Chinese, and although he has never represented China as a participant in international tournaments, he has caused many problems for our national team at that level. He is one of the best Go players in the world and is ranked in the top 10 of the world rankings. Do you understand what this means? Don't tell me you guys don't know. It would be fine if it was just an ordinary amateur or pro Go player who lost to the artificial intelligence. But here, it's Chen Chi 9-dan who lost and got crushed by a score of zero to two! This news is really hard to believe!"

"It's only a machine. How can it be that strong?"

"Yeah, Go is too complicated. How can an AI possibly handle it?"

"The Americans claim that the machine can consider its moves."

"No way, right? Wouldn't that be really troublesome?"

"Yeah, the entire world of Go is faced with a huge crisis!"

"No, it's not only the world of Go. This is a calamity for all humanity!"

"Intelligence is humanity's most powerful and last line of

defense. If humanity were to lose to a machine in the domain of intelligence, then...the consequences would be disastrous! This would subvert all that we have previously known!"

"Humans will become inferior to machines? Damn!" "Fuck! What bullshit is this Peter!" "Right, show them how powerful we humans are!" Japan. These netizens were also making a netizen! " Nani? 1 " "A letter of challenge?" "Don't they know that we have Shinji 9-dan?" "They're really overestimating what that AI can do!" "Yeah, let's show them what we're capable of!" "They wish to compete with humans on intelligence? What a joke! A machine is still not good enough to do that!" How can an intelligence designed by humans possibly surpass the wisdom of humanity? "But Chen Chi 9-dan already lost!" "He must have been too careless!" Korea. "Peter?" "It only won against one person and it's already issuing a challenge to all humanity?" "How arrogant!"

"This is an insult aimed at Go!"

"It's taking Go to be too simple!"

"I don't believe that it can win. There are still so many outstanding Go players who are better than Chen Chi 9-dan. For example, Elder Park Yuhee, Shinji 9-dan, and Korea's great warrior—Xiang Rong 9-dan! I strongly believe that humanity's last line of defense will not be defeated by just a machine!"

"Ah? Isn't Xiang Rong 9-dan Chinese?"

"No, he's Korean, but that's another story..."

• • •

The news blew up!

News of this was overwhelming!

"Machine issues challenge to humanity!"

"Will humanity be able to preserve its last shred of dignity?"

"Peter—The strongest AI in history!"

"A machine that can think out its moves!"

"The greatest threat to humanity in history!"

"The International Go Federation 2 holds an emergency meeting to discuss strategic countermeasures!"

"The match between the AI and Chen Chi 9-dan revealed!"

Go is a very popular game in Asia, and everyone was no stranger to games played against machines. They could basically play against the computer with any of the Go software available on the market. Publishers refer to them as artificial intelligence. Although they were referred to as intelligence, those who understood the subject knew that it was not intelligent at all. These softwares would often commit a lot of mistakes that a normal Go expert would not make. They were also prone to making many bizarre moves. Some Go beginners would probably lose to it very frequently, but to any of the stronger amateur

players, they would basically be able to thrash the computer opponent every time. Moreover, everyone disliked playing against a computer opponent as there were too many bugs in the program and the moves were too predictable.

But now, Peter had appeared out of nowhere!

This "artificial intelligence" program seemed to be completely different from the usual computer AI that they had come across and had completely defeated Chen Chi 9-dan. Although a lot of people were insulting and looking down on it, they were actually feeling quite afraid of it. That was because they couldn't understand what this thing was and if it could really consider its moves before making them!

• • •

At home.

His sisters were dumbfounded by the news!

His parents were also surprised and scooted over.

His second sister blinked and said, "Is it that strong?"

His mother said puzzled, "An artificial intelligence?"

His eldest younger sister's face paled a little. "If this Peter actually manages to defeat all the top Go players in the world, does it mean that machines could replace human intelligence in the future?"

His third sister exclaimed, "This is terrible!"

Zhang Ye just stared at the television and remained silent.

His eldest younger sister wanted to hear Zhang Ye's opinion. "Brother, what do you think?"

A lot of people were caught completely off guard by this news, including China Qiyuan, which was also plunged into a chaos. Many people were still in a state of shock. Perhaps only Zhang Ye remained the calmest among them. Other than the parent company that developed Peter, he was probably the only person

who had an in-depth understanding of the program in this world!

Zhang Ye said, "To say that it can consider its moves, that's impossible."

His eldest younger sister asked puzzled, "Really?"

Zhang Ye nodded and said, "But if it is the thing that I know it is, it'll be very difficult for humans to win against it." In his previous world, not only was AlphaGo famous, it also captured the attention of all of Asia. Even Lee Sedol, number one in the world at the time, had lost to it. If this Peter was really the same thing as AlphaGo, then...it would cause a headache for the Go players of this world.

This program was really very strong!

It was definitely not the usual type of computer AI that people were used to!

At this moment, another astonishing event occurred that would capture the attention of all of Asia!

Someone had finally responded to the letter of challenge by Peter the AI!

All over Asia, televisions, newspapers, and the Internet suddenly released a piece of news simultaneously!

Shinji 9-dan, Japan's best Go player and ranked in the top 5 in the Go world, had announced in a press conference held in Japan that he would accept Peter's challenge!

The American company gave a response very quickly!

They didn't say more than what was needed!

There weren't any pleasantries exchanged either!

The reply only consisted of eight words: "In two days' time, let's battle in Tokyo!"

The battle was going to begin soon!

The Japanese had accepted the challenge!

Some people were feeling worried!

Some people were feeling excited!

The "war between humans and machines" was immediately hyped up!

• • •

His father said, "Shinji 9-dan? With him playing, we should be able to win, right?"

Zhang Ye shook his head and said with a smile, "That could be difficult."

His third sister asked in surprise, "He can't win?"

Zhang Ye said, "I wouldn't know about that. But in any case, it would be very difficult."

His eldest younger sister clenched her teeth and said, "But humanity still has Xiang Rong 9-dan. If there's really no way out, Xiang Rong 9-dan will be able to hold the last line of defense!"

"Right, Xiang Rong is very strong!" His father also knew about him.

Zhang Ye wondered out loud, "Who?"

"Xiang Rong 9-dan!" His eldest younger sister said, "He's currently the number one player in the Go world. Brother, don't you also know how to play Go? You don't even know him?"

Zhang Ye blinked and said, "This name sounds a little familiar. I think I've seen it somewhere before."

His father said, "Of course it would sound familiar. There's no one in this world who can play Go as well as him. If you play against him, you couldn't win even if he gave you a handicap of 20 stones."

His eldest young sister laughed as she corrected, "He would have to give him a handicap of 30 stones." Zhang Ye wondered if there was really such a strong Go player in China.

Xiang Rong?

Xiang Rong?

Eh, where did I see this name?

Zhang Ye had forgotten.

#### Chapter 1114: Zhang Ye's contribution!

Noon.

At China Qiyuan.

Reporters were swarming the outside!

They came from all over the place, from the television stations to the newspaper firms to the online media outlets. Right now, China Qiyuan was the focus of discussions all over the country. Even the equivalent organizations in Japan and Korea were watching China Qiyuan's actions very closely. After all, China led Go in Asia. In the top ten of the world rankings, half of them were taken by Chinese citizens. The remaining places were then made up of those players from Japan and Korea!

"Is President Dan around?"

"Is Xiang Rong 9-dan here?"

"I'm from Central TV. Could you grant us an interview?"

"I'm from Beijing TV. Could you let us have an interview with Changhe 9-dan!"

"If Shinji 9-dan loses, will we also send a representative?"

"Is Xiang Rong 9-dan confident in winning?"

China Qiyuan was bursting with people!

"Please wait!"

"The players are holding a meeting right now!"

"Don't squeeze! Please be patient!"

The staff were all busy attending to the media reporters.

Inside.

Dozens of professional Go players gathered around in a gloomy atmosphere. After Chen Ying had recreated the match, and with

the analysis given by Xiang Rong 9-dan and Li Yi 9-dan, everyone finally finished studying the game between Peter and Chen Chi 9-dan. As a result, they were all shocked by the "intelligence" of Peter!

Xu Han 8-dan exclaimed, "This is so ridiculous!"

"He really knows how to consider his moves!" Tian Weiwei paled!

Hu Liang 7-dan could not believe it. "This is impossible!"

Li Yi 9-dan gasped and said, "But these moves should only be possible if a human played. A machine would never be able to make them, so how could this AI manage to do it? This simply cannot be done through big data analytics!"

"Will Shinji 9-dan be able to win?"

"I don't know!"

"Everyone is still in a state of confusion!"

"Yeah, no one knows anything about Peter!"

"We don't have enough understanding of the program. But using all the game data from the Internet and television broadcasts, it has all the information it needs about the other world-class Go players!"

"How does it work exactly?"

"How can they say that it has intelligence?"

Everyone was in disbelief!

In those two games of Go, they saw many frightful insights that convinced many of them that this AI could really think like a human. Further, the thought process was even more detailed than a human could muster, with the considerations of every move much more comprehensive! This was too scary!

• • •

Back at home.

After lunch.

Zeqing called Wu Zeqing.

Zhang Ye asked, "Has the Go community met with some trouble?"

Old Wu confirmed, "My dad has gone to China Qiyuan for an emergency meeting to discuss the strategic countermeasures to take. If Shinji 9-dan wins, it'll be fine. But if even he loses, then that will be problematic. Right now, the Qiyuan is also quite in the dark about the developments. Without any technical data and a blueprint of how Peter operates, no one has any idea of what kind of machine it is. The enemy is in the shadows while everything about my dad and the other Go players is known, so that makes it a very tricky situation.

Zhang Ye replied, "If it's about that, I might know a little."

"Oh?" Old Wu said.

Zhang Ye thought about it for a moment and said, "How about this? I'll send you some information about what I know of AI. It might not necessarily be correct, but it should be good enough for reference."

Old Wu said, "Alright, I'll forward that to my dad."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye went online and found the match between Chen Chi 9-dan and Peter. After studying it for a long time, he managed to get an idea of the inner workings of the program.

His third sister pushed open the door and came in. "Eh, Brother, what are you doing?"

Zhang Ye smiled, typing and saying, "I'm writing a document."

"Aren't you on leave from work for half a month?" His eldest younger sister also came into the room.

Zhang Ye said, "Hai, I'm helping someone with something."

...

At China Qiyuan.

Dan Donghe was getting interviewed.

Meanwhile, Xiang Rong 9-dan declined to get interviewed. He sat there and continued to analyze the game between Peter and Chen Chi 9-dan, at times shaking his head, at times frowning.

A distance away.

Wu Changhe received a call.

"Daughter, I'm busy right now."

"Dad, I sent you some information. Take a look at it."

"What information?"

"Little Ye sorted out the working principles of Peter."

"Him? What could he possibly know!"

"Take a look at it first, alright?"

"Is the information reliable?"

"Have you forgotten what Little Ye does? He's a world-class mathematician and all computer programs are based on binary, so don't you think it's reliable? In this area, he's the real professional. Depending on a world-class mathematician's research information is better than listening to a group of Go players analysis of a program, isn't that right?"

"Alright, I'll take a look then."

After hanging up, Wu Changhe downloaded the document onto his cell phone.

Soon after, Dan Donghe came back. He was exhausted from handling the interview with the several dozen reporters. This was because he was unable to give them a proper conclusion about the meat of the matter.

Everyone gathered again.

Wu Changhe suddenly said, "Come, everyone! Take a look at this!"

"Ah?"

"What is it?"

"Teacher, what's the matter?"

Everyone looked to him.

Wu Changhe said, "Someone sent me a document regarding that P-whatever thing's working principles." He handed it to his disciple Tian Weiwei. "Put it up on the big screen for everyone to see."

Tian Weiwei immediately said, "Yes!"

Everyone was skeptical.

"Working principles?"

"Did someone manage to analyze them?"

"Is it real?"

"How can it be so fast?"

Dan Donghe's eyes lit up. He hurriedly strode over and said, "Brother Wu, who sent it to you?"

Wu Changhe scowled and said, "Don't ask about that. It's just someone who works with math."

The document was quickly shown on the display!

Everyone looked up!

Xiang Rong also looked up at the screen!

Peter.

This is an AI program written for Go.

It mainly consists of four parts:

- 1. Policy Network: Picks likely moves to play at every step.
- 2. Fast Rollout: Has the same goal as 1. A rollout policy that is 1,000 times faster but less precise under certain conditions.
- 3. Value Network: Learns to look at a board state, and predicts who is likely to win.
- 4. Monte Carlo Tree Search (MCTS): Combining the three parts above, it forms a complete program.

The main theory behind it is deep learning. Deep learning refers to multilayer neural networks and its training. A layer of neural networks can take in a large number of inputs, and through a nonlinear method to obtain appropriate weights, finally obtain a final output score. It works just like biological brains. Using an appropriate matrix, multiple layers are connected together, forming a neural network "brain," allowing for complicated manipulation, just like how humans process image recognition. It has two "brains." It uses these two neural network "brains" to play Go. These brains' neural networks are similar to how image search engines search for images. They begin with the multiple layers to handle the Go board's positions and deal with it like a picture classification website. Through a filter, a 13-layer policy neural network will analyze the setup presented. These layers are able to classify and reason logically.

The first brain: Move picker.

The second brain: Position evaluator.

And so on and so on!

It was a 2,000-word report. It looked like a research paper and was written highly professionally.

Many of the professional Go players were dumbfounded. There was many professional jargon they did not understand at all. They could only guess, but they gained a rough idea of what Peter was!

Xiang Rong 9-dan asked in shock, "Who wrote this?"

President Dan Donghe quipped, "Brother Wu, you even know an expert like this? Which mathematician is he?"

"Why do you care who he is?" Wu Changhe did not understand a thing anyway. "So is it of any use?"

"Of course it's of use!" Chen Ying was the most excited of them all. Not only was she a top female Go player, she was also an academic. She was a Tsinghua math student. "This analysis and information is incredibly important! This has exposed how Peter works! If it's true, then this AI can't think like how the Americans bragged. It can't think at all. It just makes people believe that it can think. Its core is still based on data processing!"

Two "brains"?

Deep learning?

They finally knew!

They could finally see Peter's true face!

# Chapter 1115: Humanity vs. Artificial Intelligence (Start)

The next day.

The AI, Peter, was once again dominating the news throughout Asia!

The cause of this was China Qiyuan's revelation of Peter's operating principle, a magnificent analysis report over a 1,000 words that was written in great detail. At the end, the author of the report was also indicated. It was signed as: An anonymous mathematician who does not wish to reveal his name.

The netizens were stunned!

"So that's what it is!"

"It actually plays Go in this way!"

"Thinking? Bullshit! Who are the Americans trying to bluff!"

"Those Americans really love bragging too much!"

"Who wrote this report?"

"This is so awesome!"

"It's only been a day?"

"An anonymous mathematician who does not wish to reveal his name?"

"Thank you for contributing to the cause of humanity!"

"An unsung hero!"

Both domestic and international experts were very surprised. After going through a lot of reverse verifications, they discovered that 90% of this analysis report was true and reliable! In just a short span of a day, and after just two games of Go, Peter's operating principle had been analyzed? Who could have done it?

At Old Wu's parents' house.

Li Qinqin was very shocked. "Changhe, was this analysis conducted by the Qiyuan?"

Wu Changhe mumbled, "Ah, er..."

"The only person who studied math at the Qiyuan should be Chen Ying, right?" Li Qinqin was doubtful.

Wu Changhe said, "Why do you care who analyzed it?"

Li Qinqin said, "I just want to know. So who was it?"

Wu Changhe scowled and muttered, "That Zhang kid!"

"Little Zhang wrote it?" Li Qinqin laughed. "I knew it. How could the people at the Qiyuan possibly come up with something this impressive. With one glance, I knew that this report was written by some career academic. What do you think now? I told you Little Zhang wasn't bad, right? And you're still displeased with him. Look at how concerned he is with your problem. He immediately got to work and researched the problem when he knew that you all met with trouble. He's even this thorough when the task was supposed to have been done by others!"

Wu Changhe stared at her and said, "Has that kid cast a spell on you or something? Why do you keep speaking up for him!"

Li Qinqin laughed and said, "Hur hur, I wonder that too. I like him no matter which side of him I see."

• • •

The Japanese were watching the developments very closely.

"It's finally been figured out!"

"So that's how it is!"

"Shinji 9-dan's chances of victory has increased by another percentage point!"

"Thanks to the Chinese!"

...

The Korean Go community was the same.

"This report has proven very valuable!"

"So that's what it really is!"

"The Chinese mathematicians are really awesome!"

• • •

Over in America.

The company that developed Peter was thrown into disarray at the same time!

The management flew into a rage and gathered up the program's core developers!

"Who was it? Who leaked the information?"

"Goddammit!"

"How did the Chinese get their hands on the information!"

"It's alright. Even if they know how Peter works, they can't win all the same!"

"But what I want to know is, how the hell did they find out? How?"

Everyone looked at one another in silence.

But what the American company would never be able to figure out was that other than them, there was actually someone else who had seen a similar AI program that could play Go. And that someone was Zhang Ye—a person who couldn't truly be considered someone from this world.

• •

A day later.

Noon.

Zhang Ye had a room booked in a restaurant for a lunch date

with some people.

Dong Shanshan, Yao Jiancai, Chen Guang, Fan Wenli, Xiaodong, Amy, Li Xiaoxian, Zhang Xia, and most of the other guests and contestants from King of Masked Singers had been invited. There were also a few others that Zhang Ye had informed but were unable to make it as they were busy with work.

"Come. I said that it would be my treat today!" Zhang Ye said as he arranged for the guests to get seated.

Dong Shanshan sat down and crossed her legs. "Don't worry. No one is going to fight you over the bill today."

Yao Jiancai laughed heartily. "Yeah, we'll be helping ourselves."

Chen Guang flipped open the menu and remarked, "Let's see, what's the most expensive item in here."

"There's no need to scrimp for Director Zhang," Fan Wenli chorused after her husband.

Zhang Ye didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "Can we hold back a little? I'm just a salaried employee, and it's not easy to earn money, so please don't overdo it. Just order enough to eat, please."

Dong Shanshan glanced at him. "You're a domestic superstar. Why are you still so stingy?"

Xiaodong giggled and said, "Yeah, amongst all of us here, you're the one who's the most popular. Since everyone took time out of their schedules to celebrate for you, you better not be thinking of trying to save money today!"

Li Xiaoxian was relatively quiet. She did not speak much and just laughed.

Everyone was talking and laughing, and the atmosphere was great.

Suddenly, Dong Shanshan called a waiter over to get him to turn on the television. Amy asked, "What's going on?"

Dong Shanshan said, "Don't you all know? Today is the first time that an AI challenged a human. The battle's about to begin."

Yao Jiancai slapped the table. "That's right, I nearly forgot!"

Zhang Xia smiled widely and said, "I'm rather looking forward to it as well."

Xiaodong said, "Haha, I dare not speak about other areas. But when it comes to intelligence, a machine would never win against a human. We don't even need to watch!"

Li Xiaoxian said, "That's not necessarily true."

Chen Guang agreed. "Yeah, the Americans came bearing down so menacingly this time. If they weren't confident about it, they wouldn't have dared to issue a challenge to all humanity."

The television was turned on.

Central TV Sports Channel.

The image was one of the live broadcast of the match from the competition venue in Tokyo. The competition had not started yet, but Shinji 9-dan had already made his appearance. The international referee was speaking to him, and there were no spectators around them. This was to ensure absolute silence during the game, so there would only be the referee 1 and players present.

From the Central TV commentary box, Yu Yingyi's voice rang out. "We can see that the match will begin soon."

Zhang Ye said, "Yingyi went too?"

Dong Shanshan said, "Yeah, she's the host."

Yao Jiancai asked, "Who's she?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "She's mine and Shanshan's uni classmate. We were in the same class, and she's currently a host with Central TV Sports Channel. I never expected that Yingyi could play Go as well."

Yu Yingyi was actually just the host. Her main duty today had nothing to do with commentary.

The person in charge of that was Chen Ying 7-dan, who was sitting beside her. She was a pretty female Go player.

10 minutes later.

The match began!

As the best Japanese Go player, Shinji 9-dan was very composed today. He picked the black stones and started the game calmly. As his opponent was an AI, it could only display its moves onscreen. Since traditional Go players were still used to playing physically at a proper Go board, Peter required a representative to be the middleman to input Shinji 9-dan's moves after he made them. Then, when Peter responded with its move onscreen, the middleman would place a stone on the physical Go board at the corresponding position—the middleman was a Caucasian person who was a representative from Peter's development company.

Dong Shanshan and the others ate as they watched the game.

Some of them could understand what was happening, while those who didn't could only rely on the commentary.

Zhang Ye was actually quite concerned about this match too, even if he felt that this matter had nothing to do with him.

Five stones.

Ten stones.

Twenty stones.

As the game progressed faster and faster, Zhang Ye's frown became more and more obvious.

Li Xiaoxian put her chopsticks down. She exclaimed, "How amazing!"

Amy blinked and asked, "Who's amazing?"

Xiaodong knew that Li Xiaoxian knew how to play Go. "Who has the advantage?"

"PETER!" Li Xiaoxian said.

On TV.

Yu Yingyi said, "Teacher Chen Ying, what do you make of this move?"

Chen Ying 7-dan said in shock, "Shinji 9-dan has miscalculated his move. It seems like this game will end early!"

Yu Yingyi said in surprise, "It's going to end this soon?"

Sure enough, a short while later, Shinji 9-dan finally resigned from the game after spending a long time thinking and becoming frustrated and annoyed.

The referee immediately came over to confirm his decision.

Yu Yingyi exclaimed, "My goodness! We see that Shinji 9-dan has resigned from the game!"

Chen Ying 7-dan said, "If Peter can even beat Shinji 9-dan, then this would be really too frightful!"

Yu Yingyi said, "We'll be showing the second game between Peter and Shinji 9-dan tomorrow at the same time. Let's hope Shinji 9-dan catches up in the next game!"

The competition was based on a best of three!

If he were to lose again tomorrow, Shinji 9-dan would officially lose!

Later, during the post-match conference, Shinji 9-dan answered some of the reporters' questions looking rather dejected. He was clearly distracted!

When it was time for the American representative to say a few words, he was clearly very excited and spoke loftily. Xiaodong could no longer watch. "This American is too arrogant!"

Yao Jiancai said, "Even Shinji 9-dan could not win?"

Chen Guang said, "Could there really be no one who can defeat them?"

"There's still another game tomorrow. Let's not speak too early," Li Xiaoxian said.

Zhang Xia said, "If it still doesn't work out, we still have Xiang Rong 9-dan around."

...

At this moment, all the attention throughout Asia was focused on this battle of the century in Tokyo!

"Did we lose?"

"Shinji 9-dan lost?"

"How could that be!"

"This...we couldn't even win?"

"Could it be that Shinji 9-dan was unable to play to his potential?"

"That shouldn't be the case!"

"Damn, we'll have to wait for tomorrow!"

"Right, we'll definitely win tomorrow!"

"If not, there's still Park Yuhee 9-dan, and also Xiang Rong 9-dan!"

"That's right, Peter cannot possibly win every time!"

"Humans can't possibly lose to an AI!"

"Intelligence is the last bit of dignity that we humans have!"

"Humanity will prevail!"

"Humanity will prevail!"

This game of Go had ignited the fears of many people. On this day, countless people started panicking. They suddenly felt a chill in the depths of their hearts and were feeling a little afraid. If humans were to lose to AI in a test of intelligence, then...that was something that was totally unimaginable to them!

## Chapter 1116: Humanity vs. Artificial Intelligence (Middle)

In China. On the Internet.

Things were blowing up.

On this day, countless people were posting proclamations of "Humanity Will Prevail!" across the Internet. Everywhere, in workplaces, hotels and bars, from the streets to the alleys, discussions were being had about this war between humans and machines. If it was chaotic before, now nearly everyone knew about it! The reason for this was because a lot of people did not believe it at first. They felt that it was just a gimmick arranged by the Americans, spending money to arrange for a showcase match between Peter and Chen Chi 9-dan as a fancy way of hyping up the promotion for their artificial intelligence program. But now, even Shinji 9-dan had lost in unexpected fashion!

He couldn't lose again!

If he lost the next game, then everyone would lose!

Shinji 9-dan could not afford to lose any more!

Humanity could not afford to lose either!

...

With the public's attention.

The second game showdown commenced!

Many countries across Asia were broadcasting the game live!

In Tokyo, countless foreign and domestic reporters had gathered outside the competition venue. They were all waiting for the final moment!

A diagonal move!

A knight's move!

A horizontal stretch!

A push through 1!

The game lasted for a full five hours!

Back at home.

Zhang Ye's father had been watching the game the entire afternoon.

His mother was forced to watch alongside her husband without any knowledge.

"Aiyo, this move isn't good!

"Push through!

"Don't retreat 2!

"Make a knight's move over there!"

His father was watching excitedly while commenting on the game like a layman would to a professional. He was actually not good at all. He was just watching for the fun of it.

However, the only person who really knew about Go at home did not even bother watching the game.

Zhang Ye was listening to music in his room. After watching the match between Shinji 9-dan and Peter yesterday, he did not pay any further attention to the match. This was because he felt that Shinji 9-dan's level was just average. Even the seemingly on steroids "WuChanghe" from the other day was better than him. And what exactly was Wu Changhe's level? He was a professional player retired for over 20 years who probably had not even retained half his skill from back then. Since Shinji 9-dan was not any better than him, it would have been a wonder if he could actually win against the AI. This program was definitely not as simple as everyone thought it to be. It would be very difficult for any Go player to win against it. Or at least to Zhang Ye, a computer program that had compiled all the data of the Go players and the

millions and millions of games played would already make it unfair for any human players to play against.

Indeed, a cry from his father rang out from the living room!

"He lost!"

Shinji 9-dan had lost!

He suffered a terrible defeat, 2-0!

On TV, Commentator Chen Ying looked horrified!

Host Yu Yingyi said in pity, "It was only a difference of five points! Only five points!"

Chen Ying gave Yu Yingyi a look but did not say anything else.

Only five points?

Isn't a difference of five points already a lot?

And throughout the game, PETER had been constricting Shinji 9-dan's play! If it weren't for Shinji 9-dan taking a defensive strategy right from the start, would he have lost by just a five point difference? In this game, the machine had taken the advantage almost from the start. Up until the end, Shinji 9-dan did not even get a chance to turn things around!

The Japanese netizens blew up!

"No!"

"That's impossible!"

"He lost?"

"How could this be?"

The netizens in China were also gripped by the developments!

"Humanity has lost?"

"That was a really bad loss!"

"What's with Shinji 9-dan! Did he even get serious?"

"That goddamned AI!"

"This is as good as giving the Go world a slap to its face!"

The reason why Go was so highly praised by so many people was that it was the most complex and most challenging board game around that only humans could play. But now, a machine had suddenly appeared from nowhere and issued a challenge to all of humanity. Then, it won twice in a row against Chen Chi 9-dan and Shinji 9-dan, which subverted the mindsets of a lot of people. It also crumbled the firm beliefs of many professional Go players and amateurs. The appearance of Peter had struck a heavy blow to the international Go world!

There was news all around!

"Shinji 9-dan swept!"

"Will machines rule over humans in the near future?"

"Will intelligence no longer be just a privilege of humans?"

Some experts also claimed that this development would be a good thing. The reason they gave was that the appearance of Peter would raise the entire standard of play in the world of Go. This was because if they popularized the game through the program, every Go enthusiast would be able to play against a world-class Go "player" anytime they wanted. Xiang Rong 9-dan could not possibly be there to play with the netizens every day. Shinji 9-dan could not possibly be there to play with every Go enthusiast either. But Peter could. An AI could. This would undoubtedly train many professional Go players and raise the overall standard of play of the game.

However, the opinions of these experts were very quickly refuted by Wu Changhe, Dan Donghe, Chen Ying, and many other professional Go players!

Raise the standard of play in the world of Go?

Bullshit! This was obviously a disaster for the Go world!

If you were matched against a human player like yourself in a game, even if you lost, you would probably not mind it. You would think that you still stood a chance of winning in the next game. Even if you lost countless games, you could accept that it might be because your opponent had performed too well. However, that was a kind of performance that you could imagine and know to be within the limits of a human being. You would be able to admit that you were not better than this person, but that would not be enough to affect your love for this game. That was where the charm of games laid.

On the contrary, if your opponent was just a cold and emotionless computer playing the same game, you might lose once, twice, a thousand times, or even ten thousand times. But when you finally realize that even after you have put in every effort that you could in your entire lifetime and still not beat this opponent, that all humans would not have a chance of winning against it, then at that time, who would still want to play such a game?

If they were to really allow the machines to dominate the Go world's highest powers, it would definitely lead to a terrible ending. In the future, there would be fewer and fewer people playing this game called Go, leading to its inevitable extinction!

That was too frightening an outcome!

It was also the reason why so many of the Go world's professional players were stepping forward!

Because there was no longer a path of retreat, they had to step into battle!

• •

On the same night.

The Koreans came forward!

The best player of the Korean Go world, Park Yuhee 9-dan, called

for a press conference. He announced that he had accepted Peter's challenge and would battle against it in Seoul the day after tomorrow!

Park Yuhee!

Ranked second in the world of Go!

Park Yuhee's appearance once again lifted the hopes of many people!

"Go for it!"

"You must definitely win!"

"Humanity will prevail!"

"Park Yuhee will prevail!"

"Show that machine what we can do!"

"We can't lose anymore!"

"If you win, you'll become the hero of the Go world!"

"Please save the Go world!"

The Koreans were extremely confident and were all showing their support for Park Yuhee!

Park Yuhee had even pushed away two upcoming professional tournaments to focus on his preparations for the match. It could be seen just how much importance he placed on the artificial intelligence program!

The Korean media and television stations' promotions for the match that would be held two days later went into full swing. The media labeled this match as "The Battle for the Salvation of Humanity"!

But as it goes, the greater the expectations, the greater the disappointment!

On the day of the first game, no one expected that it would turn out this way.

With the full attention of all of Asia, Park Yuhee committed a mistake during the middlegame in the first round of the match. As long as one was human, there would always be mistakes. Even Xiang Rong 9-dan was not an exception to that. However, Peter did not have that problem. The machine made no mistakes. Not long after moving into the middlegame, Park Yuhee was forced to resign!

The next day.

The second game.

Park Yuhee started the game in full pursuit. He dominated with a three-point advantage right from the beginning. But when they got to the middlegame, a beautiful "push through" move by Peter disrupted the opening setup of Park Yuhee's stones. Park Yuhee was left struggling and unable to turn things around from there. In the end, after adding the compensation, he actually lost by ten points!

Two to zero!

Peter was victorious again!

It was awful!

It was just too awful!

At the post-match press conference.

The American representative raised the microphone and said happily, "Peter is the most perfect and advanced version of an artificial intelligence program that we have developed. We're confident that it can defeat every human Go player around!"

When it was Park Yuhee's turn to speak, he held the microphone for a very long time while hesitating. Finally, he just said, "I'm sorry that I disappointed everyone." He then left the stage dejectedly and offered no other comments!

Everyone fell silent!

Immediately, Asia turned its attention to China.

# Chapter 1117: Humanity vs. Artificial Intelligence (End)

In China.

In the morning, Zhang Ye went outside to exercise.

In the end, all he could hear on the streets and alleys were sounds of discussion.

"The whole Go world is going to get destroyed!"

"This will really look bad on them!"

"Do you think that it will only be the Go world that gets affected? Peter is challenging the intelligence of all of humanity!"

"Yeah, it wouldn't look good on any of us!"

"Will Xiang Rong 9-dan accept the challenge?"

"I don't know. There's been no news from China Qiyuan at all."

"Xiang Rong might not necessarily win either. This AI is too strong!"

"The key issue was that it won so easily. Both the world number two and three suffered terrible losses. If they had been only marginal losses, there would still be some hope!"

The situation was starting to get worse!

The discussions were also becoming more and more pessimistic!

All this was because of humanity suffering a terrible defeat. Admittedly, Xiang Rong 9-dan had still not stepped forward yet. But even though he was at a higher level than Shinji 9-dan and Park Yuhee 9-dan, it wasn't that great of a difference. In the regular international tournaments, even he would not be able to win ten out of ten games when he came up against either of those two, and he would still suffer one or two losses occasionally. The outcome of a Go match was too uncertain, and no one could be

guaranteed to always win. If the situation was analyzed from this angle, Xiang Rong 9-dan would probably not be Peter's equal either! Of course, this was just an analysis.

On the way back, Zhang Ye bought two copies of the newspapers.

Flipping one of them open, the headlines were all about the "war between humans and machines." Seeing how the representatives of each country were getting defeated one by one, Zhang Ye did not have anything to say and could only sigh. Then he took a slow jog home to eat breakfast.

As expected, Peter and AlphaGo were the same thing!

In fact, this AI might be even stronger than AlphaGo!

The Go world was in danger!

• • •

Online.

The call for battle was getting louder and louder!

"Fuck! Fuck it!"

"The Americans are too arrogant!"

"How can you compare the intelligence of humans to a machine?"

"If you think it's so good, why don't you compete with humans on complex reasoning? Compete in art? Compete in creative works? Do you people dare to do that? Using Go to compete with humanity on the intelligence of humans! They were basically targeting us right from the start!"

"The Americans are too abhorrent!"

"Let's win against them! Fuck!"

"Xiang Rong 9-dan, fight it out with them!"

For the past two days, the Americans had constantly been making their stance known. They were very arrogant and were aggressively provoking the Go world. They posted a statement or a challenge almost every few hours. Their eyes were already turning to China. This was because everyone knew that when it came to Go, if China claimed that they were second, no one would dare to proclaim themselves first. In the end, the Americans even called out Xiang Rong 9-dan!

A lot of people to become angry over this!

"Fuck!"

"They're being so arrogant!"

"You people gathered all the Go players' data and analyzed it, then copied all of the matches and game record data into the machine as well. That in itself is already unfair! That in itself is the crystallization of humanity's intelligence. It is the collective acquired wisdom of the Go players throughout history. By using that to fight against us, how can you people still be so arrogant?"

"I'm so pissed off!"

"I don't believe that no one can win against it!"

"Right, I don't fucking believe that either!"

. . .

At China Qiyuan.

In the Go association.

The courtyard area was overwhelmed with reporters. Many of them had been here since two days ago. Some of them even decided to set up tents and spent entire days there. In the surrounding area, many foreign reporters were also present!

This place had become the center of attention through Asia!

Everyone was watching and waiting for them!

Outside, there were also quite a few Go enthusiasts and common folk holding up signs and protesting!

"Vanquish Peter!"

"Vanquish Peter!"

"Vanquish Peter!"

Their shouts were deafening!

It could even be heard clearly from inside the Qiyuan.

In here, almost all of the professional Go players were present. Some of them had not been home for two days. They stayed up, bags under their bloodshot eyes, to research the games in the Qiyuan, analyzing every move Peter made. This was a catastrophe for the Go world, so who could possibly rest?

Li Yi 9-dan said with a dark look, "It's too difficult!"

Another 9th dan player shook his head. "Peter's data is too complete. Every move it makes takes into account all kinds of considerations. There isn't much hope if we want to win against it!"

Xiang Rong said calmly, "Go and inform the media outlets."

"Old Xiang!" Li Yi 9-dan exclaimed.

Dan Donghe added anxiously, "You must think this over carefully!"

Xiang Rong said, "I've already considered it very carefully."

Chen Ying came up to him. "Brother Xiang, if you accept the challenge and lose, the entire Go world will no longer have a place to stand!"

"Yeah!" Xu Han also said in disagreement, "You're the last line of defense and the last card that our Go world has. If you lose, what will we do?"

"Right, just ignore them!"

"Let the Americans continue being arrogant. We can just pretend to have not seen or heard them!"

"You cannot accept the challenge!"

"Master Xiang!"

"Master Xiang!"

Wu Changhe looked at him. "What do you think your chances are?"

Xiang Rong thought about it and said truthfully, "At most 20%."

20%?

This was as good as a certain loss!

If even Master Xiang himself could say this, then what was the point of accepting the challenge!

Wu Changhe said, "Have you thought over this carefully?"

Xiang Rong acknowledged, "Yes. No matter how it goes, I still have to give it a try. We're at this juncture, so if I retreat from here, that would be even more embarrassing than losing. I cannot retreat!"

Wu Changhe grit his teeth and said firmly, "OK, gather the reporters!"

President Dan Donghe said angrily, "Brother Wu, I am the President of the Qiyuan!"

But Wu Changhe said, "Stand aside! They've come knocking on our doors to seek a fight and you're still thinking of hiding? Where can you hide? Even if we fucking lose, our China Qiyuan will still lose with pride!" Wu Changhe's temperament had always been this way. He was always the aggressive type!

Immediately, some people responded!

"Right!"

"Teacher Changhe is right!"

"We cannot be frightened by them!"

"I don't believe that the machine is really going to be so difficult to overcome!"

```
"Master Xiang will prevail!"
 Half an hour later.
 China Qiyuan made its announcement!
 —Xiang Rong 9-dan has accepted the challenge!
 The venue: China Qiyuan.
 Time: Tomorrow morning.
 Weibo instantly exploded!
 "Xiang Rong has stepped forward!"
 "Oh God, he's really come forward!"
 "This is going to be big!"
 "Whoever wins this match will surely send a shockwave across
Asia!"
 "Master Xiang, you can do it!"
 "You're the trump card of the Go world!"
 "Good showing, Master Xiang! I was afraid that you wouldn't step
up to the challenge!"
 "Fight against it!"
 "Fight! Fight! Fight!"
 Unexpectedly, many of the Go enthusiasts from Japan and Korea
also sent their full support to him!
 From Japan.
 "Let's go Chinese players!"
 "Thrash that Peter!"
 "You can do it!"
```

From Korea.

"Don't lose!"

"Xiang Rong, avenge us!"

"Show that machine the conviction of us humans!"

A lot of the well-known international professional Go players also voiced their support for Xiang Rong 9-dan. There was an unprecedented show of unity throughout the Go world!

Almost everyone in Asia was on Xiang Rong's side!

...

The next day.

This news had spread everywhere!

The newspapers sold like crazy!

The entrance of China Qiyuan was filled with people from very early in the morning.

"Xiang Rong will prevail!"

"Humanity will prevail!"

There were a lot of people shouting this catchphrase to show their support!

Central TV Sports Channel, Beijing Television, and many other foreign television stations also received the rights to broadcast the event live. They gradually entered the building and waited for the game to begin after setting up their equipment.

No, perhaps this shouldn't be called a game!

This was a war!

A war between humanity and artificial intelligence!

Before the game began, only Central TV managed to secure the rights to a pre-game interview. The person interviewing Xiang Rong was Yu Yingyi.

The live broadcast began.

All cameras focused on Xiang Rong.

Yu Yingyi gripped her microphone and said, "Teacher Xiang Rong, as everyone should already know, you're the number one player in the international Go community. Faced with the AI's challenge, everyone would like to know what your chances of winning are."

Xiang Rong looked at her and said, "The odds are not great."

With that said, everyone burst into an uproar.

Yu Yingyi was also stunned. "If you lose as well, the Go world will have lost its last line of defense. So why did you agree to the challenge?"

Xiang Rong said calmly, "First, I have no reason not to accept. Second, I would also like to play against the computer program. Third, what you said just now was wrong. I could never be the last line of defense for the Go world. Even if I lose, I believe that someone else will step forward to battle against the machine!"

There was still someone else?

There was still someone other than you?

Yu Yingyi said astounded, "Is there really someone who can stand shoulder-to-shoulder with you in the Go world?"

Xiang Rong smiled. No one knew if his words were directed at Yu Yingyi or to the camera, or perhaps even to the artificial intelligence program. "Never, ever look down on humans!"

The interview ended.

Xiang Rong strode up into the room holding the game and sat down.

A lot of people could not understand what he had just said!

• • •

Back at home.

All of Zhang Ye's family was watching the live broadcast.

His father said in surprise, "What does Xiang Rong 9-dan mean by that?"

His mother said, "Isn't he the best player in the world of Go? There's still someone else other than him who can play against the machine?"

"Who could it be?" Zhang Ye wondered.

His father said, "Who knows?"

Zhang Ye looked at the TV showing Xiang Rong 9-dan. He suddenly had a feeling that he would not win. He probably knew this himself as well, but still chose to sit down there.

Zhang Ye suddenly gained a bit more respect for this man!

This type of person who would still enter into a battle knowing that he would not be able to win truly deserved respect!

But he wondered who that person he was referring to could be.

If he really lost this match, would there really still be someone else who could take on this AI?

The game began.

However, Zhang Ye quietly walked away. He did not want to watch this, nor could he bear to watch it.

His father asked, "Where are you off to?"

"I'm going for a stroll." Zhang Ye went out. He wasn't a member of the Go world, but he did not wish to witness for himself this darkest day that was going to descend upon the Go world. He did not wish to see all the defeated expressions of everyone. He knew that in this world, there should not be anyone who could win against that machine called Peter.

He strolled about.

He turned in and out of the alleyways.

And had a meal outside.

The television was on, and many of those who were eating were also watching the live broadcast at the same time. Amazingly, no one recognized Zhang Ye.

"Dammit!"

"He still lost!"

"How could that be!"

"Even Master Xiang has lost? Then who can win?"

"Ah, Xiang Rong is requesting for the second game to begin immediately!"

"But why? Why doesn't he want to take a break first?"

"Yeah, why isn't he spreading it out over the day?"

"Continue?"

Zhang Ye looked up at the television.

The first game of the match ended after only three hours. He did not watch how it progressed and only saw the final layout of the board. Xiang Rong had lost by a mere two points!

The second game began immediately!

Everyone was feeling regretful about the result.

"He nearly won!"

"Yeah, it's only two points!"

"What a shame!"

"He's indeed the best player of the international Go world. He's so strong!"

"What's the use of that! He still lost!"

"Let's watch the second game. There's definitely still some hope!"

However, after another hard-fought five hours, Xiang Rong lost

the second game. He lost by a mere one point this time. Peter had managed to turn things around at the critical juncture right in the endgame!

Xiang Rong was defeated!

Humanity was defeated!

## Chapter 1118: Approaching YE for help?

At Zhang Ye's parents' house.

Zhang Ye opened the door with his keys when he came back. "Dad, Mom, what's the matter?"

His mother pouted. "Your dad is upset."

"About Xiang Rong 9-dan's loss?" Zhang Ye asked.

"Yeah." His mother said.

He saw his dad looking annoyed as he had a sip of tea and said, "Just what in the world is that stupid machine? Why hasn't anyone been able to teach it a lesson yet?"

His mother said, "It was such a pity. He only lost by a little bit!"

His father said angrily, "If they played again, Xiang Rong 9-dan would definitely be able to win!"

Able to win?

That might not be the case.

Zhang Ye could see very clearly that this AI called Peter was very rigorous in its decision making. Anyone would commit a mistake as long as they were human, but Peter was not human and almost wouldn't make any mistakes. For every move it made, it could meticulously predict the most beneficial position to take through big data analytics and the use of its two special "brains." Just this alone was already an advantage that was too great and beyond comparison for humans. Furthermore, it even had a massive set of game data to support it. The Americans had probably reconfigured Peter's settings before the match against Xiang Rong 9-dan to cope with his playing style and come up with the best strategy to ensure the highest chance of victory. So, even if Xiang Rong 9-dan were to play another game against Peter, he still might not be able to win against it. Although on the surface, the difference did not seem

that bad.

The television was still on.

A post-match press conference was being held.

Xiang Rong was seated up on stage. His first words were, "I'm sorry."

Xiang Rong had lost, and a lot of the reporters looked discouraged.

"Teacher Xiang, could it be that you were unable to play to your potential today?"

"Why didn't you rest for a day before continuing with the second game?"

"Could it be that there is really no one who can win against the AI?"

"Master Xiang, what did you really mean when you said those words in the pre-match interview?"

All the reporters immediately raised their equipment in anticipation.

Afterwards, it was time for the representative of the Americans to be interviewed.

This man was called Smith. The moment he went up, he spoke arrogantly in Mandarin, "Today is a memorable day because an artificial intelligence has triumphed over the wisdom of humanity!"

Quite a few reporters in the audience booed him.

"Get over it!"

"Aren't you pontificating a little too early!"

"There are still plenty of smart people around!"

"You dare call that Peter thing intelligent?"

Nobody acknowledged this, and neither did they want to acknowledge it!

Smith waved them off in response and announced, "Our claims remain the same as before. Peter will accept a challenge from anyone. In the field of Go, no one will be a match for Peter! This latest AI that our company has developed is way beyond what any human player in existence can achieve. We're not afraid of any challengers. The current world number one who is also the publicly acknowledged best Go player has suffered a defeat at the hands of Peter. It is now our turn to be challenged. If there is anyone who thinks that they can defeat Peter, let them issue us a challenge. We will not turn anyone down!"

After saying that, Smith left the stage.

Countless people raised objections in condemning voices on Weibo!

"What is he acting all high and mighty for!"

"Damn, this is infuriating!"

"This American has a death wish!"

"There are so many top Go players in China! Why should we be afraid of him?"

"Let's get him! Fuck him!"

"What about Li Yi 9-dan?"

"What about Liu Hong 9-dan?"

"Isn't he totally holding us in contempt!"

"Right, all of them should go for it and have a simul match 1 against it!"

"The opponent is a machine and does not have any limitations of stamina or mental fatigue. So it will always be in the best form to play. What's the use of having a simul match against it? Even Xiang Rong 9-dan has lost!"

"Is there really no one else left?"

"There are so many people with great intelligence in Asia. Don't tell me there's no one who can win against it?"

In Japan.

"Even Xiang Rong 9-dan couldn't beat the AI?"

"Humanity has lost!"

"Go is done for!"

"Yeah, Go is done for!"

In Korea.

"There must still be someone else!"

"Right, didn't Xiang Rong say it himself? That he's not the last line of defense!"

"Who else can step forward?"

"We can only look to the Chinese now!"

"But I don't think there's anyone else left in the Chinese Go world that stands a chance of winning?"

Citizens from all over Asia burst into an uproar!

This was especially true for the Go enthusiasts and professional players in Asia, as they were all unable to accept this result and the prospects of the Go world heading towards destruction from here on out. If a computer became the strongest player in the Go world, it would really be the end of Go. No one could accept such a setback as it felt like one part of humanity's culture was getting slaughtered. Today, it was Go. But tomorrow, it might be Xiangqi. Then the day after, it could be mathematics. Someday, they might just set their sights on the arts. When all the industries had been dominated by artificial intelligence, how would humans be able to survive?

There was no retreating any further!

Someone had to step forward!

Many celebrities gradually appeared and gave a show of support as well!

The famous singer, Chen Guang: "Come on, people, don't let the machines get so arrogant!"

The A-list movie star, Huo Dongfang: "I don't believe there's no one left!"

A Heavenly King said: "Xiang Rong 9-dan is right! Don't look down on humans!"

Famous girl group leader, Xiaodong: "Are there any Go experts left?"

The famous A-list celebrity, Ning Lan: "We can't let the dignity of humanity get tarnished in this generation of ours! I refuse to believe that there's no one left who can do it!"

Although Xiang Rong 9-dan lost, it stirred the fighting spirit in a lot of people!

Humanity had not lost yet!

Humanity must not lose either!

. . .

On the same night.

The public was in chaos!

There were news reports everywhere!

"Has humanity lost?"

"An era of AI dominance upon us?"

"The Go world's No. 1 loses!"

"Where is humanity's last line of defense?"

"Japanese citizens hold a demonstration to protest AI!"

"Three Korean pro Go players announce retirement!"

"The impending decline of Go!"

"Challenging the dignity of humanity!"

"Who shall be the 'savior'?"

At China Qiyuan, newspapers were scattered all over the table.

When Dan Donghe saw this, he screamed, "Clear away all the newspapers!"

The interview had ended, and the reporters had also left, leaving China Qiyuan's people standing there looking beaten and terrible. Everyone was in a very bad mood and did not know what to say.

Chen Ying 7-dan asked anxiously, "What can we do now?"

"We'll issue a challenge to it!" Hu Liang said.

Xu Han 8-dan said, "But who's going to challenge it? Who can we send?"

"Let's request a simul match!"

"Right, we'll all take turns to play!"

"No, we've already lost too many matches! We can't lose again this time!"

"We can't have a simul match! That would make us humans look even more powerless!"

"We have to snatch victory in one fell swoop! We must win the next time we play!"

"How can we win?"

"The opponent could even defeat Master Xiang!"

It was a messy spectacle as everyone was getting confused and flustered by the events!

Wu Changhe gave Li Yi 9-dan a glance and said, "Little Li!"

Everyone looked at him immediately.

Next to Xiang Rong, Li Yi 9-dan was the strongest player in the

Qiyuan.

However, Li Yi 9-dan just gave him a look and said immediately, "I can't do it. Even Old Xiang lost to it. I definitely couldn't win against it!"

President Dan Donghe turned his attention to yet another active 9-dan player. "Liu Hong!"

Liu Hong 9-dan also said immediately, "I also can't win against it!"

Dan Donghe said, "Even if you have a 10% chance of winning, you still have to step up to the challenge!"

Liu Hong gave a wry smile. "I don't even feel like I have 10% chance of winning!"

They were all professional Go players and had witnessed Peter's strength for themselves. As such, they had an idea of its capabilities and knew that it was impossible for them to win against it. If there was anyone capable of winning against Peter, it would have been Xiang Rong 9-dan. But since Master Xiang had lost...

"You're too afraid to even step up to the challenge?" Wu Changhe was furious.

Dan Donghe said loudly, "Whoever is confident of restricting Peter's playstyle, step forward now!"

No one came forward!

Nobody moved!

"There's no way to restrict it!"

"It's a computer and its playstyle is not fixed!"

"Right, it does not even have its own style!"

"Even Master Xiang could not win. There is no one in the entire Go world who can equal Peter!" Dan Donghe was also panicking now. He was not the kind of person to take an offensive stance and initially did not want Xiang Rong to accept the challenge. That was because he knew that their chances were really slim. If Xiang Rong had not played against Peter, even if it would be a loss of face, they would at least still be able to preserve the dignity of humanity. But now that even Xiang Rong had lost, they did not have any other choice and could only step up to the challenge. They had to win!

Was there no one else left?

Was there really no one else left?

Suddenly, Chen Ying thought of something. She froze for a moment before shouting, "We still have a champion! There is someone! There is at least one more person who has the chance of defeating Peter!"

Everyone looked at her!

"Who?"

"Who is it?"

"Little Chen, tell us quickly!"

Chen Ying said something shocking. "Did you guys forget about him? That guy called YE!"

Suddenly, everyone realized who it was and thought of him!

YE!

Yes!

That YE!

Li Yi 9-dan slapped his thigh and said, "Right, he's an amazing player. When I played against him, I had to resign in the middlegame!"

Xu Han also said excitedly, "That's right, that's right. Even Master Xiang could only manage a draw with him!"

Chen Ying said, "If there is anyone other than Master Xiang who can go against that Peter, then it can only be that YE!"

Everyone nodded in full agreement as they had witnessed YE's skill!

Dan Donghe banged the table and said, "It's him then! How could I forget him! How could I have forgotten about him!"

Liu Hong 9-dan said, "But we don't even know who he is!" He then turned to look at Wu Changhe.

Instantly, everyone at the Qiyuan stared at Wu Changhe. In here, only he knew who YE was. From the words that YE had said to him, everyone could see that the two of them had a conflict. They couldn't be blamed if they thought that there was a huge grudge between them!

## Chapter 1119: The Go world's last line of defense!

At China Qiyuan.

Everyone's hopes were kindled!

YE!

This was the last straw that they could clutch at!

Wu Changhe grunted, "Why are you all looking at me?"

Chen Ying asked anxiously, "Teacher, who is YE, really?"

A 6-dan player said, "Teacher Changhe, he's the only one who can step up to the plate!"

Wu Changhe scowled and said, "But he's just an amateur!"

"A person who can play to a draw against Little Xiang, so what if he's an amateur?" Dan Donghe said, "Brother Wu, hurry up and tell us. Don't hide it from us anymore! There's no one else besides him!"

Li Yi 9-dan asked, "Who is he?"

Wu Changhe sighed and shook his head. "Believe me, you all definitely won't want to know who he is."

Dan Donghe said, "But what choice do we have now?"

Wu Changhe was silent.

Dan Donghe said, "Brother Wu!"

"Teacher!"

"Teacher Changhe!"

"Please tell us!"

"We can only send him!"

"Just because there's a grudge between the two of you, you

can't..."

"Right, if you can't convince him to join, we'll do it!"

"That's right. If the two of you have a conflict, there's no need for you to ask him. Let us do it instead!"

Wu Changhe did not like hearing that. He was always concerned with his honor, so he stared at them with wide eyes and said, "He has a grudge against me? He would have to dare to hold a grudge against me first! I can't convince him to join? Are you all kidding or something?! If I point east, that kid would never walk west. Do you believe that? Ah?"

Dan Donghe smacked his lips. "Is there any point in boasting about something like that?"

"Me? Boasting?" Wu Changhe said angrily, "That kid would be more than willing to get into my good books. Do you think I'm bullshitting you? That kid was the one who supplied us with the research information related to that P-thingy!"

Everyone was shocked!

"Eh?"

"It was him who gave us the information?"

"No wonder!"

"He's a mathematician?"

"No wonder he's so good at Go!"

When Dan Donghe heard that, he got even more excited. "So it's like that? That's great! That's really great! He knows that AI program so well and even has the skill to draw with Little Xiang. Based on all that, our chances of winning will be even greater if we can convince him to represent us. Brother Wu, please tell us quickly who this mathematics expert is?"

Chen Ying asked, "Is he from Peking University or Tsinghua?"

Wu Changhe was forced to reply, "Peking." "Peking University?" "Could it be Old Pan?" "It can't be him!" Then, Wu Changhe reluctantly uttered a name. When this name was spoken, everyone was dumbfounded! All of them knew who he was! There was no one who didn't know this person! "What?" "Holy fuck!" "It's him?" "How could it be him?" "Oh my God!" Curses and expletives flew through the air! Nobody, none of them, wanted to believe it! The man who had swept aside the entire China Qiyuan several days ago turned out to be him? At home. Zhang Ye's father was asking him to check for news updates on the Internet. His father asked, "Has anyone offered to challenge the AI yet?" "Not yet." "Why hasn't anyone stepped forward yet!"

Zhang Ye smiled wryly. "If even the top Go player could not win

against it, who else would stand a chance?"

"Xiang Rong 9-dan said that he was not the last line of defense!"

Zhang Ye threw his hands up. "In any case, there's no one offering to challenge it yet."

Regarding this war between humans and machines, Zhang Ye was pessimistic. He thought the entire time that no one would win against Peter as it was a completely different artificial intelligence system from its predecessors.

His mother said, "Since Xiang Rong 9-dan said that there was someone else, there must be someone else."

"That's right!" His father also deeply believed that there would be someone who could win against the AI.

When they still found nothing after checking for a long time, his father got even angrier. "Don't check anymore. I'm going to go out for a stroll. This is so infuriating!"

So his parents went out for a stroll together. Before they left, they were still rambling on about this matter.

The whole of Asia was now watching with their eyes wide as they waited for a hero to step forward and trample on the AI named Peter!

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye shook his head.

There was still someone?

Who else could there be!

It would be useless no matter who came forward!

He returned to his room to listen to music. He never felt that this issue had anything to do with him.

Awhile later, there was a sudden knocking at the door.

Zhang Ye was startled. Did his parents forget to bring their keys? Why were they back so soon when they had just stepped out a moment ago? He opened his bedroom door and walked out to the

living room. "Who is it?" Then he opened the front door.

When he saw what was outside the door, he got a scare!

There were over a dozen people squeezed outside in the corridor. The two who were standing right at the front of the group were Wu Changhe and Li Qinqin. As for the others, Zhang Ye did not know a single one of them. Getting a sense of the situation, Zhang Ye decided not to open up security gate. How could this fellow open it up for them!

Damn!

They've even found their way to my doorstep now?

Zhang Ye said warily, "Uncle, why did you come to my place? We played Go together, but I didn't cheat or play dirty against you. For heaven's sake, I won our games fair and square, OK! Are you trying to pick a fight? You even brought along this many people to back you up? You can't do this! Are you being a sore loser?"

Wu Changhe was made speechless.

As was Li Qinqin.

The same went for Dan Donghe and the others.

Without waiting for them to explain, Zhang Ye pointed at them and said, "Don't do anything foolish. Let me warn you, I know kung fu. Not even eighty or a hundred people can get near me. Hurry up and turn back. If you try to get close, I will really injure you! When that happens, it won't look good on anyone! Don't blame me for not warning you!"

Wu Changhe said angrily, "Open the door!"

Zhang Ye grunted, "I'm not opening it!"

Wu Changhe was starting to get anxious. "Open up!"

"Do you think I'm that stupid to open the door?" Zhang Ye rolled his eyes at him.

Dan Donghe came forward and said, "Professor Zhang, we came here today for a reason."

"Of course I know you all are here for a reason!" Zhang Ye sized him up as he smirked and said, "It's not that I want to criticize you, old comrade, but why are you so lacking in your common sense and awareness? I'd let it pass for those young people standing behind for coming here to start a gang fight. But you are already in your fifties or sixties, what are you joining in the fun for! With that physique of yours, who can you beat up? I'm afraid that your high blood pressure will shoot up if I just cough out loudly! Hurry up and turn back. Otherwise, I'm going to call the police!"

Dan Donghe nearly fainted!

Xu Han said anxiously, "We are not here to start a gang fight!"

Zhang Ye stared at him and said, "What do you want then? A one on one?"

One on one?

One on one your sister!

What kind of math professor are you! Why are you always only thinking about fighting!

Li Qinqin quickly said, "Little Zhang, don't get it wrong. They're here to discuss something with you. Why would you think that they are here to start a fight? Open the door first. With Auntie here, they wouldn't dare to lay a finger on you. I will hit whoever dares to pick on you!"

"I'm just afraid that I will injure them instead." Zhang Ye's tone started loosening up a little as he still gave face to Old Wu's mother. Then, he could only open up the door for them. "Auntie, please come in."

Li Qinqin entered first.

The others behind her also gradually entered with Zhang Ye's

unfriendly gaze on them.

After closing the doors.

Zhang Ye wondered and asked, "Auntie, why did so many of you come to my place for?"

Li Qinqin nudged at Wu Changhe and said, "You speak."

Wu Changhe was so angry that he turned his head away. "I'm not talking to him!" He was still upset over what happened earlier.

Zhang Ye was really getting confused.

What is going on here?

What is this turnout all about?

Then when he looked closer, he recognized another person amongst the crowd. He pointed at Chen Ying and said, "Eh, weren't you the person on television for the past few days..."

Chen Ying's eyes lit up. "You know me?"

Zhang Ye said, "Yeah, you were the one beside Yu Yingyi!"

The one beside...

Chen Ying was left speechless for a long time.

Dan Donghe said, "Let me say it. Professor Zhang, I'm the current President of the China Qiyuan and my name is Dan Donghe. Since you can play Go so well, you probably should know me."

Zhang Ye blinked and was in a daze as he looked at him.

Everyone could tell from this expression that Zhang Ye had clearly never heard of him before.

Dan Donghe felt a little embarrassed. He had forgotten that he was facing a complete layperson who even took Xiang Rong 9-dan for a newbie. "Alright, it's fine even if you don't know me. Anyway, I still represent the entire China Qiyuan." Then he pointed at the people around him and said, "These are all the current top professional players of the Go world in our country. I don't think

that you would know them, so I won't bother with introducing them to you one by one."

Zhang Ye was baffled. "What you are looking for me for?"

Dan Donghe asked, "Do you know about the challenge by the artificial intelligence to the Go world?"

"Of course." Zhang Ye said, "I've watched it on television."

Dan Donghe said, "Even Xiang Rong 9-dan has lost."

Zhang Ye nodded and said, "Yeah, and then?"

"We are here for that matter." Dan Donghe spoke seriously.

It suddenly dawned on Zhang Ye. "Are you all looking for me to help with the advertising? To propagate the message out to the masses over Weibo? To see if there are any Go experts who are willing to stand up to PETER? You all are expecting too much. Even the Go world's top player has lost, so who else can still win against that artificial intelligence? There's no use even if ask me for help with the promotion of that matter. Oh yes, didn't that Xiang Rong 9-dan already say it? That he was not humanity's last line of defense and how there was someone else other than him. Why don't you all get him to look for that person instead?"

"Advertise?" Wu Changhe was totally exasperated by that reply!

Chen Ying opened her mouth and said, "Yes, Master Xiang is not humanity's last line of defense."

Zhang Ye threw his hands up and said, "Yeah, then you guys should go and look for that person. Why did you all come to my place for? I'm not well-liked by people. Even if I advertise, there won't be many people responding to it. Of course, if you insist on me helping with the advertising, I could still give face to auntie and do it for you all. I can also not charge any advertising fees since we are all friends."

"Little Zhang, are you pretending not to understand or do you

really not understand?" Li Qinqin was at a loss whether to laugh or cry.

Zhang Ye blinked several times. "Understand what?" He really did not understand.

Li Qinqin looked at Zhang Ye and said, "That last line of defense that Little Xiang was referring to was you!"

## Chapter 1120: For humanity's sake, I am willing to accept the challenge!

In the house.

Zhang Ye was dumbfounded by what he heard!

The Go world's last line of defense?

What?

Me?

He was tickled at once. "Auntie, are you joking?"

Li Qinqin gave a wry smile and said, "I'm not."

Zhang Ye pointed to himself and said with a smile, "I'm just a layperson to Go and a hick amongst hicks. When did I ever become the last line of defense for the Go world? You are so funny."

Chen Ying directly said, "Professor Zhang, we need your help!"

Even though Hu Liang 7-dan got crushed by Zhang Ye a few days ago, he knew that he had lost convincingly. He spoke up, "Professor Zhang, you are the only person who can help us now!"

Xu Han said, "Please, help the Go world!"

"Professor Zhang!"

"Please come forward and play against the AI!"

"Only you are good enough to beat it!"

"Professor Zhang!"

"We're earnestly asking for your help!"

"The survival of the Go world lies in your hands now!"

Immediately, all the professional Go players in the house gave him pleading looks!

Zhang Ye quickly waved it off. "Whoa, can you guys not scare me

like that? What is all this about me saving the Go world? Aren't you thinking too highly of me?" He found it both a little funny and ridiculous. "Don't you all know the level of my play? Why would you come looking for me? My Go skills might be quite alright, but they're only average at best. Aiyo, you people are really funny." He immediately looked at Wu Changhe and pointed at him. "If you don't believe me, just ask Uncle. I nearly even lost to him even though he's just a has-been who retired from the game 20 years ago. I just barely managed to play him to a draw!"

What?

A has-been?

Who the hell is a has-been! You better get it straight!

Wu Changhe became annoyed on the spot. "You rascal..."

"Changhe, stick to the topic!" He got pulled back by Li Qinqin.

"This is so infuriating!" Wu Changhe could only sit down and sulk.

Many of the professional players were feeling very helpless. They were thinking in their minds that Zhang Ye was indeed just like what the rumors said about him. The way he spoke was really too sarcastic. It was little wonder then that this fellow offended so many people in the industry!

Zhang Ye pointed at Wu Changhe. "See, Uncle agrees to it as well, doesn't he? I really don't have such a high level of accomplishment in Go. You're all professional Go players, right? Any one of you here would be able to thrash me in a game!"

Thrash you?

Any one of us?

Chen Ying said bitterly, "But the problem now is that everyone who is present here has already been thrashed by you!"

Zhang Ye was stunned. "Ah?"

Xu Han sighed. "Almost all of us here have already played against you."

Hu Liang said rather embarrassed, "That time, it was us playing against you on our teacher's account."

Zhang Ye said in a startled manner, "What?"

"It means," Chen Ying said, "that our teacher only played you in the first two games. We were the ones who played against you for the remainder of the games. All of China Qiyuan's top Go players were defeated by you that day!"

Wu Changhe was not the one playing?

It wasn't him?

Zhang Ye immediately recalled the games from that day. It felt like the skill of "WuChanghe" had improved with every game that he played, and he had found it rather strange at the time but did not give much thought to it. He thought that the has-been Go player was experiencing a revival of sorts and had managed to regain part of his past skill. But when he heard what they had to say, Zhang Ye's face turned green with anger!

He immediately pointed at Wu Changhe and said angrily, "Uncle, you played dirty against me!"

Wu Changhe's face reddened from embarrassment.

Zhang Ye said angrily, "So you found helpers to play on your behalf! Aren't you being too evil! That's basically cheating! Cheating!"

Wu Changhe rolled his eyes. "What helpers! I was just testing your skill, understand?"

Zhang Ye was infuriated. "And there I was thinking that something felt amiss. I was wondering why you were getting stronger and stronger with every game. It was like you on steroids or something! So you had been scamming me all the while! So it

wasn't you who played against me! Uncle, how can you behave this way! And you even insisted that I had a questionable character? Aiyo, what the heck!"

Wu Changhe felt somewhat guilty but pretended not to have heard him.

And so, Zhang Ye looked at the group. "But you guys still should not be approaching me for this. That last person I played against was rather good too and I didn't manage to win that game. Since I couldn't win, how could I be qualified to challenge Peter?"

Dan Donghe said with a bitter smile, "Do you know who you were playing against in that last game that day?"

Zhang Ye said in a daze, "Who?"

Dan Donghe said, "Xiang Rong 9-dan!"

Zhang Ye said in surprise, "What?"

"So now you understand why we came looking for you?" Dan Donghe said.

Xiang Rong 9-dan?

The world's number one Go player?

I played against him that day?

And we even drew?

Zhang Ye could not process this sudden revelation and his mind went blank. That was because this fellow had always thought that his Go skills were just average. However, now that there was suddenly a group of people who came to inform him that he was actually an expert at Go, who would be able to accept something like that?

Holy shit!

Am I really that awesome?

Is this how good I really am?

Chen Ying said sincerely, "Professor Zhang, you were the first person who managed to accurately research how the AI's data processing and operating principles worked. This shows that you have a greater understanding of the AI than any of us. You also have the Go skills to rival Xiang Rong 9-dan, so your chances of winning are definitely higher than ours! Now that Master Xiang has lost, we can only approach you for your help. We can't look for anyone else, nor is there anyone who can challenge Peter! You are the only one left!"

Zhang Ye took a deep breath and said, "You guys think too highly of me. Actually, it's useless even if I have a deeper understanding of that AI. What's the use of that? We still won't be able to defeat it. This machine is clearly not as simple as you think. You guys don't understand this, but that machine is not something that can be defeated by humanity!"

Li Qinqin said, "Little Zhang, just give it a try!"

Zhang Ye wiped his sweat away and said, "Auntie, there's no need for that. If even Xiang Rong 9-dan could not win against it, I wouldn't be able to either!"

Li Qinqin said, "You are different from Little Xiang. You're a world-class mathematician who also has an understanding of AI. Your Go skills are not any weaker than Little Xiang's, and you're also hailed as the smartest person in the world who only comes along once in a hundred years. You are at the top in literature, hosting, crosstalk, mathematics, calligraphy, and music. There's no other person in the entire world who is smarter than you! This is publicly acknowledged by all the professionals and industry insiders!"

Zhang Ye was overwhelmed. "Auntie, you really think too highly of me. If we are on the matter of other subjects, I might still be able to handle it. But I'm really no match for that PeterGo!" He knew that it would be very difficult for him to win. No, it should be said that it was basically impossible for him to win. From the

beginning, he had not intended to get involved at all!

Hu Liang said loudly, "Please help the Go world!"

Xu Han said, "No matter how it turns out, we will still owe you a favor, alright?"

"If you don't accept the challenge, the Go world is really done for!"

"We can only depend on you!"

"Professor Zhang!"

"For the sake of humanity, please accept the challenge!"

"Please accept the challenge!"

"We don't have anywhere else to retreat to!"

"Humanity does not have a place to retreat to either!"

For humanity's sake?

Bullshit!

Then what about me?!

I would only be asking for a thrashing if I step forward!

Zhang Ye kept waving them off. "I really can't do it. Please find someone else. It's not that I don't have a sense of responsibility, but this is really beyond my abilities."

Dan Donghe cried out with a long face, "Professor Zhang!"

Chen Ying fretted, "You're the only one left that the Go world and humanity can depend on. If you don't accept the challenge, there won't be anyone left to stop Peter!"

Zhang Ye waved it off firmly. "I really can't do it!"

Seeing this, everyone started sighing.

"We're done for!"

"This is the end for the Go world!"

"What can we do then?"

"There's nothing else that we can do!"

Wu Changhe suddenly stood up and said, "Kid, come with me!"

"Ah?" Zhang Ye said.

Wu Changhe pushed open the first door he came upon. It was Zhang Ye's bedroom. Zhang Ye followed him in. Wu Changhe closed the door behind them.

There were only the two of them in here.

Zhang Ye quickly said, "Uncle, don't try to persuade me. I really can't do anything about that AI—"

"Kid, if you can defeat that machine, I will allow you to get together with my daughter!" interrupted Wu Changhe as he looked Zhang Ye straight in the eye.

Zhang Ye was stunned. Then he turned around, opened the door, and walked out of the room.

Wu Changhe was dumbfounded. What was the meaning of that? Why did he just walk off like that?

But the next second, he nearly fainted on the spot!

He heard Zhang Ye saying loudly, "For the sake of the honor of humanity! I will fight it out with that fucking PeterGo bastard!"

Everyone outside was stunned!

Chen Ying exclaimed, "You're willing to help us then?"

Hu Liang said excitedly, "That's great! That's really great!"

Dan Donghe could not hide his excitement either. "Professor Zhang, you will forever be remembered by all of humanity! The Go world will remember you! On behalf of the Go world, we owe you this favor!"

Zhang Ye waved it off in a serious manner and said righteously, "There's no need for that, President Dan. Aren't you looking down

on me a little too much? This is a matter of our honor as humans and concerns our national cause as well, so how can I just stand by and do nothing? How can I possibly not even have the conscientiousness to take up this responsibility? Hur hur, I just wanted to test everyone. I wanted to know how determined the Go world was. Indeed, I wasn't disappointed at all. Everyone has not given up yet! Alright then, I'll accept this challenge and play against that PETER!"

When everyone heard this, they were in awe of him!

The way that Chen Ying, Xu Han, and the others were looking at Zhang Ye had done a 180!

What a good "matter of our honor as humans"!

What a good "concerns our national cause"!

"Thank you!"

"Professor Zhang, thank you so much!"

"Your grace and kindness will not be forgotten!"

"No matter how it turns out, the Go world shall owe you a huge favor!"

"Professor Zhang is the greatest!"

"Kill off that goddamn PeterGo!"

Everyone responded loudly!

Hearing Zhang Ye's barrage of rhetoric, only Wu Changhe was left nearly vomiting a mouthful of blood!

Our national cause?

A matter of our honor as humans?

Your sister!

You're obviously doing this just to woo my daughter!

Shameless!

This kid is way too shameless!

## Chapter 1121: An uproar at the press conference!

Night had fallen.

His parents had just returned from their stroll. They opened the door and came back into the house.

"Why is there still no news?" his father complained.

His mother closed the door. "There are so many people in Asia, so there must definitely be someone who can step up to the challenge. Why are you so anxious about it?"

His father said angrily, "How can I not be anxious? They're bullying us to our doorsteps!"

"Eh? Where's Little Ye?" His mother went to look for him.

From his room, Zhang Ye's voice sounded out, "I'm in my room."

His mother asked, "Did someone come to our house? Why is it so messy?"

Zhang Ye said, "Yes, yes."

His father asked, "What are you doing?"

Zhang Ye said, "I'm busy with something. I'll talk about it later."

His father acknowledged, "Then go do whatever you need to do."

In Zhang Ye's room.

Zhang Ye faced his computer and studied the game records between Peter and Xiang Rong 9-dan, Shinji 9-dan, and the others. After China Qiyuan's people left his place, he had been reviewing the game records over and over again. As Sun Tzu said, if you know your enemy and yourself, you'll find naught in fear for a hundred battles 1. He would definitely have to do his research before stepping into battle. But the more he studied the games, the more he discovered just how powerful Peter was. Every move that

Xiang Rong and the others made seemed to have been predicted by the artificial intelligence. Some players could think ahead by two or three moves, while others could plan ahead by four or five moves. But it felt like Peter went far beyond that, simply because it was a computer!

How could he play against it then?

How the fuck was he going to play against it?

Zhang Ye was already pessimistic about the Go world's battle against Peter in the first place. He still felt the same way about it now and did not have any confidence in winning. This fellow had never liked fighting an unsure battle, but he could not avoid it this time. For those words that Wu Changhe had said to him, for Wu Zeqing, he had to do it no matter how difficult it was!

What should he do then?

Perhaps there was only one way to it!

Zhang Ye lowered his head and looked at the ring on his left pinky finger. The look in his eyes hardened as he immediately brought up the virtual screen to play the lottery! The last lottery draw hadn't been too ideal after he had drawn five Xiangqi Skill Experience Books. Even though they came in handy later, they were not items Zhang Ye needed urgently. For his lottery draw this time, Zhang Ye was hoping the Lucky Halo would work more effectively as he did not need anything else other than the Go Skill Experience Books!

He activated the Lucky Halo (Upgraded)!

Then tapped on Lottery Draw (Two).

He placed the additional stakes!

The lottery draw began!

Together with the usage of the Lucky Halo, over 100 million Reputation Points were spent!

Two minutes later, a loud laugh came from Zhang Ye's bedroom!

"Hahahaha!"

Even the Heavens are helping me!

The Heavens are helping me!

The prize was drawn!

It was the higher level Go Skill Experience Book, a total of ten of them!

Zhang Ye immediately studied them all!

Come on, PeterGo!

Let's see how this bro is gonna demolish you!

For this lottery draw, Zhang Ye's luck had exploded forth!

• • •

Meanwhile.

Something big happened online!

"Other than Master Xiang, who else is there from the Qiyuan?"

"Just Li Yi 9-dan!"

"Yeah, only Li Yi 9-dan is the next highest ranking player."

"But he's only the world number four! If even the top three ranking players in the world lost, then wouldn't it be more unlikely for the world number four to win?"

"What else can they do?"

"Yeah, who else can they send?"

"Surely they can't just admit defeat like that, right?"

"Of course not! They must not admit defeat no matter what!"

"I think Liu Hong 9-dan can do it!"

"No, they won't be able to. None of those people would be able to go against Peter!"

Just as everyone was crying with worry, China Qiyuan sent out a breaking news announcement. They unilaterally proposed to challenge Peter!

Everyone had been waiting for this news for a long time. When they saw that the Qiyuan had finally made a response, some people got extremely excited while others shook their heads pessimistically.

```
"They've responded!"

"The Qiyuan has responded!"

"They've finally said something!"

"Who is it?"

"Who's going to represent them and play?"

"Li Yi 9-dan?"

"Liu Hong 9-dan?"

"Why did they not say anything!"

"Quick, they're going to broadcast the press conference live!"

"Which channel is it on?"
```

"It's simultaneously broadcasting live on Central TV News Channel and Central TV Sports Channel!"

"Quickly turn on your TVs! Hurry, hurry, hurry!"

Many people went to turn their televisions on!

. . .

Back at home.

Zhang Ye's father slapped his thigh. "The Qiyuan has sent someone out as their representative!"

His mother took notice as well. "Turn on the TV!"

"It's on, it's on!" His father watched eagerly.

His mother said in anticipation, "Let's see who their so-called last line of defense is going to be."

• • •

At a villa.

Fan Wenli said with a laugh, "I heard that someone has accepted to the challenge."

"Is that so?" Chen Guang immediately said, "Let's have look!"

• • •

At the Heavenly Queen's house.

Ning Lan was visiting today. "Eh, Sister Zhang? Are you following that matter regarding the Go world as well?"

Zhang Yuanqi smiled. "Surely I have to pay attention to some news and current affairs, don't I?"

• • •

At a Go club somewhere in Beijing.

"Aiyo, they're holding a press conference now!"

"Are they going to challenge the AI?"

"The Qiyuan didn't chicken out! Nicely done!"

"Who will they be sending?"

"Li Yi 9-dan?"

• • •

In Japan.

"The Chinese have responded?"

"What's the point of that!"

"Yeah, there's no one left!"

"There's no one else from the Go world who can do it!"

• • •

In Korea.

"The Chinese are still going for a last-ditch attempt?"

"Let's wish them luck, but I don't have high hopes."

"They're definitely going to send Li Yi 9-dan to try their luck, right?"

"But then how would they win?"

• • •

At China Qiyuan.

The venue of the press conference.

The place was so packed to the brim that there weren't enough chairs to seat everyone. The staff added another dozen chairs for the members of the media. Outside the door were some reporters from the smaller newspaper agencies and tabloids that had not been officially invited to attend. They were all stopped outside as the venue was getting too overcrowded!

The entire country had its attention on this press conference!

Go enthusiasts from all over Asia were watching with wide eyes!

Central TV began the live broadcast of the press conference!

The live signal was synchronized to the actual event!

On the stage, the Americans and members of China Qiyuan had all arrived. A few of the key personnel got seated, and there was a microphone attached to the front of each of their tables.

The Qiyuan's president, Dan Donghe, lowered his head slightly to speak into the microphone, "Dear members of the media, regarding the furor surrounding the 'war between humans and machines,' I believe that everyone already knows about it. Right now, I would like to officially announce on behalf of the Qiyuan that we will be issuing a challenge to Peter!"

Immediately, applause sounded from the audience!

The American representative chuckled for a bit before saying, "Alright, we accept the challenge. We will be returning to our country in three days' time since Peter has other, more important research to handle, and we won't be able to stay here indefinitely either. As the results have already proven, Peter's intelligence is much greater than humanity's since it has already won against three of the top players in the Go world. We'll still accept the challenge, but this will be the last time that Peter will accept a challenge from the Go world!"

Dan Donghe looked at him. "Peter's intelligence is greater than that of humanity's? Isn't it too early to make such a statement?"

The American representative said with a laugh, "Alright then, I'll wait until after the match is over before repeating that."

"I'm just afraid that you all won't have the chance to say it." Dan Donghe was at war of words with him.

That American said, "Then let's just wait and see."

Everyone from the American side was amused. This was because they were extremely confident about Peter and knew that no humans would be able to win against it!

The time for the challenge match was set!

It would happen tomorrow!

The venue would be China Qiyuan!

But as for who would be representing the Qiyuan, no one knew. This was the last chance to make a stand, so they really could not afford to lose. So everyone was very concerned about who would be sent into the ring this time!

A female reporter asked, "Can we know who you will be sending out as the representative for the match?"

A Beijing Television reporter asked, "Xiang Rong 9-dan is the strongest player in the international Go world. Do we really have someone we can send out?"

Dan Donghe said, "Of course!"

"Who is it?"

"Yeah, who is it?"

"Which Go master are we talking about?"

All the reporters were staring with wide eyes!

The television viewers pricked up their ears!

Dan Donghe calmly said, "The Americans have developed an AI that they claim surpasses humanity's wisdom and intelligence. Therefore, they used this world's most complex game, Go, to challenge all humans. But as everyone knows, Xiang Rong 9-dan's Go skill might be very advanced, but he is not the smartest person in the world. Coincidentally, the current smartest person in the world who only comes along once every hundred years lives in China. He even lives in Beijing!"

The Americans did not understand!

But when those words were said, the reporters in the audience reacted like they had their tails stepped on. Many of them reacted there and then with stunned expressions and stood up immediately!

The smartest person who only comes along once every hundred years?

Could it...

Could it...

Damn! Surely not, right?

Don't tell us it's that fellow!

Please don't tell us it's that fellow!

Then they heard Dan Donghe loudly announce, "The person we've chosen to represent the Go world and challenge Peter is the

world famous mathematician—Zhang Ye!" Zhang Ye?

Who?

The Americans snorted as they did not know who this person was.

However, the reporters in the audience were all greatly shocked! The entire venue fell silent!!

## Chapter 1122: The final battle of the war between humans and the machines!

Zhang Ye?

Which Zhang Ye?

Was it that Zhang Ye?

After a full two seconds of silence, there was a sudden uproar at the press conference venue. Nobody could believe what they had just heard and was shocked by this news. The foreigners might not know who he was, but how could they not know about him. This person was simply too well-known to them. In their country, no one had not heard of Zhang Ye's name. But no one could have expected to hear it spoken from the mouth of China Qiyuan's president at such a venue and in such circumstances!

Zhang Ye would represent them and play?

Have you gone crazy?

Or have we gone crazy!?

• • •

In front of the television.

His parents were dumbfounded by what they heard!

His mother said in a daze, "Old Zhang, who did he say it was?"

His father said dumbfounded, "He said...Zhang Ye!"

"Holy shit!" His mother nearly jumped up from her seat. "It's our son? Little Ye is representing the Go world for the challenge? He was the last line of defense they were talking about?"

His father was floored. "With our son's lousy Go skills, how would he know how to play!"

. . .

At Old Yao's house.

Yao Mi's mouth was hanging wide open. "Did he read the wrong name?"

Yao Jiancai was so shocked that his jaw almost fell off. "He didn't read it wrong! He was really referring to Zhang Ye!"

Yao Jiancai's wife asked, "Is it someone else with the same name?"

"How many mathematicians are called Zhang Ye?" Yao Mi said, "Besides, to be publicly acknowledged as the smartest person to come along only once a hundred years, there's no other person than Teacher Zhang! Dammit! Goddammit!"

Yao Jiancai nearly vomited blood. "That guy even knows how to play Go?"

His wife was also shocked. "Could they have gotten it wrong?"

• • •

At the Heavenly Queen's house.

Zhang Yuanqi was stunned!

Ning Lan was stunned and scared out of her pants. "What? Zhang Ye? That fellow is even getting involved with the Go world now? Isn't he on a two-week break? Why did he appear again? Why does everything have something to do with him? Pfft! I really have to take my hat off to him! Teacher Zhang just can't stay idle for too long!"

Zhang Yuanqi asked, "He can play Go?"

"Who knows!" Ning Lan exclaimed.

• • •

At the Rao house.

Rao Aimin was watching the television when she got a surprise.

Yang Shu was also at her place today. She exclaimed, "It's Senior

Bro!"

Chenchen said in a speechless manner, "Aunt, you are going to get busy again."

Rao Aimin said, "This Little Zhang, why is he always stirring up things for me!"

As Zhang Ye's agent, the media was sure to come looking for her.

• • •

All of the Chinese audience was shocked!

It also went crazy online!

"Did I hear it wrong or did he say it wrong?"

"You didn't hear wrong!"

"Zhang Ye?"

"Holy motherfucking shit!"

"Why is it him?"

"When did Teacher Zhang become a part of the Go world?"

"As a host and an entertainment celebrity, why would he go and play Go? Does he intend to become a Go celebrity too? The issue here is whether Teacher Zhang can do it or not, since even Xiang Rong 9-dan lost!"

"Has China Qiyuan gone crazy?"

"Who knows which of their fucking brain circuits got wired wrong!"

"They could have gotten anyone to step up for this challenge, but it never should have been Zhang Ye!"

"Teacher Zhang is simply too omnipresent!"

We've only gone a week without hearing about him, but Teacher Zhang is popping up again and catching our attention?"

"I admit that Teacher Zhang is smart and his ability to learn is

strong. He always manages to get to the top of every field that he dabbles in. He's probably the smartest person in the world right now! But this is Go that we're talking about!"

"Does he even know how to play Go?"

"Who knows!"

The netizens found it totally unacceptable!

The citizens from Japan and Korea were also dumbfounded!

They basically did not know anything about Zhang Ye, nor did they recognize him at all. But with the Internet so advanced, they could easily do an online search and find out everything there was about him!

The Japanese:

"A Chinese superstar?"

"What? It's him?"

"Was he the guy who verbally abused our countrymen at Peking University?"

"Isn't he a celebrity from the entertainment industry?"

"It's that bastard? I've heard about him!"

"Damn, why did they get him to represent them?"

The Koreans:

"I know him!"

"He's the person who beat up Lee Anson!"

"Right, he's a hooligan of the showbiz industry in China!"

"Are China Qiyuan's people crazy? Why did they get a layman to represent them to play Go?"

"This is the last time that Peter will accept a challenge! It's the last chance for the Go world to turn things around! Yet they're treating such an important match like a child's game?"

"It's over. The Go world is doomed!"

"He definitely has no chance of winning against it! They're sending him to his death!"

• • •

The outside world was causing an uproar!

It was the same thing at the press conference venue!

During the live broadcast, a reporter immediately raised some doubts.

That female reporter raised her hand and asked, "President Dan, did you get it wrong? Why would you ask a layman to play in this important match?"

Dan Donghe said, "Believe me, we know very well what we're doing. It's precisely because this is an important match that directly affects the honor of the Go world that we're asking Professor Zhang for his help. We cannot afford to lose, nor can we lose again! We will do our best to take on the AI this time!"

A male reporter said, "But Zhang Ye is an outsider to Go!"

Dan Donghe retorted, "Who says that a layman would not know how to play Go? Professor Zhang is publicly acknowledged as the smartest person to come along only once in a century. As for his achievements in the other fields, I believe everyone already knows about them without needing me to explain further. If everyone doubts his Go skills, then I can assure all of you here that Professor Zhang knows how to play Go. And based on what I know, he learned when he was young."

The reporters didn't know how to react!

He learned Go when he was young?

I, too, fucking learned Go when I was young!

Would that be of any use? Would that help with anything? The opponent was an artificial intelligence program that defeated

Xiang Rong 9-dan and Park Yuhee 9-dan!

Dan Donghe looked into the audience. "Are there any more questions?"

A reporter from Shanghai Television raised his hand. "Do we stand a chance of winning?"

Dan Donghe said, "That will depend on Professor Zhang! But no matter what the outcome is, we still want to thank him for stepping forward boldly for the Go world! That is because this matter has nothing to do with him. Professor Zhang is already famous and does not lack money or fame. He has no reason to get involved, but for Go and for the honor of humanity, Professor Zhang had chosen to step forward without any hesitation. Therefore, we definitely must be grateful to him!"

When the Americans heard this, they finally understood who this person was that China Qiyuan had gotten to represent them!

A layman?

He was not a professional Go player at all?

He was not even considered an amateur player?

The Americans were extremely tickled!

You Chinese are totally looking down on this artificial intelligence program of ours!

• • •

At Zhang Ye's parents' house.

His mother pulled her son out of his bedroom.

Zhang Ye cried out, "What's going on, Mom?"

His mother stared at him. "Are you representing the Go world and competing against the AI?"

"Yeah. Eh, didn't I tell you two already?" Zhang Ye blinked.

His father yelled, "When did you say anything about that!"

Zhang Ye said, "I must have been busy and forgot about it. Didn't I say that someone came to our house earlier? They were people from China Qiyuan who came over to ask me to accept the challenge and help the Go world."

His father exclaimed, "And you agreed just like that?"

Zhang Ye said, "Yeah, I did."

His mother was floored. "You accepted the challenge just because they asked you to? You sure are audacious! You only picked up some beginner Go when you were in elementary and middle school, and now you have the courage to compete against the AI?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I'll just have to give it a try, I guess"

His father asked, "The match will take place tomorrow?"

Zhang Ye nodded.

Ring ring ring. His cell phone rang!

It was Chen Guang.

"Old Chen, what's the matter?"

"What do you think is the matter! What are you thinking, Director Zhang!"

"Ha, you heard about the news already?"

"Of course! Are you sure you can do it?"

"I have to. I'll try my best and fight them!"

Then Dong Shanshan called.

"Zhang'er! Was what was announced at the press conference really true?"

"It's true."

"You're really going to challenge it?"

"Yeah, that's right."

"When did you learn how to play Go?"

"During elementary school. I've always known how to play."

"I could never have expected that the Go world would invite you!"

"I did not expect this either."

The calls came one after another.

Zhang Ye's group of friends, including Yu Yingyi, Zhang Xia, Yao Jiancai, Xiaodong, Ning Lan, and Ha Qiqi, were all startled as they called him to confirm the news!

The press conference ended!

Rao Aimin's cell phone exploded with calls from the media!

It was the same thing over at China Qiyuan!

On Weibo, many experts were starting to openly question the announcement!

On the same night, news started spreading everywhere!

"Zhang Ye to represent Go world to fight the final battle!"

"The fourth Go player to represent humanity is Zhang Ye?"

"Zhang Ye vs. Peter!"

"The fourth battle in the war between humans and machines— Zhang Ye steps up!"

"China Qiyuan's shocking decision!"

"Zhang Ye has once again become the talk of the town!"

"Can humanity regain its honor?"

"Just how good is Zhang Ye at Go? "

"Humanity's strongest brain versus the most powerful AI: Who will be the winner?"

The outlook was very pessimistic!

Not even Zhang Ye's fans believed in him, much less the professionals and media!

"Teacher Zhang, can you stop fooling around?"

"Why don't you do something proper instead?"

"You're even getting involved with the Go world now?"

"Pfft, didn't you say you were on a break?"

"I can already picture how Teacher Zhang will look after suffering a miserable defeat!"

Even though there was doubt and pessimism, one thing was without a doubt: The future of Go?

The honor of humans?

Now, all that fell onto Zhang Ye's shoulders!

## Chapter 1123: The match begins!

The next day.

In the morning, a sea of people formed up outside China Qiyuan.

Several thousands of people had gathered around like they were out on a tour.

The entire street was blocked off and the traffic police department had to dispatch emergency manpower to carry out traffic control. Traffic on both sides of the road had to be rerouted to a different location.

"It's starting soon!"

"Damn, why are there so many people here?"

"This is crazy!"

"Of course, it's Zhang Ye who's going to battle against the machine!"

"It's the final battle of the war between humans and machines! Who wouldn't want to come and watch!"

"Even if we humans lose today, we still want to come and see it for ourselves!"

"Zhang Ye! You can do it!"

"Bring down that PeterGo!"

"I only ask that Teacher Zhang does not lose too badly!"

There were people all around, grouping into crowds and occupying the entire street!

Some of these people lived in the area and had come down to join in the bustle. There were also some people who traveled from afar with placards in their hands to show their support. There were all kinds of slogans written on them and some were especially funny.

—Cheering Face-smacking Zhang on!

- —Teacher Zhang, don't mess this up!
- —Teacher Zhang, don't get face smacked!
- —Zhang Ye, are you sure you can do it?

There were also dozens of students from some school carrying a horizontal red satin banner that had the words "Warmly celebrating the arrival of Teacher Zhang Ye to the Go world!" written on it.

The reporters were also here!

Some of them had already headed into the building, while others were setting up their equipment outside.

A female reporter from the Beijing Television Sports Channel reported, "Hello, everyone, I'm currently at the main entrance of China Qiyuan. In front of us, we can see that the venue is filled with many of our citizens. In another hour at this place, we'll be bringing to everyone the war between humans and machines, where the world's most advanced artificial intelligence program will take on the world's smartest person in a century! Today will be coverage of the first game of Peter vs. Professor Zhang's match. As for who will emerge victorious, please stay tuned to the live broadcast brought to you by BTV-Sports Channel. Look forward to the coverage!"

The image onscreen cut back to the studio.

At the BTV-Sports Channel's live studio.

The male host said, "Alright, thanks for the report by our field reporter, Little He." He then turned to the person next to him and continued, "Teacher Li, what are your views on today's match?"

Li Nian, a famous Go commentator.

Li Nian said, "Today's game is going to be very difficult to play."

The male host said, "Yes, Peter has already displayed its extremely strong and advanced Go skills. After Xiang Rong 9-dan's

defeat to it, no one else in the world dared to claim that they would be able to defeat it. However, much to our surprise, China Qiyuan has actually invited Professor Zhang to participate in this match under such circumstances."

Li Nian said, "Yes, I'm curious about that as well. Because up until now, no one has ever seen Zhang Ye play Go before. No one knows how good he is, so it's really impossible for me to estimate his chances of winning. We can only slowly analyze his play during the match itself. I believe that many of us, including me, would especially like to find out just how good Zhang Ye is as the smartest person in the world."

"Yes, how good Professor Zhang is is still a question mark."

• •

At China Qiyuan.

In the spectator room.

Zhang Ye was meeting Xiang Rong 9-dan in person for the first time.

Zhang Ye shook hands with him. "Hello, Teacher Xiang."

Xiang Rong said, "Hello, Professor Zhang. Let me give you a simple talk about my understanding of Peter. First, it is really very intelligent, so don't see it as just a computer. I believe you know that better than me. I tried to test it out with a move when I played it and found that it does not respond like a normal AI would. Second, no matter how complex the board layout gets, it will not have much of an effect on it. So if you're going first, I wouldn't suggest that you pick a diagonal opening fight 1 against it. And then, you must also remember not to let the game drag out for too long. Finish it as quickly as you can, since playing for too long will affect your strength and stamina greatly. That would make you more error-prone but would not affect Peter at all as it does not get limited by those factors. That is also its most terrifying advantage."

Zhang Ye nodded. "I will remember that."

Dan Donghe also came up to him. "Professor Zhang, you must keep calm. Start the game calmly and get the first advantage!"

Zhang Ye said, "Alright, I'll try my best."

Wu Changhe came over at this time as well. "Your advantage is that the AI does not have your game data. It doesn't know what your style and standard of play are, so you can use that to your advantage and surprise it. It's almost starting, and you better not mess this up!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I understand, Uncle."

A female professional Go player brought over a cup of hot tea. "Professor Zhang, please have something to drink."

"Ah, thank you." Zhang Ye took it from her.

Li Qinqin asked him in concern, "Have you had breakfast yet?"

"I've eaten already, Auntie," Zhang Ye said.

Li Qinqin said, "Today's game will surely be long. Do pay attention to your energy level."

Hu Liang 7-dan cheered, "You can do it!"

Xu Han 8-dan encouraged, "Professor Zhang, you can do it!"

Chen Ying 7-dan said, "We're depending on you! You must win this!"

Everyone was shouting their encouragements to him!

Zhang Ye said loudly, "Alright, I'm going then."

Everyone anxiously sent Zhang Ye off with their gazes as he walked out.

Before he left the room, he walked past Wu Changhe, only to hear him whisper, "If you lose, don't even think about stepping into my house! Hear that?!" Zhang Ye was floored!

Fuck!

Do you have to be so ruthless?

With that, he also became nervous!

In the game room.

Everything was set and ready.

The American representative was already here. They were just waiting for the reporters from Central TV Sports Channel to leave the room.

When Zhang Ye's old classmate, Yu Yingyi saw him, she came up to him and greeted, "Professor Zhang, hello."

The camera also pointed at him!

Zhang Ye said, "Hello, Yingyi."

Yu Yingyi said slightly perturbed, "How confident are you today?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I don't know, but I will do my best."

Yu Yingyi checked her watch and said, "I actually still have many questions for you, but I don't think we have the time for that anymore. I'll be in the commentary room waiting for your good news."

The live broadcast signal was cut.

Yu Yingyi put down her microphone and said with a bitter smile, "You're really here, huh? Did you really have to come just because China Qiyuan invited you? Why didn't I know before that you knew how to play Go?"

Zhang Ye was amused. "There's still a lot that you don't know about me."

Yu Yingyi said, "No matter what, please do well. Don't let the machines have a chance to look down on humanity!"

"Don't worry," Zhang Ye replied.

Yu Yingyi went off. She still had to partner with Chen Ying for the commentary portion of the coverage.

Zhang Ye slowly made his way to the players' seats and sat down on his side of the table.

Beside him, three staff members of the American team were doing their last checks on Peter. Soon, everything was ready, and the American representative nodded at them before taking the seat across from Zhang Ye. He would be representing Peter to "replicate" his moves.

The countdown began at three minutes.

The two international Go referees each went to confirm with Zhang Ye and the American representative if they were ready.

The American representative nodded his head.

Zhang Ye gestured with his hands to indicate that he was ready.

Outside.

The live broadcast signal was being televised across the country!

Even some of Asia's broadcasters were simulcasting the coverage!

This match could really be hailed as one that gained worldwide attention!

The countdown timer:

Three.

Two.

One.

The game began!

## Chapter 1124: Zhang Ye really knows how to play Go!

Watching TV.

At Zhang Ye's parents' house.

Almost all of Zhang Ye's uncles and aunts, his cousins, and the rest of his family were here today.

His third sister said, "Brother's coming on!"

His father gasped, "It's starting!"

His aunt said nervously, "Can Little Ye really do it?"

His mother said, "He better not get crushed by that computer the moment he starts playing. That would be so embarrassing for me!"

• • •

Chen Guang's home.

Old Chen and Fan Wenli had been waiting and watching the TV for a while.

Chen Guang was nursing a beer as he watched the coverage. "Do you think he can do it?"

Fan Wenli didn't what to say. "God only knows!"

. . .

At Ha Qiqi's house.

The old colleagues were gathered here today.

Zhang Zuo said, "The game is starting, it's starting!"

Little Wang yelled, "Director Zhang will prevail! Get that Peter!"

• • •

Zhang Ye's friends were all watching the live broadcast of the game!

The netizens were also making a big ruckus online. This battle between Zhang Ye and the artificial intelligence had been in the headlines for quite some time!

"Please don't lose too terribly!"

"Teacher Zhang, you can do it!"

• • •

At the venue.

They guessed the stones 1 to pick who would go first.

Zhang Ye was assigned White and would be playing second.

Very quickly, Peter played its first move.

When the American representative saw the move on the computer screen, he picked up a black stone and placed it at the corresponding position on the Go board with a clink.

Zhang Ye almost didn't hesitate as he smiled and picked up a white stone to place on the board.

Peter went again with its next move.

Zhang Ye thought for a moment and then responded.

It was very quiet in the room. Other than a few cameras, there were only the referees and some staff members around. No one made a peep. There was a very large room outside that was used as the spectator room. Many of the executives of China Qiyuan and the reporters, along with the professional Go players, were watching the game from there. It was equipped with a big screen that clearly displayed every move that was made on the Go board. After each move, they would all break into whispers of discussion with one another.

Hu Liang said, "Peter's opening looks very stable."

Xu Han said, "Professor Zhang too. It's a very conventional start."

Dan Donghe nodded and said, "Little Zhang used to like to open a

game with unconventional moves, but it looks like he has taken our advice this time. He's adopted a different approach."

Wu Changhe was staring at the Go board, fully focused, and did not speak at all.

Li Qinqin was clenching her fists as she watched nervously.

This match could really be called one that concerned the life and death of Go. No one could not care about it!

Clink.

Zhang Ye placed a stone down, playing his seventh move.

A battle for the corner began!

In the commentary room.

Yu Yingyi said anxiously, "Teacher Chen, what's happening on the board?"

Chen Ying 7-dan explained, "During the opening, Peter went first. So it would certainly have an advantage. Both their opening moves follow a very traditional way of playing and is considered very conservative. But what we're seeing right now is a watershed moment and the next move they make will be very critical!"

Yu Yingyi looked at the screen and suddenly said, "Peter has made its move!"

Chen Ying's expression shifted. "It played a horizontal stretch? This move by Peter shows a very strong offensive desire. Does it intend to take down the corner for itself? Or was it just a feint?"

Zhang Ye made his move!

It was a knight's move!

Yu Yingyi was surprised. "Zhang Ye ignored Peter's move? But why?"

When Chen Ying saw it, she was astounded. "Great move! It truly is a great move! Professor Zhang has finally shown his hand! He

did so without any hesitation too! He's going for the attack now! Peter has lost the initiative and will have to respond to that move first. Otherwise, Professor Zhang will gain control of the framework over there. Indeed, Peter has responded! Oh, that move was really too wonderful. Professor Zhang has caught up by at least three points with that move. If we include the compensation, Professor Zhang has actually gained a slight advantage!"

Yu Yingyi was stunned. "What?"

Zhang Ye?

Gained an advantage?

On BTV-Sports Channel.

The famous commentator, Li Nian, had also been stunned. "This move is really beautiful! This knight's move is very bold and creative. What we're seeing is Professor Zhang pushing Peter into making reactive moves only. It can only give up on completing that framework in the corner and contend for the territory with Professor Zhang!"

Zhang Ye made another move!

Peter fought back!

Zhang Ye made yet another move!

These few moves were a dazzling blur to everyone!

In the spectator room, everyone broke out into applause!

President Dan Donghe was leading the praise. "Great! Good one! Very good!"

Xu Han said excitedly, "That was great, Professor Zhang!"

"Get it! Pursue and attack!" Hu Liang was also getting excited!

"Awesome! This is so awesome!"

"Professor Zhang is indeed Professor Zhang! He doesn't stick to convention at all!"

"This time, it will be Peter having a 'headache'!"

"Impressive, Professor Zhang!"

Although the outcome was not decided yet, being able to put Peter on the back foot had given a lot of hope to everyone!

However, Xiang Rong continued watching the game indifferently. He did not say anything. He knew that it was still too early to be happy and that Peter's skills had yet to be truly demonstrated.

In the room.

Zhang Ye did not take his opponent lightly, although he was pretty confident about himself. If he played to a draw against Xiang Rong, and now that he had gained another 100 million Reputation Points' worth of Go skill experience, he should probably be able to win against him. However, Xiang Rong 9-dan had probably also not given his best when he played against Zhang Ye that day. As such, it was still an open question as to who would win between the two of them. Zhang Ye considered every one of his moves very carefully. When there was an opportunity to attack, he would not show any mercy. But if there was no chance to do so, he would not attack blindly either. This was because he knew that he mustn't make a mistake!

A blunder?

A miscalculation?

This was the greatest difference between a human and a machine, and also the greatest disadvantage for humans!

Clink.

Clink.

Another three moves went by.

Zhang Ye and Peter were making moves tit for tat, neither of them willing to give up on this territorial contention! The expression on the American representative's face didn't look so good anymore. He was also feeling a little shocked inside. He couldn't have expected that there would still be such a good player around in the Go world. Other than Xiang Rong 9-dan, Shinji 9-dan, and some of the other professional players, there was someone who had such good Go skill? But why hadn't he appeared before? Why had he been an unknown all this time in the Go world? After a moment of shock, he forcibly calmed himself down. It would be alright. No matter who came along, it wouldn't matter. That was because he and his team believed in Peter! Peter would never lose!

The battle in the corner reached a deadlock!

When everyone thought that the fight would have to continue, Zhang Ye suddenly blinked and placed a stone in the middle of the board and very calmly opened up a path right there!

Come.

Let's see what you've got.

Zhang Ye narrowed his eyes and looked at the computer.

This time, there seemed to be no response from it. It went into the longest period of "thinking" since the start of the match.

In the commentary room.

Yu Yingyi said excitedly, "Peter still hasn't made its move yet. It's been 'thinking' for a very long time!"

Chen Ying smiled. "Peter is currently crunching the data. This is where it gets rather complicated. Professor Zhang did this on purpose by making a move that created a very open game. But as the middle part of the board is also very intertwined with the corner, if Peter does not consider its options carefully, it might just throw the entire game away!"

On BTV-Sports Channel.

Li Nian exclaimed, "Good one! Peter has to make a difficult decision now! That was really clever! I never expected that Professor Zhang would be able to play such a beautiful game of Go!" Looking into the camera, he said, "Dear viewers, if you are watching the live broadcast and were worried like me about whether Zhang Ye knows how to play Go, then I can confidently say this to everyone: He knows how to play Go. Not only does he know how to play, he's even at the level of a grandmaster!"

Watching on TV.

A lot of people were dumbfounded from watching!

Some of the audience who could play Go had already seen the level of Zhang Ye's play and were all very startled by it!

For those who did not understand Go, when they heard the explanation from the host and Go commentator, they were also very shocked!

The Internet exploded!

"Holy shit!"

"What have I seen!"

"Zhang Ye has the advantage?"

"He's at the level of a grandmaster?"

"God, this fellow really knows how to play Go! The fuck!?"

People from all over the country were stunned to the extreme!

## Chapter 1125: Capturing race!

Everyone knew that Zhang Ye was smart!

Everyone knew that Zhang Ye was capable!

But in Go? No one had ever seen him play the game before!

That was why before this, no one had any idea at all about how good Zhang Ye was at Go. They only knew that he could probably play, but definitely did not know how well he could play. Thus, everyone had a pessimistic view of things after the press conference the other day. They didn't think that there was a chance of winning at all. But now, they knew. Through the words of the host and the commentator, they realized that Zhang Ye's skills were definitely able to match the artificial intelligence program for this war between humans and machines. Further, he had even gained a slight advantage at the start of the match!

His eldest younger sister exclaimed, "Our brother is so amazing!"

Zhang Ye's mother said with wide eyes, "Didn't Little Ye only attend a few Go classes during elementary and middle school?"

His father smacked his thigh in realization. "So this was why China Qiyuan got him to represent them!"

Elsewhere.

Fan Wenli was dumbfounded. "Director Zhang really can play!"

Chen Guang said, "Damn, and I was wondering why he dared to accept the challenge!"

At the Yao household.

Yao Jiancai said in a speechless manner, "That Little Zhang, how does he know everything!"

Yao Mi exclaimed excitedly, "Teacher Zhang, you can do it! Defeat that machine! Defeat it!"

This final battle between humans and machines was also broadcast live on the Online Go Server. The platform's commentator was shocked as he shouted, "Look, PeterGo is getting pressed back! It's been thinking for 20 minutes without making a move! This is incredible! Face-smacking Zhang is so incredible! He has once again shown his amazing talents to all of Asia. He has given humanity a glimmer of hope in beating an AI! Those moves on the Go board are indeed at the level of a professional! With this, Face-smacking Zhang has announced to the world that he truly lives up to the title of the smartest person to appear in a century! He is definitely the person with the highest IQ in the world! No one else even comes close!"

As a mathematician, his Go skill would undoubtedly not be bad. But at most, it should only be not bad. For him to be able to play the game to the highest level was practically impossible. This is because Go requires a large amount of time and practice to accumulate skill and experience, and requires a person to fully invest their heart and mind into the game. So what was happening right now was something that was not explainable by Zhang Ye's status as a renowned mathematician!

There was only one way to explain it:

Zhang Ye was just too smart!

It would have to be that innate talent and intelligence of his!

This match was definitely worthy of being known as the battle between humans and machines. The netizens who had doubted whether Zhang Ye could really represent humanity and play in this match were all keeping quiet now. He was absolutely qualified to do so!

• • •

In the room.

More than 20 minutes had passed.

Finally, Peter stirred and made a move in response!

Seeing this move it made, Zhang Ye frowned. For the first time today, he was set deep into thought.

Peter's reply was not actually very strong. It could even be said that it was just a normal move. But on second glance, one would discover that the position its black stone was played on was actually a very critical one and extremely difficult to deal with. If Zhang Ye were to apply pressure and go up against it, he might be opening himself up to getting exploited, and the corner of the board would then be put into danger. But if he were to leave it alone, he would definitely start getting restricted from his next move onwards. For now, the only better option available to Zhang Ye was a position on the first line from the right. It would be more secure to play his move here. But just as he was about to raise his hand to place the stone, he suddenly hesitated and felt that something was wrong.

A trap?

Yes, it was a trap!

After thinking four moves ahead, he could deduce it immediately!

What a good move!

This move has really left me in a dilemma!

Zhang Ye once again turned silent as he started thinking about it. This was truly to be expected from an artificial intelligence. He had witnessed the true strength of his opponent now. Moreover, as the game progressed and the situation on the board got even more complicated, the AI's ability to calculate its options to a greater degree of precision would give it a greater advantage. In the current situation, Zhang Ye had entered into attrition warfare against PeterGo!

In the commentary room.

Yu Yingyi asked curiously, "Has Professor Zhang encountered a difficult choice for his next move?"

Chen Ying 7-dan was also very puzzled. "If it were me, I would definitely play my move at right-5."

"Yeah, there's a possible point over there." Even a hobbyist like Yu Yingyi could see it.

Chen Ying 7-dan said, "So I don't know what Professor Zhang is considering....Eh, wait a second. There seems to be something more to that move by Peter!"

In the spectator room.

Many of the professional players were pointing at the screen and discussing. A lot of them could not understand why Zhang Ye had fallen silent, thinking that this should not be happening.

Only Wu Changhe spoke up. "Right-5 is not an option."

Xiang Rong 9-dan looked at the board and nodded in agreement.

"Why?"

"Even if right-5 is not a good position, he could play at right-6, right?"

Wu Changhe shook his head. "It's a trap." He picked up a laser pointer and pointed it at the screen to explain to everyone. "If he plays right-5, the machine will make its move over here. Then, that Zhang kid will only be able to play a horizontal stretch. When the machine makes its move here, he would have to follow up again. Once the machine extends here, he'll have no options left. He'll have lost the initiative at the territory in the corner immediately. So this is a trap."

A lot of people suddenly realized this as well!

Hu Liang 7-dan said in worry, "What if Professor Zhang falls for it?"

"Yeah," a professional 5th dan female player said anxiously,

"what if he falls for it?"

Xiang Rong answered, "He wouldn't fall for it!"

Wu Changhe nodded in agreement to Xiang Rong's statement. Although he didn't think much of Zhang Ye and disliked him very much, he still recognized Zhang Ye's skill as a professional Go player. Otherwise, why would China Qiyuan approach an outsider like him and specially go to his house to persuade him rather than sending a professional player from within their own ranks! It was precisely because the people here could not even recognize this trap that they were sitting in this room while Zhang Ye was the one who represented them and played in the challenge match! Zhang Ye's Go skill was much better than theirs!

Suddenly, Zhang Ye played his stone on the board!

He made a "cut 1" that no one had expected was coming!

Wu Changhe nodded approvingly.

Xiang Rong 9-dan sighed. "He didn't fall for it, but he has lost his advantage."

Wu Changhe said, "There's nothing he can do. His opponent is being too difficult. This response is already very good."

Zhang Ye was playing very conservatively. Actually, he had several strategies that he could use, but he chose to go ahead with the safest style of playing, even though it would lead to him losing an advantage of two or three points. The main issue here was that his opponent had played a really clever move, and Zhang Ye did not have that good of a way to deal with it.

The machine was indeed very strong!

So strong that Zhang Ye could feel himself getting mentally drained!

Chen Ying frowned. "Why did he play that move? He could have...Oh, I know! The point at right-5 was a trap. It might have

looked like a cake, but it must never be eaten!" She immediately brought up a virtual screen to demonstrate to the audience for their understanding. "Over here, the stones will lose their initiative if this happens. So Professor Zhang has no other options. Oh, Peter has made another move again. This move looks really familiar. It's a 'push through' at this position. This is a move that Xiang Rong 9-dan uses commonly and is his playstyle. With those two moves, Professor Zhang will find it difficult to continue from here. Peter has caught back up on its disadvantage in points!"

The television viewers and Go players watching experienced a sinking feeling in their hearts.

Things had been turned around too quickly!

But then again, that was exactly where the charm of Go lay!

It was all quiet in the game room. Even the international referees were nervously watching the game.

Zhang Ye's eyes narrowed as he played a " stretch 2 "!

Peter made a "reach around 3 "move!

Zhang Ye played a "stand"!

Peter went for a "horizontal stretch"!

In the following moves, neither party could get an advantage over each other!

A stone of Zhang Ye's was captured!

Very quickly, Peter also had a stone captured by Zhang Ye!

The situation on the board was stuck in a stalemate as both players played really wonderful moves. The exchange made many of the professional Go players and amateurs watch in shock and surprise!

#### Chapter 1126: Zhang Ye's Divine Move!

Both sides were out to kill!

It was a game that became a heated confrontation!

The game had entered into the middlegame and almost half of the board was filled with stones!

Hu Liang 7-dan shouted, "Come on, Professor Zhang!"

A 5th dan pro cheered, "Destroy Peter!"

"Go, go! Bring it down!" Xu Han 8-dan roared.

Even Wu Changhe could not help but yell, "Go on! Attack!"

Although they knew that Zhang Ye could not hear them, the spectator room was still filled with loud cheers of support. They all knew that at this point in time, the battle had entered into the most critical stage!

Zhang Ye made a "diagonal move"!

Peter played a "stand"!

Zhang Ye followed with a "bump"!

Peter made a "bamboo joint 1 " with his stones!

Zhang Ye played an "approach"!

Chen Ying 7-dan remarked, "This is so intense! Both sides are locked in an intense struggle! Professor Zhang was the second to play and is at a slight disadvantage. But in terms of momentum, he's no worse than the AI. The flames of war have shifted back to the corner. I wonder who can grab the initiative this time. Who can surround the other and take the territory? Oh, Peter has made its move. It went in for a strong attack! If it grabs hold of the corner territory, there wouldn't be much hope left for Professor Zhang in this game. Will Professor Zhang allow it to succeed? Look at that, Professor Zhang is fighting back! What a good horizontal

stretch! Professor Zhang's horizontal stretch has forced Peter into the most awkward of positions! Is he going to be able to seize the initiative?"

The television viewers could feel their blood boiling!

Zhang Ye's father stood up. "Come on, son!"

His mother shouted, "Little Ye! Attack! Attack! Attack!"

His third sister was also shouting Zhang Ye's name!

Countless people were feeling extremely pumped up!

Every one of them was shouting Zhang Ye's name!

"There's a chance of winning!"

"We really have a chance of winning!"

"Teacher Zhang!"

"Kill it! Don't be afraid!"

"Get that PeterGo!"

"Victory shall belong to humanity!"

"Face-smacking Zhang, bring out your true abilities!"

"Show them what you can do like how you've always done to your peers in the past!"

On the Go board.

Peter responded with its move.

Zhang Ye's expression did not change as he calmly placed his next stone down.

Peter attacked again!

The white stones were at a disadvantage, but Zhang Ye still remained indifferent. He gracefully picked up a white stone and tapped it down onto the board with a very nice and crisp clink.

Yu Yingyi said worriedly, "Has White's initiative been taken

away?"

Chen Ying 7-dan explained, "Professor Zhang just lost a little bit of the advantage, but that's OK. There are still chances to regain it later on. In fact, Professor Zhang might have made this move on purpose!"

"On purpose?" Yu Yingyi said in surprise.

Chen Ying 7-dan nodded and said, "Yes, Professor Zhang might've laid a trap for Peter by deliberately opening up a weak point over there. We see this very often in matches between top pro Go players. It's a very advanced type of opening that only masters would dare attempt. I wonder if our viewers have noticed Professor Zhang's expression? He looks very relaxed and calm."

Yu Yingyi glanced at him and found that it was true!

The television viewers became more confident when they saw how he acted!

Indeed, Zhang Ye was serene. He did not look like someone who had just lost the advantage. On the contrary, he seemed to be exuding a feeling like he had everything under control!

Yu Yingyi said very excitedly, "So that's how it is!"

Chen Ying 7-dan said, Now, the situation on the board has entered into the final stage. I have a feeling that Professor Zhang is setting up for a very big move in this game. Look, the white stones have been forced into a corner again by Black. They've been surrounded all around. But similarly, the black stones' hold on the board is now very weak, so it has to relinquish its control. This could be the situation that Professor Zhang had been waiting for. That opening he set up earlier might just have been waiting for this moment to arrive!"

In the spectator room.

Li Yi 9-dan's fists were clenched. "Little Zhang is on the counterattack!"

Hu Liang said, "He's been waiting so long for this!"

Xu Han said in anticipation, "What kind of big move will Professor Zhang be coming up with next?"

"Is he going to turn defeat into victory?" someone said in disbelief.

A female Go player said, "Can that happen? Is there a chance for that?"

A male Go player pointed at the screen and said, "Look at Professor Zhang's expression. He looks like he still has a big move planned that he hasn't brought out yet. I know about the things that he has done in the past, and everyone should probably know about it too. He's the type of person who would never bring out his trump card until the very last moment. There have been so many of his peers that had their faces smacked swollen in this way in the past!"

"That's right!"

"Can he win?"

"Aiyo, my heart can't take this!"

Xiang Rong 9-dan, Wu Changhe, Dan Donghe and the others were all staring with wide eyes at the screen. The outcome of the game was almost decided. They were at the final showdown of the battle. None of them dared to blink as they were afraid they would miss the epic moment!

Do it!

Hurry up and do it!

What was the meaning of that opening strategy and the show of weakness just now for?

Let us witness it, let the machine witness it, and let the entire population of Asia witness it!

The viewers watching on TV were also staring wide-eyed!

Some of them stood up!

Some of them got excited!

Some of them were waiting in anticipation!

At this moment on their screens, Zhang Ye's hand reached into the Go bowl 2!

The American representative looked at the terribly calm Zhang Ye across from him and suddenly felt a sense of panic as well. You're holding something back? What are you planning on doing? Where will you place this next stone? For a moment, he could feel himself sweating nervously. He kept looking all over the Go board for a position where Zhang Ye might still have a chance of survival!

Where was it?

Just where could it be?

Which position had Peter neglected to take into account?

Chen Ying 7-dan also stood up excitedly. She ignored the reminder from the earpiece that the director gave and said loudly, "It's coming! Professor Zhang has picked up his white stone! He's going to make a move now! Today, Professor Zhang has shown his standard and played to a very high level that showcased the grandeur of humanity! If he wins, he'll immediately become the hero of the Go world! He'll be the hero of all humanity! Watch this, Professor Zhang has raised his white stone and is ready to place it down. I believe that he has been waiting for this chance for a very long time. He wants to decide the outcome now and let the AI know who the true overlord of the world is. Where will Professor Zhang place this decisive stone? This stone is a matter regarding the honor of humanity. Which lethal point will it strike the AI?"

The people watching the live broadcast from Japan were buzzing with excitement!

The viewers from Korea were stirring as well!

At this moment, countless sets of eyes from all over Asia were staring fixedly at Zhang Ye's hand. It was as though it was the hand of God!

Chen Ying 7-dan said loudly, "We're going to witness a miracle at the next moment! Let us watch together as the moment arrives! He's making the move! Teacher Zhang is making his move! Where will this white stone land? Where will this white stone that deals a fatal blow to Peter land? Ah...he still not placing it down on anywhere yet. He's pulling his hand back!"

Instantly, it felt as though the entire world had gone quiet!

Everyone in the room fell silent!

Zhang Ye looked at the international referee and beckoned to him. He said in an embarrassed manner, "Um, I resign."

The American representative fainted!

Yu Yingyi fainted!

Chen Ying fainted!

Wu Changhe fainted!

Li Qinqin fainted!

The Japanese and Korean viewers fainted!

Everyone throughout Asia very nearly breathed their last breaths at that moment!

Goddammit, you motherfucking bastard!

Where was the motherfucking big move that you promised us?

Where was the agreed on Divine Move that you were talking about?

But as it turned out, he actually had nothing up his sleeves?!

### Chapter 1127: Face-smacking Zhang gets serious!

At the competition venue.

The international referees came forward to verify the match.

Then, the thinner of the two referees announced, "The first game goes to Peter."

The competition was based on a best of three. If Peter won the next game, the challenge would end immediately.

The American representative smiled as he wiped the nervous sweat off his forehead and cursed himself for overthinking things. He did not shake hands with Zhang Ye and headed straight to the place the press conference would soon be held.

Zhang Ye did not pay attention to him. He gave a final look at that ugly computer before turning and leaving the room and headed for the spectator room.

In the spectator room.

When this fellow returned, he was immediately surrounded by a bunch of top Go players!

Wu Changhe stared at him and said, "Where was the big move?"

Zhang Ye said in surprise, "What big move?"

Wu Changhe impatiently said, "Didn't you have a big move up your sleeve?"

Zhang Ye wore a look of confusion. "What big move did I have up my sleeve?"

Xu Han 8-dan said in a dumbfounded manner, "Didn't you purposely set a trap for Peter?"

"Ah? What are you all talking about?" Zhang Ye could not understand a word they were saying.

A trap?

Big move?

Where am I supposed to pull that out from for you all!

This AI is too powerful. I already said that I wouldn't be able to win against it! But you all insisted on making me play against it. Hai, I'm so embarrassed now! Zhang Ye was also feeling very dejected. This fellow had always been called "Face-smacking Zhang" by others, and he had always been the one who slapped others' faces. But who could have expected that he would be the one getting smacked in the face this time! I knew it! I knew that even if I had drawn a few more skill experience books from the lottery draw, it would still be useless. As expected, this was totally not a matter of skill!

Chen Ying 7-dan returned from the commentary booth. When she stepped in, embarrassment was written all across her face. "Sorry, I, I went overboard during the live broadcast."

The group of pro players were beyond speechless. All of them had been impassioned by Chen Ying's commentary and thought that Zhang Ye really had some big move left to play!

But as it stood?

He could not even muster up a fart!

Li Qinqin sighed and said, "Little Zhang, you've worked hard."

Zhang Ye said with a sardonic chuckle, "Auntie, how have I worked hard? I didn't even win the game, so I feel pretty bad."

Xiang Rong 9-dan looked at him and said, "You've already done great. At the least, I think that you did much better than me. If we had gotten someone else to play, they could not have played as well as you. No matter what, whether you win or lose, we're very grateful to you for standing up for the Go world."

At this, everyone else came to realize it too.

Professor Zhang had accepted the challenge for their sake. Even if he lost, they shouldn't be blaming him. It was never his problem to begin with in the first place!

"Professor Zhang."

"You did a fine job."

"It's fine even though you lost."

"Right, it's not the first time that we've lost anyway, hai."

"Your opening was brilliant!"

"Yeah, no one's been able to make PeterGo so passive! You were the first one to manage it, and this was also the closest that we humans have come to achieving victory!"

"There's still another game tomorrow."

"Right, there's still a chance."

The professional players all spoke one after another.

Dan Donghe was silent all this while.

There's still a chance?

Even though they said that, which one of them really believed what they were saying!

They could all see that Professor Zhang had given his best but still lost to Peter. For tomorrow's game, would there be any difference whether they played or not? Based on today's performance, they knew that they would not be able to win tomorrow. They could see too many things in today's game. This was the limit of how well humanity could perform, but was there even a limit to how far PeterGo could go? They could not see! Yes, there were just no limits!

Li Qinqin consoled, "Don't be too pressured and just play as you would for tomorrow's game."

Zhang Ye gave a wry smile. He thought about how every one of

them was placing their hopes on him, and how so many of the common folk were looking at him, so how could there be no pressure on him? The pressure was simply too great!

What if I don't win tomorrow? Then what?

Would I no longer be able to face everyone?

Would I not be able to marry Old Wu anymore?

Motherfucker, this goddamned PeterGo!

Who the fuck designed this bastard of a thing!

...

On Weibo.

The netizens were all wailing!

"That commentator is such a scammer!"

"Yeah, she said it so seriously that I took her word for it!"

"And in the end, when Teacher Zhang said 'I resign,' I nearly fell to my knees!"

"It's useless to say anything now! We've lost again!"

"Even Teacher Zhang could not win against it!"

"Zhang Ye was just a layman to begin with, so why would you guys expect him to win?"

"Ai, I'm really looking forward to tomorrow's game as well. It's going to just be a formality, though. I can see it already. This PeterGo is really too fucking pro!"

"Is there really no one who can beat it? Not even a single game?"

"Go is done for!"

"In a hundred years from now, this game probably won't exist!"

The atmosphere was getting extremely pessimistic. Or rather, it had already become extremely hopeless!

No one thought that humanity would stand a chance of making a comeback!

. . .

Later that afternoon.

Back at home.

The game had lasted for several hours and it was almost past lunchtime.

When Zhang Ye got home, all of his relatives rushed to him.

"Brother, you're amazing!" his third sister said, giving him a look of adoration.

Zhang Ye smiled bitterly. "I lost and you're saying I'm amazing?"

His eldest younger sister said, "But your opponent is an AI that even defeated Xiang Rong 9-dan. It's already heaven defying enough that you could fight it that well!"

"It's still a loss." Zhang Ye wasn't feeling great about it.

His father came over. "Prepare yourself for tomorrow's game!"

His mother said, "Yes, demolish it tomorrow!"

Demolish it? I would love to do that!

But how could I possibly achieve it?

His first aunt said, "Don't lose heart, you'll be fine!"

His third uncle said, "Right, you've only lost one game. There are still two games left!"

Zhang Ye forced a smile. "After playing Go for the entire morning, I'm feeling a little tired. I'm going to lie down for a bit."

His mother said, "Quickly get some rest then."

Zhang Ye went into his bedroom and laid down on the bed immediately after closing the door. Hearing the chatter of his relatives outside every now and then, he felt really helpless and depressed about the game.

It wasn't that this fellow could not stand to lose, nor was he someone who could not withstand a blow. Ever since he debuted in the entertainment industry, he had stumbled many times as he went through a lot of difficulties along the way. But he had never lost heart before. Besides, Zhang Ye still hasn't lost yet. They were only one game into the best of three. But what made Zhang Ye feel very helpless was that he had no idea how to deal with PeterGo. He knew that even if he were to play tomorrow, he would still not be able to win!

This was the most frustrating thing of all!

Which was why he could not raise his spirits!

Damn, why doesn't this bro use his hacking skills to bring it down? And let that bastard of a thing go up in smoke? Fuck, wouldn't that be a little too mean? Besides, the Americans would surely have the most secure and latest technologies to protect it against such attacks. He might not necessarily have a chance to hack into it! Should he try the lottery again? But it wouldn't work no matter how many times he played the lottery. PeterGo's dataset was just too large. During today's game against Zhang Ye, PeterGo had played moves in the styles of Xiang Rong 9-dan, Shinji 9-dan, Li Yi 9-dan, and anyone else who had played against it. The large dataset it had could also enable it to correctly predict Zhang Ye's every move. This was no longer a difference in skills but the difference between a human brain and a machine! On this aspect, the machine had a crushing advantage over humans. Combined with the two "brains" that gave PeterGo its analytical power, the Americans were actually correct in their claims. This artificial intelligence could really be said to be "thinking" from a different perspective.

The amount of information he had was not as much as the opponent had!

His speed of calculation was not as fast either!

And the precision of his calculations could not be compared either!

Then why the hell was he still competing? How could he compete?

In the public.

A lot of experts were analyzing this war between humans and machines!

A Go commentator: "Zhang Ye excels at the game but is still lacking by too much when compared to the machine."

A scientist: "Humanity is doomed to fail in this war!"

A former national master Go player from Japan: "Not optimistic about tomorrow's chances!"

Ring, ring, ring.

A call from Wu Zeqing came in.

When Zhang Ye saw the caller ID, he hesitated for a moment before rejecting it.

But his cell phone rang again the next second.

Zhang Ye bit the bullet and answered.

"Hello."

"Why didn't you take my call?"

"Hai, I can't face anyone right now."

"You only lost one game and you've become like this?"

"The issue is that I'm not confident for tomorrow either."

"You can win. I believe in you."

"Even I don't believe in me."

"But I do."

Zhang Ye was taken aback.

He heard Wu Zeqing say: "I watched today's game, and I feel that you had a problem while playing. At Go, I'm not anywhere close to as good as you all. But when we were at my place, I watched many of the games you played. I felt that you held back a lot today and were trying to play too carefully throughout the entire game. It was totally different from the carefree style you had while you were playing at my place."

Zhang Ye said helplessly: "My opponent was too strong. I had to play more conservatively against it. What's more, I was playing under pressure from my opponent for most of the game."

Old Wu said: "I always believe that playing Go should be approached as how one lives their lives. Whatever type of person you are, you should be that way and play according to your style. You can't change it. Play conservatively? Playing carefully and taking a steady approach? Building up your base with every step? That's not who you are at all! It's not in your nature to play that way. That's why you might have held yourself back by doing so. I still find you cooler when you played the way you did against my dad, China Qiyuan, and Xiang Rong 9-dan while we were at my place."

At your place?

I didn't even know that I was not facing your dad at that time!

If this bro knew that my opponents had all been 9-dan players and were among the top 20 players in the world, I would've pissed my pants. How could I have played as carefreely as I did!

Zhang Ye said: "Uh, will that really work?"

"Just give it a try," Old Wu replied.

Zhang Ye nodded. "Alright, I'll take your advice then."

Old Wu said: "As for the other factors, you can only depend on yourself to figure them out. I can't help with that."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye gave it some thought for quite a while. Old Wu had indeed made a very reasonable argument. He had been too nervous today and was only thinking about not making any mistakes and errors. He just did not want to lose. As a result, he couldn't open up a path on the board for himself. He would probably give a try during tomorrow's game.

But even that was still not enough. It was not enough to ensure a victory!

He still couldn't overcome the critical issue. He still hadn't found the key to deal with PeterGo!

There had to be a way!

There must be!

But what was it?

Where did PeterGo's weakness lie?

All of a sudden, he heard the sound of the television come in from the living room.

It was the earlier press conference at China Qiyuan. Zhang Ye had left the premises right after the match and did not take any interviews. He did not join the press conference either, but the American representative had taken part in it.

He could hear what the American was saying. "The smartest person to come along in a century? And that was all he could do? Then I shall look forward to the second game of the match between Peter and him."

All he could do?

That was all he could do?

Zhang Ye chuckled!

You want to posture with me, eh?

The thought of marrying Old Wu if he could win the match? The

thought of fighting for the honor of humanity? The thought of fighting for the honor of the Go world? Zhang Ye shoved all those thoughts to the back of his mind!

Sure!

This bro will take it to the bitter end with you!

I'll show you bunch of foreigners just why they all call me "Face-smacking Zhang"!

### Chapter 1128 Found its weakness!

At night.

"The Americans are too arrogant!"

"Damn, you even claimed that that was all Teacher Zhang could do?"

"That's because you people haven't witnessed how he awesome he can be when he's in form!"

"When Teacher Zhang was out there slaughtering everyone, was he not better than you?"

"You only scored a victory over Teacher Zhang in Go! What's so great about that! Do you have to get this arrogant? If you're so great, why don't we compete in other categories! Teacher Zhang was not a pro Go player to begin with anyway!"

"That's right!"

"Do you dare compete in math?"

"Do you dare compete in calligraphy?"

"Do you dare compete in piloting a plane?"

"Face-smacking Zhang would be able to demolish you people in any other aspect! Fuck!"

There was a heated discussion about this topic and all kinds of noisy chatter in the news.

Some of the people who were angered by the foreigners gradually started cheering for Zhang Ye.

Others were still as pessimistic as before regarding the match. Whatever reason there was now, it could not erase the fact that Zhang Ye had indeed lost the first game.

• • •

At home.

Zhang Ye ate three bowls of rice in one sitting for dinner.

His father said, "Eat more to replenish your stamina!"

His mother said, "Right, you still have to fight it out with Peter tomorrow!"

His eldest younger sister scooped some food for him. "Brother, have more meat."

"Thanks." Zhang Ye did not refuse whatever they offered.

His fighting spirit had been reignited. Wasn't it just a lousy computer? He always believed that this was just something that was created by humans. No matter how good it was, it wouldn't possibly have the same wisdom as humans did. Even if it was better in many aspects and possessed a computational and analytical ability that humans could never reach, it would definitely still have a weakness somewhere. So all he had to do was find out what PeterGo's weakness was and score a victory in tomorrow's game. He could not afford to lose and had to at least even the score tomorrow so that he would stand a chance of winning!

Weakness?

What was it?

What was the weakness?

After dinner, he received a few calls from his friends.

Yao Jiancai: "Zhang'er, finish off that Peter!"

Zhang Ye: "I will."

Yao Jiancai: "You can do it, we're all standing behind you!"

There were also some friends who tried to persuade him to throw in the towel. They told him that since he was not a part of the world of Go, it was nothing disgraceful even if he had lost the game. It was already a very great result that he could play against PeterGo as well as he did!

But Zhang Ye did not say anything.

Throw in the towel? There was no such phrase as "throw in the towel" in his vocabulary!

Back in his bedroom, Zhang Ye turned on his computer and again studied the day's game against the artificial intelligence. He recreated the entire game three times over! From the looks of it, there were indeed some inaccuracies in his moves that ought to have much better alternatives to handle Peter's play. Of course, it was useless to say all this in retrospect since whatever mentioned wouldn't change anything. It was impossible for humans to have a foolproof plan while playing under such intense circumstances.

Besides, there was no such thing as a foolproof plan in Go since the game was just too complicated. There would be times when you think that a move would be great after taking everything into consideration. But a dozen moves later, it might turn out to be a bad one. Conversely, you might have played a bad move earlier which would turn out to be a good move by the middlegame when you suddenly realize that it had a decisive effect on the overall board state. All of it was possible due to the complexity of Go!

He studied the game for a full two hours.

The more he analyzed it, the more he could not find any weakness in Peter's game. It seemed like every move it made was done to restrict Zhang Ye's play. It always held a slight advantage over him across the whole board and was always a step ahead of Zhang Ye. With the exception of one move made early in the game, which was the only time that Zhang Ye had managed to restrict PeterGo's play. Hence, Zhang Ye focused on this move for a very long time.

Why did I go into the lead at this move?

Why couldn't Peter predict this move?

The more that Zhang Ye thought about it, the more he wondered

why. Logically, it shouldn't have happened. The AI's computational power was so strong and could predict so many moves ahead, shouldn't it be able to predict that move of his as well?

Zhang Ye's keen sense of awareness told him that the breakthrough might lie right here!

After some thought, Zhang Ye called Wu Changhe's house.

It was Li Qinqin who answered the call. "Hello?"

"Auntie, it's Little Zhang." Zhang Ye said: "Is Uncle home?"

Li Qinqin said: "He's around, let me get him."

A moment later, Wu Changhe's voice sounded: "What do you want?"

Zhang Ye immediately said: "Uncle, there's something I need to discuss with you. I was analyzing the 'knight's move' I played against Peter in the corner during the opening. Do you remember it?"

When Wu Changhe heard that it was about proper business, he said with a rare showing of patience: "I remember that. It was your only move that allowed you to gain an advantage in the game. Even Peter could not predict that."

Zhang Ye asked: "Why wasn't Peter able to see it?"

"Why?" Wu Changhe was a little taken aback. "Actually, none of us could predict those moves of yours during the opening as they were all very unorthodox. It was only after you made that knight's move that we realized the intention of your opening sequence, but we've never seen anyone use that joseki before. That was probably why Peter fell for it since it was unable to predict that you would make such a move. You could basically consider that a surprise move."

<sup>&</sup>quot;No one has used it before?"

"Yeah, that's right."

"Are you sure?"

"Of course I'm sure. I've played Go for many years."

A nonstandard joseki?

How is that possible!

After hanging up, Zhang Ye immediately went through a lot of game records online. Indeed, he really could not find any similar josekis to the one he had played! As everyone knows, Go has many types of josekis and sayings. There are so many kinds of them that they had long been agreed on and analyzed thoroughly by everyone. When Wu Changhe told Zhang Ye that no one has seen that joseki before, it surprised him greatly. That was because this joseki was a very standard way of playing and was commonly seen in games played in Zhang Ye's previous world. If he did not remember wrong, it should have been first played by a Go master some time during the '90s. After many years of trial and error, as well as being played in many different matches, a fixed pattern of play had been formed.

But in this world, no one had seen it before?

Due to the lack of such data, PeterGo couldn't calculate and predict the moves?

After being stunned for a few seconds, Zhang Ye banged his desk and stood up!

I got it!

I know what Peter's weakness is!

Zhang Ye laughed, "Hahahaha!"

His mother opened the bedroom door and went in. "What's the matter? Have you gone crazy?"

Zhang Ye immediately put on his clothes and said, "Mom, I can't talk now, I need to go out for a while!"

Zhang Ye went out to his car and drove straight to China Qiyuan.

Why did he head there? Why did he head there? Because this place kept the most complete information on Go!

...

At China Qiyuan.

It was past 9 PM.

Compared to the crowd during the day, it was a little quiet at the Qiyuan at night. Most of the lights were already off!

When Zhang Ye arrived, there were only a few employees working in the Qiyuan. Seeing that it was Zhang Ye, they opened the door and let him in. He quickly went to the Go association and pushed the door open!

There were still some people in there.

They were Chen Ying 7-dan, Xu Han 8-dan, and five other professional players. They were grouped together and looked like they were discussing the day's match between Zhang Ye and Peter.

Xu Han: "It's really too strong."

Chen Ying: "How can we beat it?"

When they heard the noise behind them, they turned around.

"Eh?"

"Professor Zhang?"

"What are you doing here?"

The several of them were stunned.

Zhang Ye immediately yelled out, "Quick, give me a hand! I need all the pro Go players' past game record information and josekis of this world!"

Xu Han was stunned. "All the matches? All the josekis?"

Chen Ying said in a daze, "Why do you need them?"

A 5th dan player said, "All the matches? That would be more than several hundred thousand or millions of games!"

"I need to learn them! Quick, give me a hand!" Zhang Ye looked around and asked, "Where is the library? Hurry up, bros! We don't have much time!"

The several of them got even more shocked!

Learn them?

Learn them right now?

Damn, it is already too late! The second game of the match will begin tomorrow! Even if anyone were to give a last-minute push, they would not do it as last minute as you are doing now!

# Chapter 1129 The Go masters from a different world!

The library was bustling with activity immediately.

Some of the information in this place had been entered into the computer and those that had not been were available on paper.

Xu Han said, "Are you serious about this?"

Zhang Ye ordered, "As long as there's a possibility that Peter has the data, I want them all!"

Chen Ying gasped and said, "That would be over a million records!"

"Even if there are over ten million records, I want them!" Zhang Ye said.

Xu Han gave a bitter smile as he powered on a computer. "Part of the information you need is on here. Have a look at them."

Zhang Ye instantly sat down. Xu Han had opened up a document on the computer that was titled "1980-2000 International Go Tournaments (Classified Information)"!

Zhang Ye only said, "I want all the records from before 1980 and after 2000 too! Along with the international tournaments, I want records of all the games played in our country, Japan, and Korea!" He then whipped back to looking at the screen as he continued going through the game records page by page. The speed at which he went through them was astounding!

On each page, the games were recorded with details of the players' names, the exact date it was played, and the endgame state. The order of each move was notated by a number written at the grid location of the game record.

One page!

Ten pages!

Twenty pages!

Within ten seconds, Zhang Ye had finished going through the game records.

Then he continued reading without a reduction in his browsing speed!

The professional players were dumbfounded at seeing this.

A 6th dan player said, "What can you learn by looking at the game records like this?"

"You won't be able to remember anything that way," Xu Han said, dabbing at his sweat.

None of them could understand what Zhang Ye was trying to do!

When she saw Zhang Ye keeping quiet, Chen Ying grit her teeth and said, "Let's get the information for Professor Zhang. He definitely has his reasons for doing so. We have to put up a last stand since we're at the point of no return. Do we have any other choice? We can only trust Professor Zhang's judgment! Try to look for as much info as you can!" She immediately headed off to search for more information!

"But..."

"Hai, fine!"

The several of them got down to business!

Soon after, stacks and stacks of documents were placed in front of Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye said as he browsed through them, "This is not enough, bring me more!"

Zhang Ye then bought numerous Memory Search Capsules from the Merchant Shop through his game ring. Then he closed his eyes and used the Memory Search Capsules to imprint all of the information that he went through earlier into his memory. This was his fastest way of memorizing things and something that no one else in this world could do except him!

It was already 11 PM!

Quick!

Hurry up!

Zhang Ye was not willing to waste even a second of his time as he focused all his effort here. As he was in a race against time, he had to try to remember as much information as he could!

Xu Han's hands were getting tired as he carried a big stack of documents over. "There's still all of these, is it enough?"

"It's still not enough!" Zhang Ye said.

Xu Han said, "They're still not enough?"

Chen Ying stared into Zhang Ye's eyes and said, "Have you really thought of a plan?"

Zhang Ye looked at them and said in a serious tone, "Trust me, I found a way to defeat it!"

Everyone was stunned!

"What?"

"Really?"

"Are you serious, Professor Zhang?"

Zhang Ye said, "What I need now is information. The more the better!"

Chen Ying got excited. "Alright! Alright! Just focus on reading! Leave the rest to us!" She quickly picked up her cell phone and made a call. "Hello, Hu Liang! Quickly come down to the Qiyuan to help out! You're sleeping? Stop sleeping! Get up and inform the others as well! Hurry up!"

Xu Han hesitated for a long time before stomping his foot.

"Damn! I won't be leaving today either! As long as you can beat PeterGo! I will do anything that you tell me to!"

The several of them started calling for reinforcements!

"Hello, Old He, quickly come to the Qiyuan!"

"Little Chen, stop sleeping! Come to the Qiyuan!"

"Come quickly, Professor Zhang has found a way!"

Before long, several cars drove into the Qiyuan's compound!

10 people...

20 people...

More and more people were arriving!

"What's the matter?"

"What exactly is going on?"

"It's this late. What are you all trying to do?"

"Don't ask! Help gather information!"

In the end, even President Dan Donghe and Wu Changhe were alarmed. They also hurriedly drove back to the Qiyuan in the middle of the night. When they heard that Zhang Ye had found a way to defeat Peter, the two of them were in disbelief!

He found a way to beat it?

And he's doing some last-minute studying?

W-Why did it sound so unreliable no matter how they heard it!

Wu Changhe said in a speechless manner, "Little Zhang, are you sure you can do it?"

Zhang Ye didn't open his shut eyes and ignored him.

Wu Changhe said angrily, "Hey this kid!"

Dan Donghe was silent for a moment, then he looked up and suddenly said, "Everyone, please put in some overtime and listen

closely to Professor Zhang's instructions! Give him whatever he needs! Whatever he needs!"

A deputy chairman objected, "But by doing this—"

"I will take responsibility if anything happens!" interrupted Dan Donghe. He took out a key and passed it to an employee beside him. "There's still some information available in my office. Bring it out for Professor Zhang!"

"Yes!" That employee slowly turned around.

Dan Donghe shouted, "Get moving!"

"Ah, yes!" Then the employee sprinted away!

Dan Donghe glanced in Zhang Ye's direction as he muttered to himself, "I really hope that you have found a way."

The Qiyuan's lights were all switched on!

The atmosphere turned unknowingly tense!

Throughout the night, a lot of people were running about trying to fetch more information for Zhang Ye. After he finished reading some of it, they would take it away and bring over a fresh batch of documents! No one believed that Zhang Ye could really finish reading them all and learn everything within a night. What was Go? It was an extremely time-consuming sport. For most who wished to step out from under the wings of their teachers, they would require at least a few years of learning. Even for those several genius master Go players who existed in the history of Go, it was unheard of that they could become invincible after just a night of learning!

From experience, this was not something that would work out!

Logically, this was also impossible to achieve!

But everyone unconditionally carried out Zhang Ye's requests. Because they no longer had a place to retreat to. In this moment, they would rather believe in a miracle, that the smartest person of the century would be able to bring about a miracle in the Go world! Time was ticking away.

Actually, they did not know that Zhang Ye was not actually learning, but eliminating. He was not trying to learn from all these game records and josekis. He just wanted to know which to avoid using!

PeterGo's analytical ability and "decision making" were actually based on the massive amount of accumulated information and dataset that it had. It kept a record of all the world's top Go players, professional Go players, games, and josekis, and could play any of Xiang Rong 9-dan's special moves at any time or easily resolve Shinji 9-dan's commonly used moves. It was only because of its massive trove of information that Peter obtained its superb Go skills. This was actually the strongest aspect of the artificial intelligence that humans could not hope to achieve. But at the same time, this was also the AI's Achilles' heel. Right now, Zhang Ye has discovered it!

The Go josekis of this world?

The Go techniques of this world?

I'll just not use any of them!

Xiang Rong?

Shinji?

Park Yuhee?

Li Yi?

Liu Hong?

Chen Ying?

I'll just not use any of their techniques!

I'll avoid all the josekis and playstyles that everyone has used before. This bro will use those moves and josekis that do not belong to this world to play against you!

Do you know Gu Li?

Do you know Nie Weiping?

Do you know Li Changgao?

Oh, that's right.

All of you definitely do not know Ke Jie!

## Chapter 1130 The second game of the war between humans and machines!

The next morning.

It was getting closer and closer to the start of the game.

On the Central TV Sports Channel: "The focus on the war between humans and machines has reached an unprecedented level of attention after yesterday's game. This match has had the most attention, trendiness, and viewership rating in the history of Go. In another hour, our station will continue the live broadcast of the second game of the match between famous math professor Zhang Ye versus the artificial intelligence program Peter. Will Peter continue to be victorious and win the final game, or will Professor Zhang turn defeat into victory and even the score to bring us to a third game? We'll see you at 9 AM on Central TV Sports!"

On Weibo, a number of people were showing their support for Zhang Ye.

Famous A-list movie star Ning Lan posted on Weibo early in the morning: "Zhang'er, you can do it!"

Central TV Documentary Channel's Ha Qiqi: "Director Zhang, show them how awesome you are!"

Crosstalk actor Yao Jiancai: "Everyone, let's cheer for Zhang Ye!"

Singer Liao Yiqi (Spinach): "We must definitely show our support for Teacher Zhang's match!"

A lot of people were waiting and watching TV. Although the live broadcast had not started yet, some commentators and experts were analyzing yesterday's game in the live broadcast studio.

An expert: "We can see that Zhang Ye was always on the back foot."

The host: "Then does that mean it will be very difficult for him to win today as well?"

The expert: "It looks to be that way. But I'll still support Zhang Ye. He is the Go world's last line of defense! We can't lose!"

The host: "Then let's cheer for Professor Zhang, for Go, and for humanity!"

• • •

The public was heatedly discussing this as well!

Reporters had surrounded China Qiyuan!

Some of the citizens even organized a spontaneous cheerleading squad and were screaming loudly outside the Qiyuan!

However, it was pretty quiet within the Qiyuan, and the atmosphere inside could only be described as gloomy.

Dan Donghe asked, "What time is it?"

"It's 8 o'clock," Chen Ying said tiredly.

Hu Liang asked, "Should we wake Professor Zhang up?"

Li Qinqin, who had just arrived, said, "Let him sleep awhile longer. You guys too. I heard that you were busy all night. Go home and rest."

"We're not tired, ma'am," Xu Han said as he paced up and down.

Zhang Ye had studied the information until 6 in the morning before going off to get some rest. As the game was slated to begin at 9 AM, he had to reserve three hours of rest to recharge himself and replenish his stamina and mental fitness. As for the professional Go players and Qiyuan staff who had assisted Zhang Ye throughout the night, they did not yet leave to go home. All of them stayed behind and nervously stood around with wide eyes. Today's game was extremely important to them!

Awhile later.

Someone suddenly shouted, "Professor Zhang is up!"

Zhang Ye yawned as he walked in. "Good morning, everyone."

"How did you sleep?" Li Qinqin asked anxiously.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Quite well."

Dan Donghe said, "You only slept for two hours. You should sleep a bit longer."

"No need, two hours is enough for me." Zhang Ye's mental state was great. His constitution was different from most ordinary people as he could recover after resting for just a little.

Wu Changhe had also gone to catch some z's at one of the Qiyuan's rest areas. As the game was about to start, he fast walked over. "You in good shape? Think you can win?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I'll give it a try."

He had done all that he needed to do. Although Zhang Ye did not have the time to memorize all the game records, a majority of the crucial games were photocopied into his mind.

He had said that he would give it a try yesterday as well, but still lost in the end.

When they asked him again today, he was still saying that he would give it a try?

Everyone looked at him with pessimism.

Dan Donghe patted his shoulder and said, "Just do your best!"

Li Qinqin added, "Don't be too pressured. It's alright even if you lose."

Zhang Ye said, "OK."

Dan Donghe looked at his watch, then turned around to the staff and said, "Let the reporters in."

The reporters were allowed in.

The Americans were already in the Qiyuan.

The American representative said to his assistant, "Have you booked the plane tickets?"

His assistant said, "They've been booked. The tickets are for tonight's flight, but the match is still—"

The American representative laughed and said, "We'll be done today. Do you guys think that Zhang Ye can take a game?"

At this, the Americans laughed and eased into a very relaxed mood. "Our product has become famous. If we can sweep the Go world with a perfect record, more people will be asking to cooperate with us. Quite a few companies have already contacted us, in fact."

The American representative nodded. "Very good. A perfect record? It will definitely be a perfect record! Peter will not lose even one game, nor will it be allowed to lose! We will create a legend!"

The pregame interview began.

Numerous reporters surrounded the American team.

The Xinhua News Agency: "I heard that your plane tickets have been booked for a flight for tonight?"

The American representative glanced at him and did not dodge the question. "Yes."

From the Beijing Times: "If Professor Zhang wins today, then the third game—"

"That won't happen," interrupted the American representative.

A female reporter said, "You sound very confident of that."

"That's right." The American representative said, "The match is as good as decided because Peter is the most advanced AI ever. Its analytical and thinking abilities are not things humans can possibly compete with. The entire world should have noticed

Peter's strength by now. I can assuredly tell you that in the entire world of Go, nobody can win against Peter, whether it's today or in the future. The only thing that could beat Peter would be a similar kind of AI."

A male reporter probed, "What kind of projects will Peter take part in in the future?"

A young reporter asked, "Will Peter continue to challenge the intelligence of humans?"

A lot of the reporters were following the American representative closely and asking all sorts of questions.

Whereas not too many people went to interview Zhang Ye.

It could be seen that even though a lot of people were cheering for Zhang Ye, they were doing so because they stood on humanity's side. But with respect to the outcome of the match, not too many were optimistic about Zhang Ye's chances.

Zhang Ye and the Qiyuan's people overheard the Americans' conversation.

Yu Yingyi and some of the reporters from the Beijing Times were interviewing Zhang Ye.

Yu Yingyi raised her microphone and asked, "Is there anything you would like to say?"

Zhang Ye answered with a chuckle, "Yingyi, help me to pass a message to the Americans."

"What message?" Yu Yingyi said in surprise.

"Tell them to change their flight date." Then Zhang Ye slowly made his way to the game area and went up to the two international referees. He pointed at the computer and said, "I want to play directly against this thing."

The two referees were stunned. "What do you mean?"

Zhang Ye said, "I want to play directly against it. There's no need

for a middleman to help place the stones."

There was no need for the stones and a Go board?

You want to play directly against the computer?

Zhang Ye's request immediately attracted a lot of astonished looks!

The international referees went to seek the Americans' consent.

The Americans could not understand what the opponent was thinking. Didn't you members of the Go world always like playing Go using real stones and a Go board? Weren't you all accustomed to the touch of the stones?

The American representative glanced at Zhang Ye. "We have no objections."

Wu Changhe stopped Zhang Ye. "What are you trying to do?"

Xiang Rong 9-dan also came over. "Why do that?"

Zhang Ye smiled. "I like to play against my opponents face to face."

The machine that Peter resided in was a very normal computer equipped with a mouse and keyboard. However, Zhang Ye did not know whether there was any more advanced technology inside of it. He went over to take a seat as he looked up and stared at Peter's screen for a long time.

A tense feeling descended upon the venue!

Somehow, the stakes had been raised!

An employee said, "Interviews will end now. Can we please have the reporters leave?"

The reporters looked back with every step as they departed.

The people from China Qiyuan also gave a final look to Zhang Ye before they headed out to the spectator room next door. From here, they watched the big screen with all kinds of expressions on

their faces!

The live broadcast had already begun!

There were still two minutes to the start of the game!

The Qiyuan went quiet!

The netizens went quiet!

• • •

Zhang Ye's father clenched his fists and said, "Son!"

His mother stared at the television and said, "Come on, you can do it!"

Zhang Yuanqi was alone at home. She was drinking wine as she was caught the live broadcast on TV.

Dean Pan Yang of Peking University's School of Mathematical Sciences: "Little Zhang, it's all on you!"

Yao Jiancai: "It's all over if you lose again!"

Fan Wenli: "Will he win?"

Chen Guang: "I feel that Zhang Ye is a little different today."

Wu Zeqing reached her workplace. When she entered the office, she said to Secretary Bai, "I have work to do in the morning. If anyone looks for me, schedule them for the afternoon." Then she turned on the Online Go Server's live broadcast and waited quietly with arms folded.

Every citizen in the country was watching television at this moment!

Many Japanese and Korean citizens were also focused on this game!

Counting down:

Three...

Two...

One...

The international referees started the game timer.

The second game of the match began!

Zhang Ye was all smiles today. He was feeling completely different from yesterday's cautiousness and seriousness!

Come on.

I'll let you witness the fruits of this bro's overnight labor!

I'll let you witness the special techniques of the 9-dan Go players from this bro's previous world!

## Chapter 1131 A strange opening that dumbfounds everyone!

During the live broadcast.

Central TV Sports Channel's host, Yu Yingyi, announced loudly, "The match has begun. Professor Zhang is going to play first as the black stones while Peter takes White. Now then, let me introduce our guest commentator for today, the currently highest ranked female Go player in the world, Chen Ying 7-dan. Let's welcome her."

Chen Ying said, "Hello, everyone."

Yu Yingyi said, "For today's game, do you, Teacher Chen, have any predictions on how it'll turn out?"

Chen Ying said, "It's hard to predict, but this is a do-or-die battle for Professor Zhang."

Yu Yingyi looked at the screen curiously. "We can see that even though Professor Zhang is playing as Black, he has not made his first move yet. No one knows what he's thinking about right now. Teacher Chen, does Professor Zhang have a strategy in place for today's game?"

Chen Ying said, "I don't know what Professor Zhang's strategy is, but according to our earlier analysis, he should mainly be adopting a careful and steady approach. After all, his opponent is a machine and its computational power is too strong. It doesn't allow us any room for mistakes. If we want to win the game, we'll first have to make sure that every one of our moves can stand up to scrutiny. Otherwise..."

At this moment, Zhang Ye took control of the mouse and clicked on the Go board on the computer screen with a smile.

Yu Yingyi said, "Professor Zhang has made his move!"

When Chen Ying saw it, she exclaimed, "What?!"

The Americans were stunned!

Those in the spectator room were also stunned!

Wu Changhe nearly cursed out loud. "What the heck is he doing!"

"This, this..." Li Yi 9-dan gasped!

Hu Liang was close to tears. "What kind of a blunder is that?"

Xu Han panicked. "Isn't Professor Zhang messing around this way! What in the world is this?"

A female pro player shrieked, "Is Professor Zhang not fully awake yet? How could he make a move like that?"

Even Xiang Rong 9-dan was stunned!

The home viewers who knew how to play Go were all scared out of their wits!

In the focus of the live broadcast camera, Yu Yingyi exclaimed in surprise, "Teacher Chen, w-why haven't I seen an opening like this before? What kind of playstyle is this? What kind of strategy does he have?"

Chen Ying nearly fell out of her chair. She was thinking to herself how it was not only Yu Yingyi who hadn't seen this before, even she herself had never fucking come across something like it either. "For this opening, we'll have to watch and see how it goes from here. From the looks of it, Professor Zhang did not make a mistake with that move. But as for what kind of opening this is, I do not know. In the entire development of Go up until now, there shouldn't be anything left to talk about when it comes to openings. The conventional ways of playing and board shapes have been generalized. For anything that falls outside of those, we just call them unconventional openings. But I can confirm that there isn't this type of opening in the consolidated list of unconventional openings either. Professor Zhang's first move was played slightly

above the board side star point at 11-5. Th-This is just too unexpected."

Yu Yingyi said, "Look, Peter is also clearly wondering about that move. It still hasn't responded with a move yet."

Zhang Ye's first move had shocked everyone!

However, he didn't seem like he was aware. Instead, he crossed his legs and wiggled his toes carefreely. He was even tapping his finger rhythmically without a care in the world against the mouse in his hand. It didn't feel like this was a critical match that would decide the life and death of the Go world. It was as though he was playing the game from home or something.

The Americans started laughing mockingly after the sense of shock faded!

What a layman!

He is totally such a layman!

Do you even know how to play Go? Making a move in that position for your opening?

What kind of playstyle is this? Are you trying out a suicidal opening? Ha!

Soon, Peter replied with a move!

Yu Yingyi quickly said, "Peter has made its move!"

Chen Ying 7-dan explained, "Peter has made a move at the bottom of the board. This is a very good response. If Professor Zhang does not take defensive action, he'll immediately fall very far behind right from the start of the game. I still don't understand why his first move was placed there. But what I know for sure is that Black's second move definitely won't repeat the same—"

Before she finished.

Zhang Ye lightly clicked the mouse and placed another stone!

Chen Ying was dumbstruck. "This...a 6-4 point? What kind of playstyle is this?"

Some of the Go players on the Internet were going crazy!

"Holy shit!"

"Is this even a coherent opening?"

"This has got to be a fucking suicidal opening!"

"What is Professor Zhang thinking?"

"He's making blunders right at the start?"

"This opening of his is just too goddamn unconventional! It's the fucking most unconventional opening of unconventional openings there are! What on earth is he trying to do?"

"I'm gonna cry!"

"This is just too unconventional!"

"He's going to lose this game as well! If Peter grabs hold of the position, it'll be over!"

If even the amateur Go players could see it, then the pro players understood even better!

Wu Changhe was ready to curse. "Did this kid forget to take his medicine?"

Li Qinqin said, "Who knows if Little Zhang might have a purpose?"

Liu Hong 9-dan said, "What purpose could he possibly have? He's walking on a knife's edge! Besides, there has never been such a way of playing ever before in the many centuries of Go!"

Hu Liang paled. "Peter has played its stone!"

"It's over!"

"It really played at that position as expected!"

"Professor Zhang has been forced into passive play!"

But when they looked at Zhang Ye, they noticed that he did not have an expression that looked like he had made the wrong moves. Instead, he was grinning. Almost without needing to think, he played his third stone.

The Americans were smirking and sneering, but those smirks quickly froze!

Wait!

This...

What is going on here?

Chen Ying didn't know how to react either. "Professor Zhang has played another 6-4 point move? This way of playing has really never been seen before. If that's what it is, then...Eh? Wait a second, why does this opening look a little familiar?" She suddenly froze, then cried out, "Isn't this the 'three star points in a row 'opening? But he pushed the three star points up and in by two coordinate points?" She suddenly got excited. "Professor Zhang is not playing randomly! He is definitely not playing randomly for this game's opening! This...this...Peter has to stop him! If Professor Zhang can join up the 'three star points in a row,' the upper side of the board will be his to take!"

Xiang Rong's expression suddenly changed. He said, "He did that on purpose for his opening!"

Dan Donghe pointed at the screen. "Look at that, Little Zhang is..."

After just a few moves, everyone suddenly realized that this opening was much too fearsome. It could even be described as devious!

Peter also realized this and immediately went back to stop it!

But it was already too late!

Zhang Ye placed down his stone for Black's fourth move.

In order to wreck its opponent's plan, Peter's fourth move had to be placed at the 5-4 point in the upper right corner!

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye thought for a moment, then quickly placed his fifth move at the 6-4 point in the lower right corner of the board!

Peter's fifth move came in with a piercing attack!

Zhang Ye smiled and turned it aside!

Peter immediately ran out of steam!

The audience was shell-shocked!

Yu Yingyi was stunned. "This play!"

No one had expected it to be this way!

The present array of stones on the Go board dumbfounded them all!

Chen Ying became so excited that she could feel her blood coursing through her veins. "This is brilliant! Brilliant!" She explained to the viewers, "After White's knight's move on move four, if Black had continued to occupy and join up with the upper right corner's 6-4 point to form a fighting shape in response, White would've just had to make a large knight's move to cut him off for its fifth move, and the black stones in that area would have been snubbed. Instead, Professor Zhang turned his attention to taking the 6-4 point at the lower right side. He seems to be intending to construct another 'three stars in a row' at the bottom of the board. After White's fifth move attack, Black did not immediately take a position on the side of the board because he wanted to leave the opponent with a dilemma: If Peter chose to play on the sides of the board, which are not efficient for scoring, in order to break Professor Zhang's setup, then so be it. Professor Zhang could always continue to build up in the upper right corner and take all three corners under his control! If Peter is not willing to take this loss, then Professor Zhang would be able to form the shape that he

desires! If Professor Zhang really manages to connect the desired shape that he wants, and which we still have no idea of what exactly it is, even if we haven't come to that part of the game yet, I would still imagine it to be absolutely terrifying!"

It went quiet!

The entire Qiyuan was silent!

Chen Ying stared fixedly at the screen and said, "How will Peter choose to proceed? What will Peter do now?"

One minute.

Three minutes.

Five minutes passed.

Peter made a compromise!

It could only compromise as it did not dare to take the risk!

Sunken expressions were on the faces of the Americans!

Many of the professional Go players in the spectator room cheered at this moment. It was as though they had finally released all of the pent-up stress from these recent days!

Xiang Rong 9-dan cheered, "Great play!"

Wu Changhe couldn't conceal his excitement either. "Good! Alright! Great!"

"This is so awesome!"

"Professor Zhang, that was a good one!"

"I've got the goosebumps!"

"My heavens!"

"Professor Zhang is so awesome!"

Chen Ying continued saying loudly inside the commentary booth, "Peter is now at a disadvantage! It has been taken advantage of by Professor Zhang greatly in less than a dozen moves at the start of the game! This is a really unconventional opening that has never been seen before! What an unconventional opening! What kind of playstyle is this? What on earth is it?"

. . .

Zhang Ye's mother said dumbfounded, "Little Ye is in the lead?"

His father shouted, "That computer program has been tricked by our son!"

Chen Guang said, "What the!"

Yao Jiancai laughed heartily, "Hahahaha! You're really something, kid!"

The same boisterous reactions were seen online!

"He's in the lead!"

"Teacher Zhang has gained the initiative!"

"Fuck, Peter has been tricked in less than a dozen moves!"

"What kind of playstyle is that?"

"Teacher Zhang really is a fucking goddamn genius!"

"Don't get happy too soon! The game isn't over yet!"

"Right! Let's continue to watch!"

"Don't fucking tell me that Teacher Zhang might really be able to win against that AI?"

• •

A playstyle that no one had ever seen before!

An opening that no one had ever witnessed before!

There were also many others who were wondering what in the world they had seen!

Even Xiang Rong, Wu Changhe, Li Yi, and the others were confused by it!

If Zhang Ye could hear the commentary outside the game room, and if he could see all the heated discussions by the netizens, he would surely answer them with one line: This is what you call the "Apollo Opening "! It was a famous and old unconventional opening from his previous world! Naturally, the people of this world would never have come across it before!

## Chapter 1132 An inconceivable way of playing The Cosmic Style!

In Japan and Korea.

Some of the Go websites were holding a simulcast of the game.

"That's impossible. Didn't that guy called Zhang Ye suffer a miserable defeat yesterday?"

"Just watch and you'll understand!"

Shortly after the game started, and in less than a dozen moves, Peter had been forced into a compromise and had to give up several points just like that. What did this mean? Anyone who knew a bit of Go would most definitely be astonished!

In all the centuries of recorded Go history and even further back, in its development until the modern times, all the different types of strategies had already been analyzed and studied thoroughly. All the different playstyles had already been seen before as well. Unless it was a game between a pro Go player and an amateur one, there wasn't much likelihood that a large disparity would grow between the two sides within just a dozen moves. Even if there was, it wouldn't be so clear-cut. It would only start showing itself gradually as the match progressed. If such a great disparity really showed up within just a dozen moves, it would go without saying that it was sure to be a game between an expert and a beginner.

But Peter was clearly not a beginner. Much to the contrary, it had

<sup>&</sup>quot;Nani?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Quick, come and see this!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;This opening is super godly!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;The Chinese have shown their might!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;The AI is losing really badly now!"

defeated the top three Go players of the world, so that made it even more astonishing to everyone!

It didn't even take a dozen moves!

Zhang Ye had done it in less than ten moves!

This upset a lot of people's understanding of Go!

Some people even thought, If anyone could successfully learn this playstyle of Zhang Ye's, then wouldn't they become invincible in terms of the opening of a Go game?

But little did they know they had misjudged it.

The Apollo Opening. Even in his previous world, this opening was not that popular. In fact, hardly anyone still used it. It was almost never played anymore because this type of opening had been researched and analyzed by many people. All of its variations and ways to fight it had been thoroughly explored. Moreover, the Apollo Opening had several fatal flaws. It was never seen as a mature or stable opening. But why did Zhang Ye dare to use it? Because this world has never seen it before. Therefore, they wouldn't know how to crack it!

Zhang Ye was harassing Peter like this specifically because it had no records of this opening!

Indeed, this strange opening had allowed him to gain an advantage right at the start of the game!

Zhang Ye followed up in hot pursuit as he immediately made an attack next!

Peter defended against the move.

Zhang Ye took the chance to occupy a position.

Peter could only bump in response.

However, he did not manage to complete the Apollo Opening. Because of Peter's compromise, he did not manage to get to the final killing move. But Peter's compromise had created an opportunity for Zhang Ye.

In the commentary booth.

Yu Yingyi said excitedly, "Professor Zhang still has an utter advantage!"

Chen Ying 7-dan had been feeling quite tired as she had not slept for the entire night. But with this game's opening, she was injected with energy, as if given an adrenaline shot. She yelled, "Yes! After another five moves from both sides, Professor Zhang is still pressing Peter with his play! Peter is in a very passive state. It has no way to deal with this for the time being!"

Yu Yingyi said, "So if they continue to play, will he win?"

Chen Ying replied, "Hmm, you can't put it that way. Peter's standard of play has already been witnessed by everyone. It once reversed a disadvantage on the board and emerged victorious. Also, we're only in the opening. What'll happen later is difficult to predict. There's also something that we ought to pay attention to. See, Peter might have lost quite a few points over here and here in the opening, but this opening by Professor Zhang is not that good either. We still have to see how it develops from here. Black's fifth move, there, is still very vulnerable to being attacked."

Then, less than two moves later, Zhang Ye suddenly hesitated.

He tapped the table as he considered his options for a while before playing.

In response, Peter made a good move by extending one of its frameworks. It helped Peter counterattack and was a very clever move. It was so clever that even many of the Go players watching TV could not help but praise it!

Chen Ying's expression shifted. "Good move! Peter's absolute strength can be seen in this move alone! It was no fluke that it could defeat so many of the world's top Go players. Now that Professor Zhang's attack has been defended against, Peter is unleashing a counterattack! It is Professor Zhang who will be finding it difficult from here on out!"

The American representative heaved a sigh of relief and smiled.

The atmosphere turned tense once again!

Zhang Ye clicked his tongue. It looked like he wouldn't be able to finish off PeterGo with just the opening. That would be too unrealistic.

Zhang Ye had to counter with a stand.

Then, Peter played its next move in the corner!

Chen Ying said with a sinking voice, "It's Peter's turn to play its opening! After this position here has been occupied, Professor Zhang's position over there is not going to be easy to expand. Although Professor Zhang is still ahead in the scoring, his opponent is catching up in the momentum. If he doesn't handle the situation well, he might just throw away that lead!"

Both sides played their stones.

It could be seen that Peter no longer needed the long thinking time that it took to consider its moves during the opening. It was playing fluidly now and had entered into the part of the game it was good at and most familiar with. Peter did not need much processing time as it rapidly made its moves. All of them were quite strong plays that caused a lot of trouble for Zhang Ye!

Wu Changhe said, "This is bad!"

Dan Donghe said anxiously, "The momentum has swung the wrong way!"

Xiang Rong 9-dan said, "Let's see how he's going to deal with this! We're now headed into the critical part of the game!"

Hu Liang yelled, "Come on!"

Yes, it had come to yet another critical juncture!

Zhang Ye's choice here was going to be very important. If he chose to fight Peter in the corner, he was bound to lose badly as his opponent had finished setting up its opening. But if he were to avoid fighting in this corner, it would be very difficult to play later on. Zhang Ye's opening was not exactly that good and its weaknesses were already starting to show.

Everyone at the venue was waiting in anticipation!

The home viewers were also waiting!

How would he play from here?

Where would Zhang Ye play his next move?

Zhang Ye narrowed his eyes. If he took Peter head on, things would not be any better than it was yesterday. In this case, considering that Peter's Go play was at the peak and how it could process far more variations than humans, he would inevitably lose to Peter's data if he played on like this. It might start playing some of those moves by Xiang Rong 9-dan or the like, then predict Zhang Ye's playstyle with big data analytics on his moves. Zhang Ye couldn't get dragged along by PeterGo anymore. This bro will not give in and play those moves you're familiar with!

OK!

Let's do this then!

I'll show you what I'm capable of!

Zhang Ye gripped the mouse, then chuckled as he played his move!

This stone was actually played on the upper side at a high position!

Peter was probably stunned. It made a knight's move in return.

Zhang Ye calmly clicked the left mouse button and placed another stone on the Go board at a position that no one could understand!

For a moment, countless people were once again dumbfounded!

Wu Changhe cried out, "Dammit! What is he trying to do this time?"

Xu Han stared dumbstruck. "This...What kind of move is this?"

"What kind of playstyle is this?" Hu Liang asked as he looked to Xiang Rong 9-dan.

Xiang Rong looked at the screen as he shook his head while smiling wryly. "I've never come across a move like this either."

Chen Ying explained in surprise, "What is this? The choices that Professor Zhang made are beyond everyone's expectations. Those two stones seemed to be played with the intent of controlling the center of the board!"

Even Yu Yingyi could see that something was wrong. "Why didn't he fight for the corner?"

The fellow Go players watching TV were floored!

"Fuck!"

"What sort of a strategy is that?"

"What kind of a new fucking playstyle is that?"

"This has absolutely got to be a blunder!"

"You don't intend to fight for the corner?"

"What's the point of fighting for the center?"

"Seeking Death Style?"

"Incoherent Style?"

"Why do you keep playing moves that are so illogical!"

Zhang Ye's mother was also getting anxious, "What's going on with Little Ye? Are his moves no good?"

His father said, "Those couple of moves were impossible to understand!"

"Ah?" His mom was starting to get nervous about the board state.

No one could understand it!

The fellow Go players could not understand it!

And probably the rest of the professional Go players around the world could not understand it either!

In Go, practical benefits are largely focused upon in play. That is to say, the mainstream way of playing would be to start off on the third line for the opening so that territory could be built up at the sides of the board and the corners. Everyone usually played this way. Most victories were usually decided upon by the fight for territory at the sides and corners where the most hotly contested divisions on the Go board were. This was the most researched and studied area in Go!

As a result, these couple of moves by Zhang Ye had simply left everyone feeling incredulous!

An opening that focused on surrounding the center? Ignoring the corners? Aren't you an oddball for playing these moves!

What are you doing?

Do you mean to give up?

Then why don't you just resign? Why do you have to...

No one could sense the danger, not even Peter. There was no such playstyle in its dataset. This was something that no one had ever seen before!

Peter was still playing its moves according to the usual logical process!

Zhang Ye calmly placed a stone at another high position. This high position stone was actually not fighting for the corner territory. In fact, it had nothing to do with it at all. It was still surrounding the framework in the center of the board. Or perhaps, Zhang Ye was trying to surround the entire Go board!

This time, Peter hesitated for two minutes before playing its next move.

Zhang Ye smiled. Then he placed another stone at yet another high position without even thinking!

I know that you must have never come across such a playstyle!

Now that my opening is complete, let's have a good game!

Chen Ying was unable to give any further commentary. She could not at all understand what was going on!

To many of the top professional Go players in the spectator room, they could only look at the screen in confusion. Seeing the stones being played move after move, they were all puzzled!

Peter countered with an extension!

Zhang Ye played at yet another high position!

Peter bumped!

Zhang Ye pushed on with his high position!

A "three star points in a row" was joined up!

After several dozen more moves!

There was suddenly no reaction from Peter!

At this moment, a lot of people finally realized that something was wrong!

Yu Yingyi said in surprise, "This...What is going on?"

Chen Ying was so astonished that she had broken out into a sweat. "Why has Peter been pinned down? What is happening? Just, just what is happening in the center?"

She was dumbfounded and couldn't understand what had happened. Meanwhile, Peter seemed to have been relegated to a passive state!

Hu Liang exclaimed, "Heavens above!"

Xu Han stared with wide eyes. "How? How did it turn out this way?"

Many pro players were stunned!

The netizens also started crying out!

"Holy fuck!"

"My titanium dog eyes have been blinded!"

"What am I seeing here?"

"Is...is this some kind of sorcery?"

"What kind of spell did Zhang Ye cast?"

"He has regained the lead! Zhang Ye has PeterGo pinned down again!"

Before this, they had thought that those careless moves of Zhang Ye's would definitely have thrown his entire opening into disarray. They felt that he would definitely suffer a crushing defeat to Peter. Because in their opinion, as long as Peter firmly occupied the corner frameworks, there should have been no surprise to this game. In the dozens of moves played so far, they had seen for themselves just how messy Zhang Ye's opening had become and could not see a proper style to it. But at some point in time and after one of his moves, they discovered to their sudden horror that the one who was forced into a dead end turned out to be Peter! They didn't know how or when, but more than half of Peter's stones were suddenly surrounded by a "big net" that Zhang Ye had "cast" over the board. The other half of its stones were also blocked out by Zhang Ye. Peter's framework and territory in the corner were gradually surrounded by Zhang Ye instead!

This "big net" was simply terrifying!

It could encircle the inside!

And it could also defend the outside!

And if Peter tried to invade, Zhang Ye would be able to kill off its

approaches immediately!

For the rest of the time, Zhang Ye wouldn't even need to fight against Peter. He could just spend his moves on weaving an even tighter net!

Two stars in a row!

Three stars in a row!

Four stars in a row!

This never before seen playing style had shocked everyone!

## Chapter 1133 Peter gets dealt a blow!

Fellow Japanese and Korean Go players were going crazy!

"What have I witnessed?"

"Go can even be played like this?"

"How amazing! The Chinese are incredible!"

"Just what kind of genius would it take to be able to think of playing this way?"

"I've never seen it before! I've really never seen something like that before!"

"I have a hunch that this method is going to create a new style of playing!"

"How can there be someone so strong?"

"He, he's really not a pro Go player?"

On the live broadcast.

Chen Ying 7-dan exclaimed, "I've got it!"

Yu Yingyi quickly asked, "So how'd he do it?"

Chen Ying quickly turned to operate the computer in front of her. "Switch the view and have a look over here. Let's go back a few moves...a little further back...OK, right here. This was the critical juncture that we talked about earlier where everyone was waiting for Professor Zhang to make his move. If it were any other player, they would definitely have chosen to attack this corner here. Or if not, they would play at this position here. But Professor Zhang did not choose either of those moves. Look at this, everyone. He played his stone over here, and then another one over here!"

Yu Yingyi could not understand. "What does that mean?"

Chen Ying said, "Professor Zhang was setting up his frameworks!

Ever since this move here, Peter stepped into the maze that is Professor Zhang's frameworks! All of us had been taken in by Professor Zhang as well! It wasn't until this move that we finally saw that Peter had seemingly realized something. But it was already too late! Professor Zhang had already completed his setup! All of the later moves were centered around the black stones from earlier! Every move he made seemed quite casual and not carefully considered, but they were actually all very well-thought-out moves. For example, Black's 23rd move could only be placed in this position. There's no room for deviation at all!"

Yu Yingyi asked, "But what's behind Professor Zhang's decisions to play those stones at those places?"

"Influence," Chen Ying said.

Yu Yingyi was taken aback. "Influence?"

Chen Ying was finding it hard to believe too, but it was right before her eyes. "To play high approach moves, using strong attacks that are supported by the balance of the board's situation—that's the essence of Professor Zhang's playstyle!"

Li Qinqin praised, "How did he think of that!"

Wu Changhe said excitedly, "Good! That was a good one, kid!"

Li Yi 9-dan said in shock, "This way of playing is amazing!"

Dan Donghe remarked, "He's really a genius! This is what a true genius is!"

When Tian Weiwei saw this, he kept quiet. He was once hailed as the genius who would succeed Xiang Rong in the Go world. The public had very high expectations of him and often extolled him as well, so much so that even Tian Weiwei himself felt that he was really a Go genius. But as Tian Weiwei witnessed today's game, he realized that he was probably nothing. In the face of Zhang Ye, no one could claim they were a genius!

So this was Zhang Ye?

This was who the smartest person in today's world was?

In the past, Tian Weiwei only had two idols. One of them was Wu Changhe, the other was Xiang Rong. But today, he added another person to that list of people he idolized!

Having seen this game, no one could not be moved!

Li Yi.

Liu Hong.

Xu Han.

Many pro Go players were asking themselves what they would do if they were sitting across from Zhang Ye. If this game had been between Zhang Ye and them, they would definitely have resigned by this point in the game!

• • •

Back to the game.

Peter's went deep in the tank!

Five minutes!

Ten minutes!

There was no sign of activity from it!

The Americans looked surly and sullen!

"Dammit!"

"How could this be happening!"

"Don't worry, believe in Peter!"

"Yeah, Peter will definitely have a way to deal with this!"

On the other hand, Zhang Ye looked carefree. He knew that his playstyle had stunned Peter!

This playstyle had a very cool name, the Cosmic Style, and was pioneered by Takemiya Masaki. Of course, Takemiya Masaki preferred to refer to it as the "Natural Style," but everyone was

accustomed to calling it by the former name. The Cosmic Style was very famous in Zhang Ye's previous world and was different from the Apollo Opening. It was a more perfected style of play and had made great contributions to the Go world. This way of playing was highly popular at one time and was even used later by quite a few top players in key international tournaments. As for the people of this world, they naturally would not have seen it before This style was extremely difficult to play and would require more than just a high approach in the opening to work. It was also very demanding of the player and could even be considered harsh on them, as it would require a player to have a very strong awareness of the overall board state and be skilled at setting up an opening!

Of course, due to the strong attacks made in the game's opening, Zhang Ye's Cosmic Style of play was not in perfect shape, and there were still some weaknesses in it. But this was how Go was. No one could play perfectly. As long as he could deal Peter a blow, Zhang Ye would accomplish his goal.

Yu Yingyi said, "Peter has still not made its move!"

Chen Ying said loudly, "That's because it's discovered just how fearsome this style is! It needs to fight back! Although it might not look like the much difference in their scores, Peter is losing to Professor Zhang by too much in terms of influence!"

• • •

Beijing Television.

The Go commentator cried out, "The scale of victory has tipped toward us! This is amazing! Professor Zhang is incredible today!"

• •

On the Online Go Server.

The commentator was howling, "PeterGo has been stunned! It has been sorely beaten by Professor Zhang! I can already see that the dawn of victory is upon us! This is the closest that humanity

has come to victory in the war between humans and machines! I don't know how to describe what I'm feeling! Professor Zhang, you can do it!"

. . .

On a Korean webcast.

A Korean 8th dan Go player was explaining, "Peter has met with unprecedented trouble! This is the first time its getting pushed to such an extreme by humanity!"

• •

The game timer was ticking.

Half an hour had gone by!

Since half an hour ago, Peter hadn't shown any signs of activity!

This time, it was Peter that was faced with an extremely important decision to make!

Zhang Ye yawned. Looking at how there was no response from the computer, he was starting to get impatient. He even forgot that he was currently on a national broadcast. He settled his hands onto the keyboard and sent a message.

Everyone was startled.

Yu Yingyi stared at him. "Eh, what is he doing?"

Chen Ying blinked and said, "Professor Zhang is typing something?"

Yu Yingyi quickly said, "Let's switch to the feed in the game room!"

Everyone who was watching the broadcast on TV saw what Zhang Ye typed!

Zhang Ye: "What are you doing? The flowers are wilting as I wait!"

Everyone was floored!

The host was floored!

The Americans looked angry!

The eyebrows of the American representative jumped!

The two international referees had an impulse to vomit blood. The two of them looked at one another and did not know if they should stop Zhang Ye. For good reason, there are rules in a Go tournament that prevent a player from affecting their opponents. But it was a different case here as the opponent was just a computer. It was impossible to affect it at all.

Zhang Ye typed another message. "Hurry up, did you fall asleep?

"Bro, give up and resign if you can't do anything. Don't force yourself.

"We're all waiting!

"Did you crash? Why don't you try restarting!"

Everyone who saw didn't know how to react!

Resign?

Restart?

Why're you arguing with a computer!

## Chapter 1134: Zhang Ye's Hand of God!

There was laughter all around Weibo.

"Pfft!"

"This is cracking me up!"

"Why is Zhang Ye always spouting nonsense like that!"

"Hahahaha, hasn't he always been this way?"

"His Go skills are really just like him! Full of rubbish and not adhering to convention!"

"Only he could have a mouth like that. Why are you arguing with a computer? This guy is really too annoying! But today, we must support him. We have no choice!"

"Go for it!"

"We can't afford to lose any more!"

"Yeah, if we lose this game, it's over for us!"

"It all rests on Zhang Ye!"

"As long as we win, I'll be his braindead fan forever!"

"I am already turning from just a passerby to a fan! He's playing amazingly!"

"Fuck, is Zhang Ye on steroids today? Why is he playing so well?"

"Yeah, he's like a completely different person from yesterday! It's like he gained a 'great empowerment' overnight? Just what kind of weird moves are these!"

In the game room.

The Americans finally blew up. Their representative lodged a stern protest to the international referees, accusing Zhang Ye of interfering with Peter's play.

The international referees considered it for a moment before

deciding to give Zhang Ye a warning.

Zhang Ye put up his hands to express his innocence.

Peter was still "considering" its next move.

Those on humanity's side were getting excited and enthusiastic!

On the live broadcast.

Yu Yingyi said excitedly, "Today's Zhang Ye is totally different from yesterday's!"

Chen Ying 7-dan suddenly said, "Now, I can reveal a secret to everyone who is watching on our live broadcast. Just last night, Professor Zhang suddenly came to the Qiyuan to search for some information. Some of us helped him find all the game records of top players in recent years from both national and international matches. Professor Zhang ended up looking through all of them for the entire night!"

Yu Yingyi said in shock, "Teacher Chen, do you mean that Professor Zhang only used one night's of research to improve his Go skill to the point where he seems like a totally different person from yesterday?"

Chen Ying reflected, then said, "I don't know."

"That doesn't make sense!" Yu Yingyi was in disbelief.

When home viewers heard that, they were stunned speechless!

Chen Ying thought for a bit before giving a wry smile. "Perhaps that's the difference between a genius and a normal person. Peter has completely underestimated humanity. It probably never thought that there would be a person like Professor Zhang who exists amongst us humans!" Her tone changed as she remembered the lesson from yesterday. "But Peter has not lost yet. I think it might still have a chance. The next move it makes will be an extremely crucial one! Let's see how it's going to respond!"

The clock was ticking.

Zhang Ye still had plenty of time on the clock, while Peter had already used up much of its allocated time. In this "war between humans and machines," the game rules followed the Chinese rules of Go, with a compensation of 7.5 points being used. Each player would be given two hours of game time, as well as three 60-second blocks, with any player automatically given a loss if they exceeded the time limit. Zhang Ye had used just over 30 minutes in total for his thinking time, while Peter had already used up one hour and twenty minutes.

Zhang Ye astutely realized that Peter had yet another weakness. It had an advantage in data processing and analytical power as a computer, and it did those at a meticulous level that humans would never be able to achieve. But when it was faced with a complex board state, this became a burden on the artificial intelligence. The precision of the program seemingly did not allow it to commit any errors, so a slightly more complex board state would immediately cause it to enter into a long state of processing. This state had happened several times, and Peter would only make its move after having considered all possible scenarios. Of course, the American developer of Peter would have set some rules for Peter's time allocation function. But even so, between itself committing errors and the choice of time usage, the artificial intelligence would never be able to have the same determination and judgment as a human player!

Finally, Peter made its move!

On the computer screen, Peter's stone was played!

Chen Ying said loudly, "Oh, Peter has played its move! This is a very profound choice! The position that it played on is actually right within the 'net' that Professor Zhang has cast!"

Zhang Ye took a look and responded with a move of his own.

This time, Peter did not hesitate—horizontal stretch!

Zhang Ye forcefully attacked.

Peter bumped.

Zhang Ye smiled. That was a good one, that was a really good one!

It was well worth it to use that long period to think through all the variations, even though it paid for it with time. It looked like Peter has seen some of the mysteries behind Zhang Ye's Cosmic Style. As the opening sequence was not played in the Cosmic Style, this had become the weak point in Zhang Ye's "net". And it was precisely here that Peter came attacking, with the fight imminent the moment it made that move. Peter had successfully forced Zhang Ye into a direct confrontation. He could no longer peacefully build up his frameworks!

Zhang Ye responded with a move.

Peter played a pincer move.

Zhang Ye played an approach.

Peter forced an atari.

Zhang Ye thought for a bit and decided to let go of the black stone.

Peter captured it.

With that, the board state immediately changed!

Yu Yingyi exclaimed, "This is bad! His stone has been captured!"

Chen Ying also said, "That's not good. The board state seems rather bad now. With that black stone captured, the entire framework has been messed up. If Peter wins the battle on this side, the entire corner will be surrounded. If it chooses to use that as a base to attack down the middle, even with the two sides that Professor Zhang has, it'll be very difficult to predict who wins. Professor Zhang was the first to move, so he has to deduct 7.5 points for the compensation. It's really difficult to say how the board state will swing!"

The board state developed tension yet again!

Peter used its powerful analytical functions to fight its way out!

The Americans were all applauding this internally. As expected, they knew that Peter would not lose!

Alright!

Well done!

Finish him!

Don't give him any more chances!

Attack him down the middle!

Zhang Ye blocked!

Peter continued pushing in!

Zhang Ye played a counter pincer!

Peter approached on the right side!

The people in the spectator room felt discouraged and downhearted!

They felt like they were falling from Heaven to Hell!

Hu Liang cried out, "The corner has been taken by Peter!

Xu Han said in disbelief, "The framework in the middle has been invaded too! It's over, this time it's really over!"

"Professor Zhang should never have allowed that black stone to be captured!" a professional 5-dan Go player shouted.

But Li Yi 9-dan said, "He had to allow it! He had no choice!"

Liu Hong 9-dan facepalmed and expressed in frustration, "Professor Zhang's structure has been broken through!"

On the two sides at the bottom of the board, Peter's stones were actually not dead yet. Zhang Ye's stones hadn't fully surrounded the white stones and only held a large influence over the area by spreading out across the board. But if play went on like this, once

Zhang Ye lost to Peter at the top of the board, the center would be broken through as well! Then territory at the bottom would, as a result, have its influence stripped away. This was what was often called a "domino effect" in Go. Right now, Zhang Ye was faced with a very dangerous board state!

The netizens were getting anxious.

"Are we going to lose?"

"We were still unable to do it after all?"

"Dammit!"

"The structure has been broken!"

"Teacher Zhang, you must do something!"

"Hold on!"

"Keep holding on, Teacher Zhang! You must not cave in!"

Although it was only the middlegame, victory would be decided within these few moves!

Zhang Ye suddenly fell silent.

In the spectator room.

A lot of the pro players started giving advice even though Zhang Ye could not hear them!

A pro 7th dan player said, "Cut off White's 67th move!"

Hu Liang replied, "That won't work! He would be forced to his death over there!"

Xu Han shouted, "There's still the center left to play for!"

Li Yi said, "There's nothing there! The group's effectively dead!"

Liu Hong clenched his teeth and said, 'Little Zhang has no other options left!"

Wu Changhe glared at the screen. He had no ideas left either!

"Little Xiang!" Dan Donghe said anxiously.

But Xiang Rong 9-dan did not say a word.

Dan Donghe knew from this nonresponse that it was bad!

Zhang Ye no longer had the initiative!

Peter had managed to make a desperate reversal!

What could they do?

Just what could they do?

Were they really unable to win?

Was humanity really going to fall to the artificial intelligence?

The Americans showed smiles. They knew they were going to win! They were going to win this game for sure! No matter where Zhang Ye played, the center would be broken through within ten moves. At that time, Zhang Ye would definitely not be able to turn things around!

Chen Ying was explaining the board state to the viewers. "If Professor Zhang attacks, this area will have to be given up. If..." After explaining eight or so different scenarios that Zhang Ye could take against the opponent, Chen Ying paled. She now realized that no matter where Zhang Ye played, there would be no way of turning things around!

There was no way!

Truly no way!

Watching TV.

His mother roared, "What are you doing, son! Weren't you about to win?"

His father said with a dark expression, "Things have reversed!"

Some Go players turned off their televisions.

"Dad, why did you switch it off?"

"I'm not watching anymore."

"But why! It's the critical moment!"

"Zhang Ye can't win."

With the board state as it was, no one believed that Zhang Ye could make a comeback!

Even the gods would be powerless in this situation!

The atmosphere was depressing!

Through their TVs, countless people were watching Zhang Ye, who had fallen silent!

But all of a sudden, everyone was baffled when they saw a smile break out on Zhang Ye's face!

Smiling?

What are you smiling about?

Chen Ying was taken aback!

The Americans were startled!

Wu Changhe, Dan Donghe, and the others were also dumbfounded!

No one knew why Zhang Ye could break into a smile at such a time!

Following, everyone saw Zhang Ye pick up a black stone from the Go bowl.

Chen Ying said, "Professor Zhang is going to place his stone!"

Everyone was staring fixedly at him!

Everyone was holding their breath!

Zhang Ye was still smiling. He felt that this was really too terrible of a coincidence. He almost could not contain his joy! The position in the corner looked exceedingly familiar. So while he looked like he had fallen silent just now, Zhang Ye had actually taken a Memory Search Capsule secretly to search through his memory for

the Go game records that he had read in his previous world. There was almost no such thing as an identical Go game in the world. This was because there were too many possible games that could exist. But there could be similarities in parts of a formation in a game!

Like this losing position!

Even Zhang Ye could see that he was losing. He did not think that he could turn things around. PeterGo was really too strong!

But right at this moment, a game record suddenly surfaced in his mind. It was from a game Gu Li played at the peak of his career. Zhang Ye felt that he had seen the formation in the corner of the Go board somewhere before. Now that he had a detailed look at the game record, it was not just familiar looking anymore!

It turned out to be almost the exact same thing!

At the time the game was played, Gu Li was playing as Black too!

Gu Li had been forced into this same unplayable corner as well!

It was the same board state!

It was the same choice!

Then, peak Gu Li placed a stone on the Go board. It was this stone that shocked countless people, and it was this stone that everyone hailed as the most magnificent move!

Zhang Ye picked up a black stone and gently raised his hand before placing it at that position!

Chen Ying exclaimed, "He has played his stone! Professor Zhang has played his stone! Over here...eh, why did he play it there? If he played it here, then should Peter attack it, it would..."

After this move was played, everyone was puzzled!

No one had expected that Zhang Ye would play it there, that he would put it at such an improper position. In this short time, no one could see what Zhang Ye's intent was!

Chen Ying said in disappointment, "It's over. This move definitely cannot be called a good one. Professor Zhang has probably been forced into a corner and has no way to fight back..." But all of a sudden, Chen Ying was dumbfounded. She seemed to have realized something, so she took another look at the board.

With that examination, Chen Ying froze up!

She was so surprised she nearly leaped out of her seat. "This! This! Oh my God!"

Yu Yingyi said with a stunned voice, "What's going on?"

Chen Ying got so excited that she almost went crazy!

<sup>&</sup>quot;A magnificent move!

<sup>&</sup>quot;Professor Zhang has actually played a magnificent move!

<sup>&</sup>quot;No! It's not a magnificent move!

<sup>&</sup>quot;This is...this is the Hand of God!"

#### Chapter 1135: Victory!

It was too sudden!

Zhang Ye's move came like a bolt from the blue!

Just when everyone thought that Zhang Ye was at his wits' end and had lost the match, he suddenly placed his stone on the board. And then, countless people in front of their televisions saw Chen Ying jump to her feet and heard her scream!

Hand of God?

What Hand of God?

Everyone was shocked silly!

Did you get it wrong?

Hasn't it already ended?

Didn't Zhang Ye lose?

The viewers were confused, and even those who truly understood Go did not get what they were looking at immediately. They were nowhere near as skilled!

But the professional Go players were making an uproar!

Hu Liang said in a daze, "What?"

Xu Han said, "I-Is this a possible move?"

Everyone stared fixedly at the screen in utter disbelief at what they were seeing!

All of a sudden, Wu Changhe roared, "It's possible!"

Dan Donghe also cried out, "It's really possible! It's really possible!"

Heavens!

The Hand of God!

Fuck, this was truly the Hand of God!

After a moment's shock, screams suddenly sounded from the spectator room!

"Ahhh!"

"Heavens!"

"Holy shit!"

"Professor Zhang has..."

"Is he on steroids or something?!"

"Holy motherfucking hell!"

"Good! Alright! Alright! Alright! Great!"

"My God! What have I seen?"

"This is a fucking earthshakingly magnificent move!"

Everyone went crazy!

It really felt like they had gone crazy!

Afterwards, many of them looked to Xiang Rong!

"Master Xiang!"

"Master Xiang, this game..."

Xiang Rong 9-dan finally spoke. No one noticed that he had clenched his fists so tightly that his nails were cutting into the flesh. "Professor Zhang...is about to turn things around!"

A female player's eyes abruptly reddened!

A few other players were also brimming with tears. Faced with this magnificent move, they were no longer able to control their emotions!

Li Qinqin said in a stunned tone, "Changhe!"

Wu Changhe grabbed his wife's hand excitedly and said, "We are...going to win!"

The Americans were dumbfounded!

How could there be a move like this?

How could there still be a chance of survival for Zhang Ye?

...

Beijing Television.

The Go commentator shouted, "Unbelievable! This is simply unbelievable!"

••

The Online Go Server.

The commentator exclaimed, "It's the Hand of God! Professor Zhang has broken out! He could play the Hand of God in such a hopeless situation! It's such a beautiful move! It's so elegant! Friends! Please remember this moment! Please be sure to remember this moment! This game will enter the annals of Go! This will be the greatest game of Go this year! This will be the greatest game in the entire history of Go! Thousands of years later, people will probably have forgotten Xiang Rong's and Shinji 9-dan's name, but they will never forget about Zhang Ye's Hand of God that saved the Go world! History will remember it! This will be the greatest victory for humanity!"

• •

In Korea.

The official commentator screamed until his voice cracked!

"It's possible!"

"It's been confirmed as a possible move!"

"The Chinese have played the Hand of God!"

"Incredible! Unbelievable!"

• • •

In Japan.

"The corner position has been brought back to life!"

"Even though it clearly looked like a deadlock, the Chinese have brought it back to life!"

"The corner territory has made a comeback! Even the center has been brought back to life!"

"That Chinese player is amazing!"

"Peter is done for!"

"He really is the smartest person in the world! How did he think of such a move!"

...

With some of the commentators' analysis and shocked expressions of the hosts, everyone gradually realized the beauty of Zhang Ye's play. It could even be called a stroke of genius! He had barged his way out of a deadlock! A lot of people got the goosebumps from watching!

Watching TV.

His parents stood up!

Chen Guang and Fan Wenli stood up!

Yao Jiancai and Yao Mi stood up!

A lot of people couldn't help themselves and stood up from their chairs and sofas!

Chen Ying 7-dan was giving rousing commentary. "Just how will it end! Just how will Peter handle this move! Faced with Professor Zhang's Hand of God that came out of the blue, what can Peter do? Can it turn things around like it did earlier? Can it maintain its unbeaten record?"

Everything went quiet!

Everyone fell silent!

It was all quiet online!

The people watching in front of their televisions also went quiet!

Everyone was waiting for the outcome!

The Americans still believed that Peter would not lose even though Zhang Ye's Hand of God had shocked them! The American representative was screaming loudly in his head, Go on! Finish him! You have to have something! You're a computer! You're the most advanced AI in the world!

However, they could not see the internal processing going on inside Peter right now!

Peter was stunned!

It was stunned yet again by Zhang Ye's move!

Knight's move: Win%, unknown.

Horizontal stretch: Win%, 2%.

Cut: Win%, 6%.

Five minutes!

Peter was silent for a full five minutes!

Zhang Ye was looking at the screen with a smile on his face.

Suddenly, a notification popped up on the screen!

" Peter has resigned from the game 1."

The Americans blanched!

Everyone else erupted when they saw this!

Yu Yingyi yelled, "He has won! Peter has resigned!"

Chen Ying 7-dan's tears were almost falling as she shouted, "Faced with Professor Zhang's Hand of God! Peter had no way to turn the tables! We've won! We've won!"

Hu Liang threw the things in his hands into the air and screamed, "We've won!"

Xu Han was so emotional that he could not say anything. He

pointed at the screen with trembling lips!

It hadn't been easy!

It really hadn't been easy!

Shinji 9-dan had lost!

Park Yuhee had lost!

Xiang Rong had lost as well!

This was the final battle of the war between humans and machines and the final stand of humanity at the edge of a cliff. No one had expected that Professor Zhang would actually even the score after losing the first game, forcing Peter to resign in the middlegame! Professor Zhang had turned things around in a game that no one was optimistic about!

An unexpected opening!

An inconceivable way of playing!

Coupled with the final strike that was the Hand of God!

It was wonderful!

He had won beautifully!

The international referees were also shocked at the sight. The Hand of God that was just played made the two of them break out in a cold sweat. They came forward to confirm the results after assessing the board state.

The game had finished!

In the second game of the final battle between humans and machines: Zhang Ye won!

The score was 1-1!

Everyone dispersed from the venue.

Zhang Ye smiled as he stood up and left.

The American representative yelled with a dark look, "Change

the flight date!"

His assistant softly replied, "OK."

They had booked their flight for tonight. But now it was obvious that they had to change their flight date!

Zhang Ye left the game room before he raised his arms and stretched. Then he discovered that a lot of people were rushing out from the spectator room across the way!

Wu Changhe!

Hu Liang!

Xu Han!

Dan Donghe!

Everyone came running out!

"Professor Zhang!"

"Professor Zhang, well done!"

"You're the best!"

"Beautifully done, Professor Zhang!"

"Thank you! Thank you!"

"We've won! We've really won!"

Some were laughing loudly!

Some were clapping with all their heart!

Some were shouting Zhang Ye's name!

Some were even laughing and crying at the same time!

#### Chapter 1136: The press conference!

At home.

His father shouted, "He won!"

His mother exclaimed, "Little Ye won the game!"

There was a knock at the door. When his mother went to answer it, over 20 neighbors came rushing into the house. Every one of them looked even more excited than Zhang Ye's parents!

"Congratulations!"

"Old Zhang, Old Cao, the two of you have brought up a good son!"

"Little Ye won so beautifully!"

"I don't even know what to say! I was sweating just watching it!"

"It was so thrilling! And wonderful!"

"Little Ye has done everyone proud!"

"I knew he could do it!"

"Who asked the Americans to look down on Little Ye! Who asked them to look down on humans! Hahaha! They have encountered a god this time! Those idiots!"

"How face smacking!"

"Ahahaha!"

"I can already feel the pain on those idiots' faces!"

• • •

At the Rao household.

Chenchen yelled, "Zhang Ye won! He's stolen the thunder again!"

Rao Aimin pursed her lips and said, "That kid has got some dogshit luck!"

"What do you mean by dogshit luck?" Yang Shu did not like

hearing that at all. "My senior bro has really got Go skills!"

Rao Aimin grimaced. "He's always doing things unconventionally. Why won't he just stay at home and be good? Why did he have to go off to the Go world and steal their thunder? Do you know who has to handle the reporters when they come looking for him?"

• • •

At the SARFT.

In Old Wu's office.

Wu Zeqing smiled as she picked up the phone and called Secretary Bai. "Hello, it's me. Let the relevant offices know to give an additional push for the positive promotion of today's war between humans and machines."

Then, she called her mother.

The call connected.

It sounded very chaotic over there with all the screaming and shouting.

"Mom, how are things?"

"Little Zhang is wonderful! He's brilliant!"

"Has my dad's impression of him changed for the better?"

"Hur hur, your dad is so excited that he can't even say a thing. You just didn't see it. But when Peter lost, your dad was shouting the loudest...Hey, why are you grabbing at my phone?"

Wu Changhe's voice came through. "My daughter, don't listen to your mom's nonsense. It's just a draw with the score tied at one to one. That kid hasn't won yet!"

Wu Zeqing laughed and said: "Sure. After he wins tomorrow's game, I'll officially bring him back home as my boyfriend for a meal?"

Wu Changhe said: "We'll talk about it again if he really wins."

• • •

On TV.

The live broadcast was still going on!

Quite a few experts were analyzing the game that had just been played. "Professor Zhang played with the spirit of humanity today. From the first stone that he played in the opening, he was leading Peter by the nose. The brand new and highly creative playstyle at the end even stumped Peter greatly. This is the biggest difference between humans and computers, and also the biggest reason why Professor Zhang could defeat it. This is because humans can get extremely creative under pressure, while machines can only passively learn their craft! Today is a memorable day because Professor Zhang gave a valuable lesson to the Americans, as well as the AI that was claimed to be smarter than humans!"

At another television station.

The commentator said, "Let's take another look at the final move, by Professor Zhang. It was really the work of a genius and so beautiful that no words can describe it! We're all clueless as to how Professor Zhang could have thought of a move like that at that moment. But this stone that descended from the Heavens has saved the Go world! Without a doubt, this is clearly the most valuable of moves in the history of Go! This is truly deserving of being called the Hand of God!

"Ah, the press conference has started, so let's switch to that. It looks like Professor Zhang has made an exception and accepted today's postgame interview!"

• •

At China Qiyuan.

The venue of the press conference.

The American representative sat on stage as usual. Zhang Ye and several people from China Qiyuan were seated beside him.

The reporters lifted their cameras and microphones as they asked questions to the American representative.

"May we know the reason for Peter's loss today?"

"Didn't you all say that your company's AI wouldn't lose to humans?"

"Are you all still confident about tomorrow's game?"

The American representative answered all of their questions in a single breath. No one knew if he was putting on a front since he had looked very sullen in the game room. But right now, he had a very calm expression as he said, "We took an unexpected loss today. Perhaps it was because we did not tune the AI properly and that there were some bugs in the programming. As for the actual reason, we'll go back and check thoroughly. We'll definitely get it fixed before tomorrow's game. Peter will not lose to humans in Go, and I still stand by my word. About tomorrow's game, we're very confident that Peter will definitely win after it has been tuned and configured properly."

A female reporter from Beijing Television asked, "In your previous interview, you mentioned that your plane tickets were booked for tonight's flight. I wonder if—"

The American representative's assistant said with a dark look, "We've already changed our flight and will give our best for tomorrow's game."

A reporter from a newspaper firm asked, "May we know your evaluation of Professor Zhang?"

The American representative glanced at Zhang Ye and said, "We do admit that there are indeed some geniuses in this world, but I still think the same as before. It will be the era of artificial intelligence from now on!"

After dragging things out for a long time, they refused to admit to their defeat!

In the end, the reporters no longer wanted to ask him any more questions. They directed all their attention to Zhang Ye.

The reporter from Beijing Times smiled and asked, "Professor Zhang, didn't you say that you wouldn't accept any interviews after yesterday's game?"

Zhang Ye got closer to the microphone and said, "That's right."

"Then why are you here today?" asked the reporter from the Beijing Times.

Zhang Ye candidly replied, "Because I won today!"

The reporters burst out laughing!

Then, quite a few people started applauding!

Zhang Ye was indeed Zhang Ye. He would never beat around the bush whenever he spoke. If he lost, he would not accept any interviews. But since he had won, of course he would make an appearance and show off a little. Wasn't this normal?

Dan Donghe smiled and felt that Zhang Ye was becoming more and more pleasing to the eye!

A female reporter asked, "How do you feel after coming out on top in today's game?"

Zhang Ye chuckled, "I feel great!"

Everyone laughed again.

The Americans wore solemn looks.

Yu Yingyi came forward and asked, "Professor Zhang, do you have anything you would like to say?"

Zhang Ye smiled and answered, "I would like to say this: The most advanced AI in history? That was all it could do!"

These were the words that the American representative had said

in yesterday's press conference. Zhang Ye returned the favor!

The reporters applauded!

"Nice!"

"Well said!"

As they were all humans, they would naturally take Zhang Ye's side. Moreover, the Americans were far too arrogant and disrespectful in recent days, disgusting everyone with their behavior. However, Peter had won every one of its games, even defeating Xiang Rong 9-dan, the number one in Go. So there was really nothing they could argue about. It wasn't until today when Zhang Ye evened the score that a lot of the reporters could finally release all their pent-up anger!

Sure enough, Face-smacking Zhang was the better player between the two of them!

Although this fellow was usually annoying, had a sharp tongue, and offended many people, he had never been soft or disappointed anyone when it mattered most!

Zhang Ye had many foes, and some people present had once been offended by him. A lot of people felt that he was too difficult to handle as he always stirred up trouble and often smacked people's faces. More importantly, no one had yet to teach him a lesson. This fellow was just too fearsome and notorious a troublemaker in the country. But today, as everyone united with Zhang Ye, they suddenly realized that Face-smacking Zhang was a very reliable guy. Seeing how he was face-smacking the Americans and the artificial intelligence, the satisfaction they got felt amazingly good!

Online.

Fan Wenli posted on Weibo: "Congratulations to Director Zhang for taking this game!"

Xiaodong: "How exhilarating! That was so exhilarating!"

Yao Jiancai: "Zhang'er, you're blasting out of the universe!"

Li Xiaoxian: "Wishing Teacher Zhang success in taking the next game as well!"

Zhang Xia: "By winning today's game, Little Zhang has finally saved face for humanity. I hope that everyone can criticize him less from now on. It hasn't been easy for Little Zhang either, hur hur."

The press conference ended.

Awhile later, Zhang Ye walked out of the Qiyuan.

However, there were huge crowds of people who had surrounded the entire main entrance!

Hundreds of people!

No, it was thousands of people!

A dense crowd of people were holding up banners and chanting Zhang Ye's name!

"Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye!"

The crowd was very excited!

Everyone felt impassioned!

### Chapter 1137: New tactics?

Noon.

Zhang Ye returned home for lunch.

Downstairs of his family's apartment, he saw his old neighbors lining the streets to welcome him. An old uncle in the neighborhood even brought out two strings of firecrackers that were meant to be used for his child's wedding tomorrow. The moment Zhang Ye arrived, the crackling of the firecrackers made him feel rather touched.

"Little Ye, well done!"

"Show the Americans how great you are!"

"Thrash that PeterGo!"

"We'll cheer you all the way!"

"You have to win tomorrow's game too!"

At home.

When he entered the house, the aroma of cooked food attacked his nose.

He looked at the dishes on the table and exclaimed, "This much food?"

His father said excitedly, "Son! Eat! Eat your fill, you still have a lot to do tomorrow!"

"Mom wants to reward you, so sit down quickly and have something to eat." His mother was grinning from ear to ear.

Zhang Ye said, "Thanks."

His mother turned on the television with a smile. The news reports were all about her son.

The news of Zhang Ye's victory over the artificial intelligence had spread throughout the country. Even in Asia, a lot of the Japanese

and Korean Go players who paid attention to the developments of the event were shocked by what had happened. No one had expected that someone could still represent the Go world as its flag bearer and battle against Peter after the losses suffered by Shinji, Park Yuhee, and Xiang Rong. Most importantly, the person was not even a professional Go player or a member of the Go world, but a celebrity from the entertainment industry? In any case, this victory was so timely that it had given an invaluable boost to the Go world!

Everyone was looking forward to tomorrow's game with much anticipation!

Tomorrow would be the final game of the match between Zhang Ye and Peter, and someone had created a poll to vote for the winner on Weibo!

```
8%!
20%!
```

40%!

Those who voted that Zhang Ye would win kept increasing!

Of course, there were also quite a few people who felt that Peter would win!

```
"Zhang Ye will prevail!"
```

"Why?"

"Zhang Ye got lucky winning today's game. If not for the Hand of God at the end that suddenly turned things around, he would've lost for sure. He can't possibly guarantee that he'll be in today's top shape for every game. Besides, Peter has already figured out a solution to deal with the playstyle that Zhang Ye calls the 'Cosmic Style.' After inputting it into the program, if Zhang Ye uses that

<sup>&</sup>quot;Face-smacking Zhang is almighty!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;That might not be the case."

style again tomorrow, he might not even be able to play his opening since they'll already be prepared for it!"

"Yeah, Zhang Ye only won today because he took Peter by surprise with his odd play. We don't know what could happen tomorrow, hai."

"Then what can be done about it?"

"Unless Zhang Ye can come up with another new playstyle tomorrow!"

"New playstyle?"

"How can it be that easy?!"

"That's right, the Cosmic Style and that entirely new opening are amazing enough. It probably took Zhang Ye quite a while to think of them, so how could he come up with so many new styles! And isn't everyone overestimating Teacher Zhang a little too much? Did you guys forget something? Teacher Zhang isn't a pro Go player!"

"Uh..."

"That's true!"

A lot of people started worrying. When they realized this, everyone lost some of their excitement. Although they had won today, the score was still tied at 1-1. If they lost again tomorrow, everything would have been in vain. No one knew if Zhang Ye had any plans left for tomorrow. If there were none, then wouldn't he lose miserably just like he had in the first game?

• • •

After lunch.

The phone rang. It was a call from the landline of Wu Zeqing's parents' home.

Zhang Ye answered: "Hello?"

Wu Changhe's voice came through. "Do you need any more game records and information? If you need them, I'll get someone to send them to your place."

Zhang Ye said with a laugh: "There's no need for that, Uncle. I saw enough yesterday."

Wu Changhe said in a lukewarm tone: "Do you need anything else then? Quickly bring it up to me if there's anything."

Zhang Ye said: "Thanks, Uncle. Uh, I don't need anything for the time being."

"Aren't you going to prepare for tomorrow's game?"

"I am."

"What do you think your chances of winning are?"

"No idea."

"Heh, are you sure you'll manage?"

"I really don't know, but I'll definitely give my best anyway."

"It wouldn't do if you did not give your best. Remember what I said regarding my daughter, understand? If you lose tomorrow, don't ever think about stepping into our house again! Hmph!"

"Damn, are you burning bridges already? Didn't you just put your arm around my shoulders and praise me this morning!"

"Did I?"

"Yes! You did!"

"Stop messing with me. In any case, I'm telling you that you better give your very best for tomorrow's game! Thrash that machine! Send it to its death!"

"Yes, sir."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye smiled. He no longer disliked Wu Changhe and felt that this old comrade was actually quite lovable. At least he cared a lot about Go and the Go world. Perhaps this was

a passion that grew from deep down inside. Zhang Ye could sense that even though Wu Changhe and Dan Donghe's generation had retired, and their Go skills no longer compared to any of the active top pro players, who could easily defeat them, the sentiments they held for Go were still as strong as before. In fact, it had even become stronger. Zhang Ye could never understand this sort of feeling because he did not really like Go that much. But this did not stop Zhang Ye from stepping forward for them.

Uncle, don't worry!

I will help you to protect the dignity of the Go world that you want to safeguard!

I will help you to regain the honor that the Go world has lost!

Not for anything, but only because...if I lose, you won't let Old Wu to marry me!

• • •

After informing his parents, Zhang Ye went back to his room. He naturally would not waste any of the time he had today. In fact, he was already running out of time!

Zhang Ye made a hasty last-minute effort yesterday as he practically went through most of the games in this world and memorized them. He was not learning from them, but rather eliminating possibilities. All of that was just to find out what kind of data Peter was missing in its dataset. But today, Zhang Ye needed to organize from the beginning some of the best plays 1, magnificent moves, Hand of God moves, and complex josekis that he had seen before from the games between the Go Masters of his previous world. Thankfully, even though Zhang Ye was not very interested in Go back then, he had been forced to go through a lot of game records by his teacher. He also watched quite a few games played in tournaments on television, so the information he had was still enormous!

Come, let's do this!

He bought a lot of Memory Search Capsules in one go!

Then Zhang Ye closed his eyes and fell into a long "sleep."

Zhang Ye already had a rough plan in place for the morrow's game. It was obvious that he could no longer use the Apollo Opening or the Cosmic Style. The Americans were not stupid and would obviously input that information into the AI. Furthermore, he heard that Peter also had the ability to learn and would reinforce its knowledge through the games that it played. Therefore, Zhang Ye needed to find some new entry points to play against Peter in the third game. Fortunately, he had discovered a few new weaknesses in Peter during today's game. For example, he could make something out of the error tolerance levels of the AI itself. But he wouldn't know how effective it would be, since this was something that he could only find out after he tested it against Peter tomorrow.

An hour.

Two hours.

Three hours.

The discussions in the public were reaching an intense level!

News of the game was also appearing all over the place!

But Zhang Ye was oblivious to all of it as he immersed himself in the sea of Go!

1. A 手筋/shǒujīn/tesuji is a clever play, the best play in a local position, a skillful move, a special tactic. Tesujis come in all forms and shapes, some are more known than others.

## Chapter 1138: Zhang Ye plays the first of the three most complex josekis!

The next day.

In the morning.

The final game of the battle was looming. It was the third and deciding game of the match between Zhang Ye and Peter. There was still an hour to go before the game would begin. Countless Go players were watching TV, and even many of those who did not know how to play the game were also watching the live broadcast nervously.

However, everyone who was waiting received some bad news first.

In the pregame interview, the Americans suddenly made an announcement.

The American representative faced the camera and said with a smile, "After an entire night of tuning by our technical team, the related bug has been fixed. Furthermore, I have some news that I can reveal to everyone. Our AI has received another round of upgrades, or rather, Peter has always had this function built into it. But due to certain considerations that we had, we did not activate the 'complex operations' mode. After yesterday's game, we admit that we probably did underestimate Professor Zhang. But it won't happen again today as we have configured Peter with a brand-new approach to the game. That Hand of God move from yesterday also won't be unpredictable to Peter. To put it simply, Peter's calculations, analysis, and prediction functions have been raised by around 15% with this new mode activated!"

A reporter asked in surprise, "What are Peter's chances of winning today?"

The American representative said, "We have done some test

comparisons of the current version of Peter with its previous one and found that the upgraded Peter has a winning rate of 99.99%!"

Everyone burst into an uproar!

"Upgrade?"

"What?"

"What the fuck, it can still be upgraded?"

"And its level was raised by this much?"

"All this just to deal with Zhang Ye?"

"That's so evil! Why didn't they make this announcement yesterday? They're only saying this just as the game is about to start? Are they trying to catch Professor Zhang off guard?"

"Is this for real?"

"Then won't we lose for sure?"

"Yeah, Zhang Ye only won that game yesterday with some luck!"

The Internet was abuzz!

The Qiyuan's people were panicking as well!

Immediately, the news reports on TV were filled with talk of Peter's upgrade!

At China Qiyuan.

Dan Donghe, Wu Changhe, and the others went looking for Zhang Ye!

Hu Liang said anxiously, "Professor Zhang, have you seen the news?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I did."

Dan Donghe said with a sunken expression, "About the upgrade, what do they exactly mean by that?"

They were not in this field, so they did not understand how it worked.

"To put it plainly, they've just delimited a part of Peter's functionality." Zhang Ye explained to them, "It's just like a computer, where the performance of a processor is usually not pushed to the extreme. The designers will deliberately limit its functionality to ensure that it can last longer while maintaining a reasonable performance. To surpass that limit, they can choose to overclock it, which is what the Americans are doing right now. Although it is much more complicated for an AI to be 'overclocked,' the principle is essentially the same."

Wu Changhe asked in annoyance, "Would its performance really be raised by 15%?"

"Probably so, but who knows if it's the truth or not since it's the Americans talking." Zhang Ye shrugged and continued, "They might be trying to scare me, but it could easily be true."

Scare you?

How could that be possible!

No one believed this to be the reason as they understood things. Even if the Americans were not familiar with you, they would surely have researched you online, no? Did you think that they wouldn't go around to find out about you? They could've easily pulled anyone in the whole of China aside and still managed to find out that you, Teacher Zhang, have never been afraid of anything! Piloting a plane, beating up an executive, scolding the SARFT, which of those affairs did not involve you?

Li Yi 9-dan said loudly, "We have to treat it as a serious claim!"

"Yeah!" Chen Ying came over. "We can't underestimate our opponent, Professor Zhang!"

Wu Changhe tugged at him. "If it's really as the Americans claim, and that P-whatever thingy's performance was indeed raised by 15%, then how sure are you of beating it?"

Zhang Ye laughed. "I'll find out when I play it."

Xu Han didn't know how to react. "Aren't you being too carefree!"

Hu Liang said, "Yeah, Professor Zhang. You have to at least give me some assurance!"

Zhang Ye spread his hands up and said, "It's not that I don't want to commit to an answer. The issue is that I don't even which area of Peter's functionality has been 'overclocked.' Did they increase its analysis speed? Or did they increase the analysis power? Without playing against it, how am I supposed to answer you? So let me play against it first."

Liu Hong 9-dan said nervously, "You can do it!"

"Yeah, you can do it!"

"Professor Zhang, show us the elegance you displayed yesterday!"

"The honor of the Go world is in your hands!"

Everyone was shouting encouragement to him.

Only Wu Changhe knew what was really going on. What honor of the Go world? What dignity of humanity? All of that is just bullshit. This rascal is only doing this for my daughter. So Wu Changhe looked at Zhang Ye and said, "Kid, if you win this game, I'll organize a celebratory feast for you at my house tonight!"

At that, Zhang Ye became more spirited. "Alright."

Li Qinqin had a better way with words. "Even if you lose, you can come over."

Zhang Ye was just about to say OK.

But Wu Changhe grunted, "What's the point of coming over if he loses!"

Dan Donghe did not know of the deal between Zhang Ye and the Wu family, so he said in a speechless manner, "Brother Wu, why are you such a snob? You won't even treat him? If you're not treating, then I'll do it!" He turned to Zhang Ye and said, "Professor Zhang, no matter what the result is, I'll hold a feast for you

tonight. Don't bother with going over to his place!"

Zhang Ye smiled but did not say anything.

Wu Changhe rolled his eyes. Don't go to my place and go to yours? You'd need to have a daughter as pretty as mine first!

It was almost time.

Chen Ying had already headed into the commentary booth.

Zhang Ye exhaled and stepped forward to graciously enter the battle. He had rejected the pregame interview today, so he only entered the game room after the media had left. He knew that there was no point in making any extravagant claims for this game. They'd have to decide things with their actions to determine who would win and lose!

The referees were standing by.

The Americans watched as Zhang Ye entered the room and showed a hint of fear at his arrival. Admittedly, they had been boasting a little about Peter in the interview. All they said about Peter's upgrade or his chances of victory were just empty talk for now. When faced with the only person that had won against Peter, they had to be very careful. He was the reason why they had made an exception and taken the risk to upgrade Peter. That was also their affirmation for the smartest person in the world! They no longer had that unshakable confidence from before and were afraid that Peter would lose again!

Zhang Ye sat down again today in front of the computer as he took control of the mouse.

The broadcast cut to the live commentary coverage.

Yu Yingyi was dressed fully in red today, with a very joyous and celebratory feel. It was as though she was openly making known her hopes of humanity winning today's game.

Yu Yingyi had become very popular recently due to this

important event in the world of Go. The originally niche strategy board game TV show had started to gain a following from all over Asia. This went on until China Qiyuan announced that Zhang Ye would be representing humanity to challenge the AI, which caused the show to blow up even more. Even Yu Yingyi, who was just a sports host, had her value rise along with the attention gained. A lot of people had only gotten to know her through this war between humans and machines. Then they also found out that she was an old classmate of Zhang Ye's from college. With Zhang Ye being so popular and famous these days, everyone in the entire country know him. Perhaps it was just a case of "love me, love my dog," but Zhang Ye's fans were very supportive of Yu Yingyi. With that, her career officially went on the rise as well!

Yu Yingyi smiled. "Hello, everyone."

Chen Ying looked perturbed as she forced a smile and said, "Hello, everyone."

Yu Yingyi said, "In another five minutes, the third game of the war between humans and machines will begin. Yesterday's game was wonderful to watch. That Hand of God is probably still replaying in many of our minds, and a lot of people are pinning their hopes on Professor Zhang's performance today. But before the game was scheduled to begin, we received news that Peter received an upgrade to its functionality. The Americans claim that Peter's functionality has been raised to the max that will allow its thought process to work in a more encompassing way?"

Chen Ying took over and said, "Yes, and that's one of the highlights of today's game. Earlier, in the waiting room, I asked Professor Zhang what this upgrade really meant. Professor Zhang used the term 'overclocking' to describe it to me." She made a simple explanation before going on to say, "As for how much Peter has improved as a result of its upgrade, we do not know yet. We can only analyze it slowly as the game progresses. Then, for the second highlight of this game, it'll be whether Professor Zhang is

going to come up with yet another new playstyle. In yesterday's game, Professor Zhang surprised everyone by playing the self-named 'Apollo Opening' and the 'Cosmic Style' to achieve an effective result. It fired up those of us watching. I wonder if Professor Zhang can reproduce that blitzing form again today!"

Three.

Two.

One.

The international referee gestured.

Yu Yingyi said loudly, "We can see now that the game has started. Peter is playing Black today and will go first."

Chen Ying said in worry, "Professor Zhang is playing as White and going second. In the opening, there's a chance that he might be pulled into Peter's rhythm, so it will be very difficult to play in the manner he did yesterday."

Yu Yingyi stared at the screen and said, "Peter made a move very quickly."

Zhang Ye responded very quickly as well.

After four moves, an opening had formed on the board.

Chen Ying explained, "Peter is playing very steadily. This is one of the conventional openings for Black and also one that has the highest rate of winning. Its attacking game is very strong and belongs to one of the more aggressive openings. It looks like Peter is planning to end this quickly? How will Professor Zhang reply?"

Hearing this, the home viewers became even more worried!

Today's viewership rating on Central TV Sports Channel was heaven defying. After yesterday's victory, today's viewership rating nearly doubled. It wasn't only Zhang Ye's close friends and relatives, but also those who played Go who tuned in to watch. Even the crosstalk actor, Tang Dazhang, and Zhang Ye's other

longtime foes could not help but watch the live broadcast!

All the Go clubs in the country were packed to the brim with people!

Millions and millions of people turned their attention to this remarkable battle!

At the venue.

Both sides had already played six moves each. Things were not too intense yet, nor did the board state become complex. It would be considered a very normal opening. However, that was where the normality stopped.

Zhang Ye looked at the board and thought for a time. Then he grinned.

Upgraded version?

Just what was being upgraded in you? I'll test you out!

He clicked the mouse and immediately created a "large knight's move enclosure 1" with his stone.

Chen Ying was slightly startled. "You don't see this move too often."

Yu Yingyi was taken aback. "Was that not a good move?"

Chen Ying stared at it for a very long time. "It's not that it's not good. But there doesn't seem to be a very clear intent to have a 'large knight's move enclosure' over there. I'm not sure what Professor Zhang is considering."

The board state in the bottom corner suddenly turned complex!

A white stone on the 5-3 point?

A black stone on 4-3 for a corner approach?

The white stones that created a large knight's move enclosure?

Although there were only three stones, there was something odd about it!

...

In the spectator room.

Everyone was watching in shock and surprise!

Hu Liang asked, "Why did he make that move?"

Xu Han blinked and said, "What is Professor Zhang planning now?"

"Who knows what he's thinking?" Wu Changhe was not happy with the move. "He clearly could've gone for a better joseki than that. Why didn't he choose to use the '3-1 joseki' or a 'knight's move approach'?"

Xiang Rong 9-dan suddenly said, "He seems to be testing the computer."

"Testing?"

"Professor Zhang, don't play with fire again!"

"Aiyo, why am I trembling so much just from watching this?"

"What is Professor Zhang trying to do?"

Many people could not understand Zhang Ye's move. It couldn't be called bad, but neither was it that good. Everyone felt that Zhang Ye's large knight's move enclosure was very strange!

However, Zhang Ye was still beaming.

At the next second, countless people watching the game on TV and those from the Qiyuan all froze. Peter had actually fallen silent. It did not respond even after a very long time!

Chen Ying 7-dan asked curiously, "Eh, what's with Peter?"

Dan Donghe said, "What's going on?"

A professional 5th dan player asked, "Why is it not playing?"

Li Qinqin did not quite understand either. "Is that move so difficult to handle?"

The Americans were also taken aback!

Zhang Ye looked at the computer screen as his eyes narrowed. Peter's silence had given Zhang Ye a sort of answer. It was indeed very strong. So it did sense that something was wrong, eh?

Hur hur.

You must not have seen this way of playing before, right?

Let me tell you what this is called then. It's called the "Great Slant Joseki."

In my previous world, this was one of the three most complex josekis to play!

# Chapter 1139: The astonishing variations of the Great Slant Joseki!

Ten minutes went by!

But Peter was still not making any moves!

With both parties allocated two hours of game time, Peter only had an hour and forty-five minutes left on its timer. A precious dozen minutes had been wasted on just this one move!

The two referees gave each other baffled looks.

The Americans were unable to sit still any longer. They kept looking in the direction of the machine, afraid that there was some bug with the code that led to Peter freezing up. But when they checked the machine's status lights, they found nothing wrong with it, nor was there an error. This showed that Peter was working normally and that it was just "thinking." Further, it was "deep in the tank."

Why?

What the hell was going on?

Why did it just stop making moves?

No one could understand what Peter's hesitation was!

Perhaps only Zhang Ye knew. This joseki was known as one of the three most complex josekis in his previous world because it was one of the hardest to play. That was because the Great Slant Joseki had too many variations. To say that it was infinite would be an exaggeration, but it was definitely not as easy to resolve as others would think. There were just too many ways to play it. Furthermore, with every new play made, there would be many more choices of play appearing. If one was not careful, the entire game would be lost!

It could be used to kill the opponent!

Or it could kill oneself!

This was what the Great Slant Joseki was, an extremely dangerous joseki to play. Even in Zhang Ye's previous world where most of this joseki's variations were studied in depth, the top players in the Go world would not freely resort to playing it during a critical tournament. If they were careless with just one move in the sequence, they might even end up hurting themselves rather than the opponent. This was not something that hadn't happened before!

And today, Zhang Ye had to take this risk. He had to test out this weakness of Peter's that he found out about yesterday!

Yu Yingyi said in a speechless manner, "Peter seems to have slowed down? Didn't they say that it was given an upgrade? Why does it seem like it was even better before the upgrade happened?"

Chen Ying was not willing to draw a quick conclusion. "Perhaps there's something more to the move?"

"Something more to it?" Yu Yingyi asked.

Chen Ying said, "I don't understand it either, but since Professor Zhang played that move, there should be some kind of deeper meaning to it. Besides, Peter taking so long to process this move and not play should also prove that this move is not that simple." She was a little dismayed and felt that her Go skill was still lacking by too much. It had been like this since yesterday's game. For this battle between these two grandmasters, she could barely understand any of the moves with her skill level.

So she said, "I'm not skilled enough, but it seems like this position is another crucial point. Is there a producer around? Can we check if we can invite Teacher Xiang Rong to join us?"

Soon after, Xiang Rong 9-dan actually came over.

Yu Yingyi said, "Hello, Teacher Xiang."

Xiang Rong nodded in greeting and sat down.

Chen Ying immediately asked, "Master Xiang, I really don't understand this move of Professor Zhang's. Can you please explain it to our viewers?"

Xiang Rong nodded.

Chen Ying sighed.

But Xiang Rong went on to say, "Then let me say this that I actually don't understand this move either."

Chen Ying was floored!

Yu Yingyi fainted!

The home viewers were also floored!

The atmosphere turned really awkward. But then, Peter stirred!

"It's made its move!" Yu Yingyi shouted.

Peter cut across the large knight's move enclosure!

When Zhang Ye saw this, he smiled and responded instantly!

Afterwards, Peter went silent again!

It wasn't until five minutes later that Peter played another move.

But Zhang Ye did not even stop to think and replied with a bump!

Peter pondered and went deep in the tank a third time!

A cut across?

An open battle?

Alright then, I'll play along with you!

Zhang Ye looked utterly relaxed.

By now, if the pro Go players still could not tell what was going on, then they shouldn't be pros!

Xiang Rong was to first to look surprised. "What a large slant that is!"

Chen Ying was also dumbfounded. "How fearsome! This is too

fearsome!"

Yu Yingyi could not understand. "Just what is happening?"

Chen Ying was so astonished she was sweating. "I had thought that Peter's cut across move was a very good one at first since it could advance or retreat from there. But from the looks of it, that move has dragged Peter down into the quagmire! Professor Zhang's follow up has forced Peter with no choice but to fight it out! What's more, the variations increase with every move. If Peter responds with a horizontal stretch, Professor Zhang can counter it. It's impossible to make any predictions after that as they are all variables. But if Peter gets into the corner and Professor Zhang chooses to forcefully attack, he would gain the ko threat after another three moves. With so many variables, it's impossible to see who will gain the upper hand. Besides, even if one side gains the initiative, the variables over here will still exist. There will still be a chance for the other to counter that! Th-There is simply a myriad of variations!"

Yu Yingyi said dumbfounded, "Peter made a wrong move?"

Chen Ying said, "It shouldn't have cut across the large knight's move enclosure. If it had played a horizontal stretch—"

"Peter did not play wrong," Xiang Rong interrupted.

"Eh?" Chen Ying looked at him.

Xiang Rong laughed and said, "When the stone that led to Professor Zhang's large knight's move enclosure being formed was played, the setup was complete. I only understood just now why Peter had been thinking for so long. Come and look at this." He grabbed a laptop and replayed the moves on it. "If Peter plays a horizontal stretch here, the outcome will still be the same. Professor Zhang could've played over here and things would still be as dangerous as it is now."

Chen Ying said in surprise, "Then what about a diagonal move?"

Xiang Rong said, "It could do that. But Professor Zhang would follow up, and Peter would play over here with Professor Zhang fighting back in response. If we did an even more detailed analysis of the board state, it would get even more complex! Or an underneath attachment over here would also be a way to cope with that move. If it were played this way, then followed by this move, Professor Zhang would probably end up playing over here before Peter counters it. The variation, in this case, would not be that great anymore and it would also be a simple way of avoiding the joseki. But if the setup gets broken, Peter would probably have to take a two or three point loss and be down in the score. I believe that with Peter's upgraded computational power, it would definitely not choose that outcome. Between an uncertain outcome and a bad outcome, it would definitely not choose the latter!" Taking a pause, he then added, "Perhaps there might also be a better way to avoid this problem? But as the board state is too complex, it would require a long time to analyze it before we can determine how to best play the moves. It would take much effort to work out all the different possible variations. I'm afraid that it would take more than a year to do that!"

A year?

Yu Yingyi was stunned on the spot!

Chen Ying gasped!

Xiang Rong said in admiration, "Professor Zhang is indeed a genius. This is definitely a new type of complex joseki. Every new step in the sequence brings along a frightening amount of variations!"

Chen Ying suddenly asked, "But why does Professor Zhang seem like he does not need to think through his moves? Look, every move in response is played after an instantaneous judgment. He does not hesitate at all!"

Xiang Rong gave a wry smile. "I don't know."

Yes, he really did not know why!

At the other side.

The Qiyuan's people were also astonished!

Hu Liang's mouth was agape as he said, "A new joseki?"

"This is too complex!"

"Damn, I'm going to go crazy watching! Th-This is way too messy!"

"There are too many ways to play this joseki! But most of them would lead to a dead group forming. Once a wrong choice has been made, they will be doomed! How did Professor Zhang come up with this joseki?"

"Holy shit, Professor Zhang has played some miraculous moves again!"

"Why does he not need to think it through?"

"Oh, you're right! How does he do that?"

"With every branch of variations, there ought to be several hundred to thousands of moves possible. Even the goddamn computer has been confused by it! Even an upgraded AI was made to think for a long fucking time! So why does Professor Zhang not even need to think? Moreover, he can just play any move and it leaves Peter with several dozen choices of moves to make?"

"Could he be more computerized than the computer is?"

No one knew how Zhang Ye did it!

Logically, such a fearsome joseki that even managed to confuse Peter should also befuddle Zhang Ye a bit. He should also have a headache over how to play it!

If Peter could talk, he would probably be cursing right now!

Why?

There was no why actually.

If Peter's "brain" contained all the records of this world's Go games?

Then Zhang Ye's brain also contained many of the games from his previous world. No one in this world knew or researched the Great Slant Joseki, one of the three most complex josekis that had been studied extensively in his previous world. Some of the key variations of the joseki were already imprinted into Zhang Ye's mind, so why would he need any time to consider his moves!

You can depend on data?

Hur hur! So can I!

# Chapter 1140: Zhang Ye plays the second of the three most complex josekis!

Things were in full swing online!

Zhang Ye's Great Slant Joseki had dumbfounded countless people!

"Beautiful!"

"That was so godly of Teacher Zhang!"

"This fellow has managed to pull something off again!"

"Hahaha, Peter can't react anymore!"

"This joseki probably has more than several thousand variations!"

"Peter is still thinking! Adding the time it took for its earlier moves, it has already used up half an hour of its clock. This strange joseki must not be in its database of game records!"

"Zhang Ye is amazing!"

"Take the game in one fell swoop, Teacher Zhang!"

"Who was it that said yesterday that Teacher Zhang would not be able to come up with another style?"

"Any casual move by Zhang Ye is an earth-shattering move!"

"In terms of face smacking, I have to give it to Zhang Ye!"

"Yeah, that guy's brain is totally more computerized than the computer!"

There was exhilaration all around!

Everyone could again see hope in winning a game!

Finally, Peter played. It was a very strong move!

Zhang Ye thought for two minutes before responding!

Peter slipped back into thinking mode again and played its stone after another four or so minutes!

Zhang Ye bumped on his turn!

Peter thought again for a minute before playing its stone!

A lot of people watching TV had been dazzled. It was wonderful!

Commentator Chen Ying said, "The corner of the board is seeing a heated confrontation between the two players. Neither of them can pull back now! It's just do or die from here! The number of possible variations is increasing as well. We can't figure out who has the upper hand. But if we judge by the time left on each player's clock, it's clear that Professor Zhang has used up less time. Meanwhile, Peter has spent longer thinking and has already used up a quarter of its allocated time!"

Xiang Rong 9-dan said, "If Peter does not quickly break the structure apart, it will have an even harder fight waiting. It has been mired here for too long by Professor Zhang!"

Chen Ying said, "Peter has stopped again. Let's see what kind of reply it can come up with this time....Oh, Peter has played! This is a very beautiful move!"

Peter bumped!

Just this move alone caused Zhang Ye to be relegated into a passive state!

Zhang Ye replied!

Peter attacked again!

Zhang Ye played a cut!

Peter called an atari!

After another eight moves have been exchanged, the board state in the bottom left corner drastically changed!

Xiang Rong said stonily, "Peter has broken through the

structure."

Chen Ying looked disgusted!

Yu Yingyi said in surprise, "Broke through?"

Chen Ying gasped and said, "Not only has it broken through, Peter has practically surrounded the territory in this corner of the board. Professor Zhang's stones are all dead!"

"What?" Yu Yingyi said in shock.

Xiang Rong said, "This is the worst possible scenario. In localized battle, Peter has already showcased its extraordinary computational power. Today's upgraded version of Peter is obviously far superior, with many of the localized territories being handled very well and reinforcing their attacks as well. Professor Zhang has clearly suffered a huge loss over here. He had actually been trying to drag Peter into a battle, but the outcome turned out for the worst. Not only did Peter manage to get away, it even gained an advantage of more than a dozen points! It won't be easy at all for the white stones! Professor Zhang's joseki play is very strong, but Peter's computational ability is even better!"

Over a dozen points?

Gaining an advantage of two or three points in the opening was already considered very advantageous and rare. But in just a short time, he was already behind by over a dozen points? All of the white stones in the corner were as good as dead?

The Qiyuan's people all looked as pale as sheets!

Hu Liang cried out, "We're done for!"

Xu Han said bitterly, "The gap has opened up!"

"How can he still play like this?" Li Yi 9-dan was sweating in worry for Zhang Ye.

Wu Changhe said angrily, "I said that we couldn't let the kid try out those tricks of his! But he still didn't pay heed to my advice!"

"What do we do now?"

"He's behind by too much. How can he catch up?"

"An upgraded Peter is really this strong? If it were before, even if it could manage to break through the structure, it would not be possible for it to grab an advantage of over a dozen points in such a complex board state!"

When the Americans saw that state of the board, they heaved a sigh of relief and looked relieved. Although it had taken some time, which was not to their expectations, the end result was something they were willing to accept. Peter had gained an absolute advantage, and it was still just the opening!

The American representative looked over to Zhang Ye, who was seated not too far away, and thought to himself, Now you know just how strong Peter is after getting an upgrade? No matter what moves you try today, no matter what kind of new playstyles you come up with, Peter can analyze all of them and not get led by the nose!

It would only get simpler from here!

All they had to do was not let up on the attack!

The Americans were confident that victory was in their hands!

The Qiyuan's people were all feeling extremely nervous!

The television viewers were also getting jittery!

Only Zhang Ye's expression was different from theirs. The camera at the venue suddenly zoomed in on Zhang Ye and discovered that he was actually smiling. It was as though he did not mind that he had fallen behind by more than a dozen points. He was simply indifferent to it all!

Chen Ying said, "We can see that Professor Zhang looks calm and composed!"

Xiang Rong narrowed his eyes. "He should still have other ideas!"

But the Americans did not think that Zhang Ye would be able to make a comeback. In their opinion, the remainder of the game would only serve to become Peter's killing field!

In the game room.

Zhang Ye was indeed calm and composed. This was something he expected. He knew that the Great Slant Joseki couldn't contain Peter and force it into committing any errors. On the contrary, playing this joseki was more disadvantageous for himself as he did not have the computational power that Peter had. He knew that he wasn't a match for Peter in any localized battles. Even if he had all that research information about the Great Slant Joseki from his previous world, it was only meant to aid him to a certain extent. With Peter seeing all of the moves that were advantageous to him, there was hardly anything that Zhang Ye could do about it.

He was using the opportunity to test it out, and he found out what he wanted to!

The artificial intelligence had really been given an upgrade! So it had its computational depth increased and its analytical power fine-tuned to be more precise? The magnificent move and new opening that were played yesterday had really sent the Americans panicking then? So they had to increase Peter's computational depth in this area as they wanted it to crack any of Zhang Ye's new playstyles? They wanted to be able to predict every of Zhang Ye's moves? Like the Great Slant Joseki, it was probably cracked due to the increase in computational depth, wasn't it? Thinking of this, Zhang Ye smiled again. Hur hur, it looks like you people have done this in vain. This upgrade is probably going to be the biggest mistake on your part!

They wanted to predict all the possible solutions? It's possible that your machine might really be able to achieve that!

But have you forgotten that there's a price to pay for that? And that price is—time!

He looked at his own clock.

And then had a look at Peter's clock.

It had already used up 40 minutes? Very good! Then come and give this next one a try too!

Chen Ying said, "Oh, Professor Zhang has made his move!"

Xiang Rong was taken aback. "Upper left?"

Chen Ying added, "Professor Zhang has given up on the lower left and played his next move in the upper left. Peter did not take any time to think and immediately responded!"

But Zhang Ye placed his next stone down with a smile!

Then Peter went deep in the tank once again!

Xiang Rong was surprised at this. "This!"

Chen Ying was also stunned. "This..."

Five minutes!

Ten minutes!

Peter didn't "budge" an inch!

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye was beaming and crossed his legs. He looked as relaxed as could be.

The Americans were enraged!

The television viewers blew up!

The pro Go players of China Qiyuan were floored!

"Again?"

"This again?"

"What is it this time!"

"Holy shit!"

"How is it yet another goddamn complex joseki?"

"What the hell is this!"

"Goddammit! How did he come up with yet another one!"

"This is too complicated! I feel like vomiting blood just seeing it. Fuck!"

"If it were me going up against Professor Zhang, I would have flipped the table already! He's too sly. After that large slant, he has come up with yet another one?"

"What is this one called?"

"Who knows! I've never even seen it before!"

Dan Donghe looked at Wu Changhe in shock. "Have you seen this before?"

Wu Changhe gave a wry smile and shook his head. "I've never ever seen it before, but this is really too complex! At first glance, I can already see that there are over a dozen variations to play! This is..."

Li Yi said angrily, "Isn't Little Zhang asking for it? He suffered such a crushing defeat, so why doesn't he learn? Why is he still trying those tricks of his?"

Dan Donghe suddenly said, "That might not be it. Look, the one having trouble dealing with it is definitely Peter!"

Peter was still silent!

15 minutes had already passed!

The Americans glared at Zhang Ye. They really wished to go up to him at this moment and finish him off!

Are you done or what?

You're still not finished yet?

What the fuck is this kind of playstyle!

Are you doing this on purpose?

Yes, in fact. Zhang Ye was doing this on purpose!

The Magic Sword Joseki — the second of the three most complex josekis from Zhang Ye's previous world!

## Chapter 1141: Playing all three of the most complex josekis!

With the Magic Sword out!

The board state became a quagmire!

Online, many Go players felt as though their heads were about to explode!

"Holy shit!"

"I can't look at this anymore!"

"This is too confusing!"

"My brain fucking hurts!"

"How on earth do you solve something like this?"

"Where does Zhang Ye get so many weird moves from!"

"If I were Peter, I would definitely fucking want to kill him!"

The Great Slant Joseki had exhausted countless people as they tried to make out its depth. Those endless possibilities and variations would perhaps even confound top players like Xiang Rong, Li Yi, and others. In the end, Peter had a hard time climbing out of it before immediately coming face-to-face with the Magic Sword Joseki. Just what kind of an experience was this? What was for sure was that this was definitely a "fuck my life" kind of moment! It was fortunate that Zhang Ye was facing a machine with no emotions. Otherwise, if a human were sitting across from him at this time, that person would probably fight him physically after the game, regardless of whether they won or lost. This was too fucking mean!

The Magic Sword Joseki: one of the three most complex josekis to play in Go back in Zhang Ye's previous world. Compared to the other 3-4 point josekis, the Magic Sword Joseki was the most complex and difficult one to play against!

After Zhang Ye's large knight's move, Peter became unresponsive!

Chen Ying said in surprise, "Peter has gone into the tank again. It has already been 15 minutes and no move has been made yet. Is this Professor Zhang's strategy? Will it really work?"

Xiang Rong was also a little speechless. "What a strange game this is!"

Chen Ying agreed, "Yes, this joseki might not look like anything much at first glance as there are only four stones in the corner. But it is similar to the large slant from earlier. On a more detailed look, it seems like there's no solution to it! With this joseki played, it is truly time for these two players to have their skills tested. We simply can't predict how this will end!"

The time left on Peter's clock was dwindling!

Its clock displayed just over an hour!

The Americans were getting anxious. They were all screaming inside their heads.

Get him!

Fuck him up!

Increase your advantage!

Everyone was waiting. They were waiting for Peter to make a choice and respond to the move. But as they could not see any expression, nor was there any expression to show, no one really knew the status of Peter!

However, they could all see Zhang Ye's expression. He looked very comfortable even though he was behind by more than a dozen points. He was looking unexpectedly calm!

The Americans clenched their teeth!

But everyone else was feeling reassured!

Zhang Ye's calmness had given them a lot of confidence!

Li Qinqin said, "Can he make a comeback?"

Hu Liang said, "Professor Zhang seems confident of it!"

Xu Han gave a wry smile and said, "We must think of it that way!"

Everyone wanted to see how this joseki would be played out. As it was too complex, many of them had already given up on analyzing it, so they quietly waited as they watched!

Peter had 58 minutes of left on the clock.

Finally, it made its move!

Peter cut across Zhang Ye's large knight's move and began open battle!

Zhang Ye smiled and placed his stone, playing a "reach around" on the outer side!

Peter went silent once again!

Five minutes later, Peter played a stretch above Zhang Ye's stone!

Zhang Ye didn't even think and went straight for a corner position!

Peter went deep in the tank again!

Chen Ying applauded and said, "How wonderful!"

Yu Yingyi was dizzy. "I can't understand anything that's going on!"

Xiang Rong explained, "Professor Zhang has more of the initiative. Although it might look like he did not think much before playing his moves, all of his moves are quite beautiful. It seems like he is coming up with the best responses to every move that his opponent is making in the complexity of this joseki. He's truly a strong player!"

Chen Ying said worriedly, "But the board state that's about to unfold looks like it's going to be a matter of choices. And the choice to be made here is very important, so I wonder how Peter is going to handle it!"

Peter moved again!

Zhang Ye blinked and replied!

Chen Ying cheered, "Good move! Professor Zhang, what a good move!"

But Xiang Rong said, "That's a joseki trap."

Chen Ying was startled. "A joseki trap?"

Xiang Rong nodded.

After a slight analysis, Chen Ying broke out in a cold sweat. "It's really a joseki trap! Professor Zhang is trying to lure Peter in!" She thought to herself how he could be so crafty!

However, Peter did not fall for it. It played an extension!

Zhang Ye bumped.

This time, Peter was obviously faster in processing and retreated with its move, purposely staying away from it!

Zhang Ye narrowed his eyes. He went for a push-through move against Peter's expectations!

They were engaged in a closely fought battle!

It was thrilling!

This was not a real battle, and there was no smoke and fire. But on this small Go board, it felt like two grandmasters were crossing swords and spilling blood!

Xiang Rong said, "Peter has no way out. It can only face the fight! It's even more so for Professor Zhang, but this should be what he wants and probably why he played that joseki in the first place! The circumstances are the same as the large slant joseki from

earlier. Only one can survive, so unless the other falls, no one can get out. The only thing is we don't know who will remain standing at the end!"

In the spectator room, people were shouting and cheering!

"You can do it!"

"Charge!"

"Professor Zhang, go for it!"

But very quickly, their expressions changed!

Just as Zhang Ye's white stones were bashing his opponent, Peter played a wonderfully magnificent move!

After three minutes of thinking, Peter applied pressure in the corner and cut off Zhang Ye's momentum straight down the middle!

Zhang Ye frowned. His expression of helplessness was captured by the cameras.

The Americans applauded Peter's move!

Alright!

Beautiful!

That was very well executed!

Meanwhile, those who were siding with Zhang Ye could only sigh in unison!

Zhang Ye made his next move!

Peter attacked again!

Zhang Ye played a horizontal stretch!

Peter chased after him!

When Zhang Ye knew that nothing would come out of this, he gave up and got out of the entanglement.

Xiang Rong sighed. "Peter has broken through again!"

Yu Yingyi asked anxiously, "How is Professor Zhang doing then?"

Chen Ying answered, "Professor Zhang has suffered another great loss. The series of exchange in the upper corner has led him to lose at least another ten or more points. Then, there is another group of five or six stones that have been surrounded and are dead!"

Dead?

Another group was dead?

Yu Yingyi despaired!

When the television viewers heard that, they also lost all hope!

They had been down by over a dozen points. And now, they were down by yet another dozen points? Adding them together, wouldn't they be at around a 30-point deficit? What else was there left to play for!

They were going to lose?

There shouldn't be a way to play on, right?

Chen Ying 7-dan said sadly, "Professor Zhang is very much so in danger. Although I'm also rooting for him to win, based on the board state, there's almost no hope."

Xiang Rong also felt the same. "If it were me, I would've resigned by now."

Resign? That would mean conceding the game!

Even Xiang Rong was saying this, so it could be seen just how hopeless things was for Zhang Ye!

However, Zhang Ye did not do so!

Not only did he not concede, Zhang Ye still looked as calm as ever as he continued playing. This time, he played his move right in the third corner where there were already some stones setup!

Peter immediately replied with a cut!

Zhang Ye pushed deeper!!

Peter did not allow it!

Zhang Ye forced his way in!

Peter pushed him back!

With the Magic Sword Joseki cracked, the remaining computation for the moves weren't that difficult for Peter. It was starting to play efficiently again and almost did not waste any time. Every move was completed within a minute, while it was Zhang Ye's turn to be deep in the tank.

The board state proceeded to the middlegame!

The two sides exchanged another eight moves in that corner!

Although Zhang Ye was still fighting, everyone else thought he was just trying to hold on!

The Americans were confident of their victory. Some of them had already looked away from the play. They didn't think that there was any need to watch as the result had been determined!

The Great Slant Joseki?

The Magic Sword Joseki?

Peter cracked them one after the other and showcased how strong its Go skills were!

They believed, in fact, everyone believed, that Zhang Ye was at a dead end. They didn't think that he had any moves left to play!

But right when Peter played a move at what everyone thought was a great position, Zhang Ye suddenly laughed!

It finally happened!

I knew that you would play this move!

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ye pushed!

At the beginning, no one saw anything particular about it.

But when Peter went deep in the tank again after the Great Slant

Joseki and the Magic Sword Joseki, everyone suddenly felt that something was wrong. A bad premonition hit them!

Xiang Rong was startled as he shouted, "It's here again! Professor Zhang is doing it again!"

Chen Ying looked dumbfounded as she just stared in shock at the board!

What in the world!

Again?

You're doing it again?

Hu Liang's legs wobbled!

Xu Han was floored again!

Wu Changhe and Dan Donghe were speechless.

When they noticed the fearsomeness and shamelessness of Zhang Ye's move, everyone silently put that bastard Zhang Ye onto their blacklists!

They knew that they would never want to play against him in the future!

They would absolutely not do something like that!

If they played him, they would probably end up vomiting so much blood that they would die of blood loss!

What kind of move was this?

What kind of playstyle was this?

Americans were only average at Go and were barely seen in international tournaments. Even if there were any, they would have Chinese or Korean ethnicity. But that did not mean that Americans did not know Go. Since the team members could issue a challenge to all humanity on behalf of Peter, they definitely understood Go! When they saw that move by Zhang Ye, and Peter going deep in the tank yet again, the reactions of the Americans

could only be described as "what the fuck!" In their heads, they were cursing at all 18 generations of Zhang Ye's ancestors!

Why don't you just die!

Are you finished yet? Fuck!

After the first one, you still had a second?

After the second one, you're now playing a third?

What is this?

Just what the hell is this?

All of the American team members were raging, but Zhang Ye maintained his calm.

The Avalanche Joseki — the third of the three most complex josekis from Zhang Ye's previous world!

### Chapter 1142: You're done here, it's my turn!

The Go players were all stunned!

The netizens were jumping for joy!

"Aiyo, I'm dying of laughter!"

"Pfft!"

"Requesting to view Peter's 'phobias' stats!"

"Did PeterGo crash?"

"How does Zhang Ye come up with such complex josekis at the snap of a finger!"

"It's already the third one! This is already the fucking third one!"

"Just how many does he have left?"

"Who knows!"

"Could he possibly make a comeback?"

"There shouldn't be anything left to play for in this game, right?"

"Is Teacher Zhang spiting the Americans on purpose?"

Five minutes!

Ten minutes!

Fifteen minutes!

Peter seemed to have crashed!

Zhang Ye smiled and looked at the screen. Ever since the start of the game, he had not shown any trace or acceptance of a loss. He was either just very calm or wore a smile on his face that no one could understand. No one knew what Zhang Ye intended to do and felt that he was just trying to mess up the board state on purpose. But they all had to admit that Zhang Ye really knew how to make trouble for Peter. Just with those three extremely complex josekis that no one had ever seen before nor replicable by anyone in the

Go world, Zhang Ye had done something to Peter that no one before him could manage. Let alone being able to make Peter "vomit blood," they could not even cause it any trouble. Further, Zhang Ye had won yesterday's game fair and square!

Wu Changhe sighed, "This kid, what's the point of constantly playing those josekis? Even after taking all that trouble to play them, he was still killed off by that P-whatever its name was thingy! Does he even know the difference in scores? He can't catch up!"

Hu Liang thought so too. He yelled at the screen, "Professor Zhang, why don't you at least try to catch up! This kind of joseki is too complex! You might find yourself getting entangled in it!"

"Is he going to lose?"

"Aiyo, I'm dying from the anxiety!"

"Professor Zhang, show your might!"

"Do something like that Hand of God you played yesterday!"

With this Avalanche Joseki played, everyone felt like they were breaking down. But there was nothing that they could do since he had played it!

Zhang Ye could understand why they felt that way. He had brought out all three of his previous world's most complex josekis, all of them within just one game. This was not even seen before in his previous world at any of the official tournaments, and it was practically impossible for something like this to happen. How would most professional Go players react when they saw the Magic Sword Joseki? The Avalanche Joseki? The Great Slant Joseki? They would all be pissing their pants already! It was certainly not something that they would play, and if any one of these complex josekis made an appearance in a game, it would be a feat! So for three of them to appear within one game? That would surely be the death of them!

If that was how a world with these three josekis already in existence would react, then it wasn't necessary to speak of just how a world that had not seen them before would react!

The three complex josekis have all been played!

This was a fucking hell game!

There shouldn't be another Go game as complicated as this one, ever!

Of course, the appearance of these three josekis was a result of Zhang Ye's deliberate guidance. It was easier to accept that the Magic Sword and Great Slant Josekis had been played as the conditions to form the patterns were simpler. But the Avalanche Joseki was much more complicated and would rarely appear due to being much more conditional than the other two. After Zhang Ye's failure with the Magic Sword Joseki, he had to purposely bring the game over to the structure in the other corner. Relying on a bit of experience and luck, as well as his slight understanding of Peter's cognitive principles, Zhang Ye was finally able to lead Peter into the trap!

Come on!

Have a taste of this!

The time left on Peter's clock was slowly dwindling!

The live broadcast camera zoomed in on the digits of the clock as they counted down—there weren't even 30 minutes of left on its clock. Only 26 minutes were showing on the clock! Even though they were in the middlegame, and though Peter was leading by quite a bit, it had very little time left on the clock!

In contrast, Zhang Ye still had an hour and thirty minutes left!

When there were just 25 minutes left on Peter's clock, it made a move!

Peter played a push!

Zhang Ye went with the flow and fought it!

Peter countered!

Zhang Ye called an atari!

Peter gave up on the stone!

Zhang Ye captured a black stone!

Two moves later, Peter called an atari on the side of the board!

Zhang Ye did not allow it!

Peter thought for a good five minutes before placing a stone, which was a crucial move!

Chen Ying could not help but say, "Beautiful!"

Yu Yingyi said, "Peter seems to be playing much faster!"

Xiang Rong said, "Yes, compared to earlier, it's much faster!"

Zhang Ye did not have a good way to deal with this move yet, so he had to retreat from there.

But Peter pressed on!

That resulted in Zhang Ye countering with an atari on his next move!

This move of his was welcomed by applause and cheers from those in the commentary booth, as well as everyone else who was watching the match!

Chen Ying said, "Good! Great!"

Xiang Rong was taken aback as he realized that Zhang Ye did not suffer a loss this time. Not only did he not suffer a loss, he even captured a stone and regained a few points against all odds!

The Qiyuan's people were astonished!

This was the first time that Zhang Ye had made Peter taste defeat in a fight in the corners. But whatever this meant, they were not in the mood to think about it. Neither did their attention deviate to that as the battle on the board was so intense that no one was considering other things!

Only Zhang Ye eyes shifted as he kept smiling!

Perhaps due to its earlier mistake, Peter went deep in the tank for another four minutes before playing its next move, then thought for another 3 minutes for its next move!

Zhang Ye did not seem to need to think and played spontaneously!

Peter played a horizontal stretch!

Zhang Ye preemptively grabbed a position!

Peter hesitated for a moment before rushing to fight for it!

Zhang Ye then played a very unusual ghost move!

Peter considered its moves for another three minutes!

Chen Ying suddenly said, "Peter is about to break the joseki!"

Xiang Rong did not say anything.

Sure enough, Peter's next move attacked straight in. With that, the deadlocked battle in the corner came a temporary end, and Peter successfully escaped. But unlike the previous two times, perhaps due to its internal configuration for time rules, many of its moves were hastily played without much thought at all. This led to Peter escaping the fight in the corner only after taking a loss of four or five points!

Yu Yingyi quickly asked, "How are things?"

Chen Ying smiled and said, "This time, Professor Zhang has played the joseki successfully!"

"What?" Yu Yingyi was pleasantly surprised. "That's great!"

Xiang Rong continued and immediately poured cold water on that by saying, "But Peter still has an advantage in the other territories. There's also still a 25, 26 point difference in the score!" Yu Yingyi fell silent!

25 to 26 points?

The game was entering the latter half!

Chen Ying sighed. "It won't be easy to catch up. It's almost impossible!"

The mood dipped a little. This corner fight might have been won, but it was unable to affect the entire battle. Professor Zhang might have played splendidly here, but it did not affect the overall board state much!

The Americans heaved a sigh of relief.

They've finally won!

A loss of four or five points? That was fine, it was totally acceptable. As long as they could break the joseki, it was all fine and they would definitely be able to take this game! Subtracting the compensation, they still led by 25 to 26 points? There was still more than half the game left to be played, so it would be very difficult for them to throw the game! Their advantage was clear as day!

The Americans representative smiled as he looked at Zhang Ye.

Come!

What other moves do you have left?

Huh? What do you have left?

However, one of the Caucasians in the group got startled. He looked shocked as he tugged at the representative and pointed at the computer in a fluster!

Chen Ying also realized it!

She shouted, "Something's wrong! Something's off!"

Yu Yingyi was taken aback. "What is it?"

Chen Ying excitedly pointed at Peter's clock. "Take a look at that!

Look at Peter's remaining time!"

Yu Yingyi exclaimed, "Two minutes and twenty-two seconds?"

Xiang Rong's eyes lit up. "Peter only has two minutes left!"

The Americans could feel their hearts dropping. This was bad!

Meanwhile, the Qiyuan's people blew up!

Li Qinqin said in shock, "Two minutes! Two minutes more and the main time will end. Every move after that will have to be played within one minute! Peter is out of time!"

Hu Liang said, "Even two hours are not enough?"

Dan Donghe exulted. "It was all spent on dealing with Professor Zhang's three josekis!"

Xu Han gasped, "What is Professor Zhang trying to do?"

Everyone looked at one another and could see the shock in one another's eyes!

The three josekis were played, but Zhang Ye's plan was not to use them to win the game. It was not so that he could fight against Peter. His objective since the start was to make Peter run out of time! But would that still be possible? With such a great deficit of points, could he catch up? What moves did Zhang Ye have left?

In an instant, the atmosphere chilled!

The home viewers were also looking at their television screens in shock!

The American representative panicked but quickly forced himself to calm down. Impossible! He couldn't catch up! Even if Peter did not have much main thinking time left and could only use one minute for the overtime after the main time was over, it could still control the overall board state. Besides, with two of the corners already lost, how can you play on? It was too late for that!

A comeback?

Not even God could achieve that!

Chen Ying's voice was getting very loud. "The board is in a very delicate state! Peter has the advantage and is almost in a winning position, but it has used up most of its main time! It won't be able to make any more in-depth decisions! Is there a way to play on? Can Professor Zhang turn things around? Has this been what he was waiting for all along? What killer moves does he have left that he hasn't shown us? Right now, the entire pride of the Go world is in his hands!"

That's right!

Zhang Ye had been waiting for this moment!

He looked at the computer and smiled. We Chinese have a traditional saying called "You're done here, it's my turn." After hogging the limelight for so long, I guess you should be done here?

It's my turn!

This bro will give you a lesson today!

I'll show you another famous playstyle from my previous world!

### Chapter 1143: Go can be played this way?

At the Xuanwumen Go Club for the elderly.

A group of elderly people was getting impatient.

"He has fallen behind by too much!"

"Yeah, so what if he has more time?"

"I'd rather he exchange some of that time for points. He's behind by 25, 26 points as we enter the middlegame. Even a miracle can't save him!"

"Agreed."

"It will be very difficult to continue playing!"

• • •

Back at home.

His father was getting very anxious. "What should he do? What should he do now?"

His mother said loudly, "Aiyo, keep quiet and sit down! Keep watching!"

His father said, "How can I stay seated? He's losing by so much!"

•••

At Old Rao's house.

Yang Shu said eagerly, "Why isn't Senior Bro getting anxious?"

Rao Aimin glanced at the television. "Him? He's just trying to act cool and mysterious."

Chenchen asked, "Aunt, will Zhang Ye win?"

"How can he win?" Rao Aimin pursed her lips. Although that was what she said, Old Rao's eyes were still glued to the game on the television.

• • •

The state of the board was approaching the most crucial period!

The board was also in a most dangerous state!

China Qiyuan's people were all waiting to see just what Zhang Ye was planning. Some of them were clutching their chests with racing hearts. They were simply unable to watch any further!

A professional 5th dan female Go player covered her eyes. "I'm can't watch!"

A 6th dan youth player next to her turned his back to the screen, moaning as he did, as if it would help to ease the tension. But in the end, it wasn't useful at all. So he stuck both his index fingers into his ears, afraid that he would hear Zhang Ye suddenly resign!

"Come on!"

"Professor Zhang, you can do it!"

"Come on!"

"May God bless you!"

"Heavenly Father, please let us win! I beg of you!"

The people at the Qiyuan started shouting. This might well be their final cries!

At present, whether it be the Americans, the Qiyuan's people, or the home viewers, nobody believed that Zhang Ye stood any chance of winning. But none of these people knew that they were about to witness a sensational game!

On the live broadcast.

Zhang Ye smiled and made a move. He placed a white stone in the corner which Peter had taken with a move after he had played the Magic Sword Joseki!

This move was very surprising!

So surprising that even Xiang Rong was taken aback!

Xiang Rong 9-dan said, "What?"

Chen Ying even shouted, "Oh my God, what is Professor Zhang trying to do?"

Yu Yingyi did not dare to speak. She just stared blankly at the screen!

Chen Ying felt incredulous. She could not understand Zhang Ye's intent. "This corner was where that fight took place. Professor Zhang has clearly lost the area, with his stones mostly surrounded by Peter's black stones. Not too many of Professor Zhang's white stones are still alive! But we're seeing Professor Zhang's white stone has once again rushed in for an attack. What's the meaning of this? Suicide? A sacrifice? Or has he made a mistake!"

A mistake?

Everyone paled!

He was behind by so much, and he made a mistake?

Peter probably did not expect that Zhang Ye would venture an attack here. Perhaps due to a lack of time, Peter played its move at the very next second!

Peter played a stand against the attack!

Zhang Ye bumped!

Peter called an atari!

Zhang Ye did not allow it!

Then Peter went with a horizontal stretch!

Chen Ying was despairing. "The white stones are sinking deeper and deeper. Professor Zhang is also falling further and further behind in points. That mistake was a fatal one and has put him in a worse state than before!"

Wu Changhe lambasted, "What the heck is he doing!"

Li Qinqin said in surprise, "That isn't like Little Zhang!"

Xu Han remarked, "What is he doing? Why'd he go for that

corner?"

Hu Liang shouted, "Those white stones are practically dead! How can he prevent it?"

At this point, Peter had run out of main time, his clock reaching zero!

Zhang Ye played a cut!

Peter's overtime period began!

In these types of competitions, one wouldn't lose after their main time was used up. Instead, the game would enter into play that was similar to "blitz." This meant that every move Peter played would have to be made within one minute. Otherwise, if it exceeded this duration and used up the three allocated one-minute overtime periods, the referee would automatically give Peter the loss based on the rules!

10 seconds.

30 seconds.

50 seconds.

Peter hurriedly played a reinforcing move.

Zhang Ye played a descent!

Chen Ying said loudly, "Why is he still attacking over there?"

Yu Yingyi said sadly, "He's basically giving away his stones for nothing!"

This was where Peter had marked out its territory, and though Zhang Ye's stones hadn't been fully captured, they weren't far from it. But now, Zhang Ye was playing more and more stones at this location, sacrificing them with every move he made. This was something that even a laywoman like Yu Yingyi could understand, but why did it seem like Zhang Ye could not?

The home viewers were also appalled!

"We're done for!"

"This time, we're utterly done for!"

"Teacher Zhang has lost it!"

"Damn, he's almost 40 points behind now, isn't he?"

Zhang Ye was seemingly unaware of it all, and after thinking for five minutes, he played again. He still had time left, so much time that he could play at ease.

Peter played its next move with three seconds left in its overtime period!

The Americans looked at one another with smiles on their faces!

The two international referees were somewhat speechless!

But a miracle happened at the very next second!

Without any warning, Zhang Ye suddenly countered with a white stone that landed on a position no one had expected!

Things instantly became tense!

Peter was stunned!

The timer counted up very quickly!

Peter was forced to play!

Zhang Ye smiled as he lightly clicked the mouse—atari!

With that, many people looked shocked!

Xiang Rong cried out, "He's pressing to capture those live stones with a ladder 1!"

Chen Ying looked like she had seen a ghost!

The Qiyuan's people and Go players watching the TV were also dumbfounded!

Forcefully trying to capture the live stones through a ladder?

This was too crazy!

This was too overbearing!

As it turned out, Zhang Ye's earlier series of "blunders" were all made to kill off this black stone of Peter's. In their eyes, this was something only a madman would attempt! The price to pay was too great! If anything went wrong, it would lead to doom! It would lead to a very bad end!

Peter couldn't do anything but give up on that stone!

Zhang Ye captured it!

Then Peter played!

Zhang Ye attacked from the outside!

Peter was taken aback and hurriedly retreated!

Then the most critical stone landed on the board!

Zhang Ye smiled as he clicked the mouse again and called for atari once more. The Magic Sword Joseki that had almost been surrounded by Peter's white stones had now been used by Zhang Ye against the AI. This took Peter by complete surprise!

The Americans were stunned!

Chen Ying was dumbfounded!

Everyone watching the game was shocked!

Zhang Ye captured yet another stone. Normally, the loss of this stone should have been acceptable since Peter was so far ahead. It shouldn't have mattered much at all!

But that was not the case this time!

This stone was different from the others!

When Zhang Ye took that second black stone for himself, even the international referees were shocked to the point that their jaws dropped. They stared fixedly at Zhang Ye as though he was a god of some sort!

Hu Liang exclaimed, "Holy shit!"

Xu Han shouted, "What the fuck!"

Wu Changhe was shocked!

Dan Donghe looked astounded!

They had all witnessed an unbelievable sight!

The stones came alive!

Zhang Ye's dead group in the corner had been revived!

Countless people were looking at the Go board, but none of them could believe what they were seeing!

Sacrificing stones?

Suiciding them?

Forcefully trying to capture live stones using a ladder?

And the dead group got revived!

This...this was a divine miracle!

This...this was pure sorcery!

They were all overwhelmed by Zhang Ye's offbeat playstyle!

Even many of the top pros were seeing this for the first time. It could be played this way? Go can even be played this way?!

1. 征/zhēng/shichō - A ladder is a technique for capturing stones. At each step the attacker reduces the defender's liberties from two to one. | https://senseis.xmp.net/?Ladder

### Chapter 1144: Humanity wins!

The living group died!

And the dead group got revived!

This was the famous "Zombie Style" from Zhang Ye's previous world. The playstyle was the claim to fame of the representative figure of the Go world, Lee Sedol!

There was no such playstyle in this world, and no one has ever seen something like it before. So you could imagine the shock they received when they saw Zhang Ye's dead group get revived. The Zombie Style was a very different playstyle and strategy that players would resort to in times of adversity. This sort of strategy required a higher standard of play than the Cosmic Style. It not only required the player to have an awareness of the overall board state and ability to force an attack, but also required a strong understanding of dead groups, a strong concept of thickness and thinness, as well as have good control of the pace of the game. A player would need to be exceptional in all of those areas to be able to play the Zombie Style. This sort of extraordinary playstyle was also practically unwieldable even by those top players who had studied the Zombie Style!

Chen Ying could feel herself going crazy. "He has captured two living stones with a strong ladder! Professor Zhang's white stones in the corner have come back to life! Oh my god! This is truly a stroke of genius!"

Xiang Rong said excitedly, "That was quite beautiful!"

Chen Ying shouted, "Peter did not foresee this move! It didn't see it coming at all!"

Yu Yingyi asked, "What's their score difference now?"

Xiang Rong did a quick calculation. "Including the compensation, he's only behind by about 17 or 18 points!"

After Xiang Rong spoke, Chen Ying remarked, "This is a miracle! It's truly a miracle!"

From a difference of over 30 points, he had caught up to just being slightly behind by a little over a dozen points. Calling it a miracle was quite right, as this was truly unbelievable!

The Americans were panicking!

Why?

Why hadn't Peter prevented that?

This shouldn't have been the case! It was impossible!

Peter was running on an upgraded version of the program! There shouldn't have been anything that it couldn't predict! Suddenly, the American representative glanced at Peter's clock. He blanched and understood what was going on! Peter was out of time! It didn't have any time to do an in-depth analysis before playing its moves!

Shit!

They'd been had!

The Americans only understood at this moment how important time was for Peter. They only just realized that they had all fallen for Zhang Ye's trickery right from the start. Ever since the Great Slant Joseki appeared, they had slowly been walking into Zhang Ye's trap! Zhang Ye had been waiting for just this moment. The three josekis he played had only one objective: to make Peter use up its time!

Watching from home, many viewers stood up!

China Qiyuan's people were also shouting in excitement after being surprised!

Li Qinqin said anxiously in a loud voice, "Can he catch up? Can he really do it?"

Wu Changhe said, "I don't know! I just don't know!"

Dan Donghe was staring hard at the screen while his palms were sweating profusely!

Hu Liang's heart was pounding. "Just about a dozen more points! There are only about a dozen points left to catch up on!"

"Keep going!"

"Go Professor Zhang!"

"You can do it!"

"Yeah! You can do it! You can do it!"

"Get after it!"

"Quick! There's almost no time left!"

Some professional Go players were even shouting at the top of their lungs!

Peter went deep in thought again!

Two...

Three...

At the last second, Peter played a move straight down the center!

Zhang Ye replied with a checking extension!

Peter retreated!

Zhang Ye did not let up and continued attacking with his next move!

Then Peter played a good move. A stone was placed squarely at a critical position and helped the black stones gain a lot of influence in the center of the board where it could advance or retreat easily!

But Zhang Ye did not bother responding to that move and instead played a move near the bottom left corner. He set his sights back on the almost dead Great Slant Joseki!

The American representative shot to his feet!

Hold it off!

Peter!

You have to hold it off!

Chen Ying immediately yelled, "It's back!"

Yu Yingyi felt fired up just watching. "Professor Zhang has started another fight!"

"Will there be another miracle?" Chen Ying's voice was getting louder and louder. "Can it happen again? We can see here that Professor Zhang has begun a siege! What is he planning?"

Peter ignored him and continued taking control of the center!

But Zhang Ye's next stone penetrated behind the enemy lines!

Peter was taken aback and rushed back to cut!

Then Zhang Ye cast a stone away by placing it inside the dead group!

Chen Ying was surprised. "What?"

Yu Yingyi was panicking badly. "Why did he do that?"

Peter did not hesitate and captured Zhang Ye's white stone!

The Americans cheered on the inside!

Alright!

Well done!

However, Zhang Ye just smiled and calmly played on.

Peter played a strong horizontal stretch!

Zhang Ye played a descent!

This descent shocked a lot of people!

The Americans broke out in cold sweats!

Peter retreated!

Zhang Ye went for the kill!

Although he had one of his stones captured, little did anyone

know that Zhang Ye's objective was not in that position at all. It was a joseki trap played to open up a position elsewhere. Besides, Zhang Ye only had one objective in mind: to force the living stones into a ladder! He wanted to swallow all of the black stones over here!

By the time Peter reacted, it was too late!

Zhang Ye called an atari and captured a stone first!

Peter counterattacked!

Zhang Ye brushed it aside and played a hard bump!

Peter reinforced the empty positions!

Zhang Ye called an atari again and took another stone!

A lot of people could feel their blood racing as they watched!

The Qiyuan's people were shouting in shock and surprise!

"Good!"

"Well played!"

"Heavens! Very beautiful!"

"Professor Zhang, attack!"

They would enter to the endgame soon. The Go board was getting very crowded as the positions to play on lessened!

Peter wildly counterattacked around the perimeter, seemingly without any considerations!

Zhang Ye blocked!

Peter struggled and went all out with its next move!

Zhang Ye smiled as Peter played a hard attachment from above!

Right after, Zhang Ye countered with an atari!

If Peter were a living person, it would surely look wan and pale!

When Peter's third stone in the great slant area was captured,

those at the venue and watching on TV were so shocked they could not speak!

They came back to life!

About seven white stones came back to life within the dead group!

• •

On the Online Go Server.

The online commentator was dumbfounded. "Incredible! What an incredible way of playing! What beautiful captures! Professor Zhang has captured three black stones in a row with ladders! These captures have allowed a portion of the white stones to be revived! Oh my God! This playstyle has to be described as a fantasy! It's literally unheard of!"

• • •

Beijing Television.

The host said in shock, "What's the difference now?"

The commentator looked even more shocked than the host. Due to the fact that he was a pro Go player, this situation unfolding before him felt impossible. "There's no difference anymore!"

The host was taken aback. "No difference?"

The commentator gasped and said, "There isn't a difference anymore! Zhang Ye is only down by a point or two!"

The host was stunned. "What?"

• • •

A female Go player screamed, "Ahhhhh!"

Wu Changhe exclaimed, "He has caught up! He's really caught up!"

Dan Donghe's shouts were even littered with curses. "Great showing! That was a fucking great showing!"

"Professor Zhang!" Hu Liang roared. Li Yi shouted, "We're nearly there!" Liu Hong 9-dan said, "You're only two points behind! Only two points! Catch up!" Xu Han led the cheering. "Let's go!" Everyone responded with cheers! "Let's go!" "Let's go!" "Catch up!" "Professor Zhang, make a comeback!" Li Qinqin's eyes were reddening! Could he do it? Could Little Zhang really do it? In the game room. The game was in its closing stages! Without making any sense, after Zhang Ye revived that small area of white stones, he no longer battled over there. Instead, he went for the center and attacked right away! Peter played a push-through! Zhang Ye forcefully attacked! Peter reinforced its structure!

Zhang Ye forcefully attacked!

Peter reinforced its structure!

Zhang Ye attacked again!

Chen Ying stood up. She could no longer sit still!

Xiang Rong's breathing was getting more rapid!

The Americans were staring straight at the board with wide eyes!

It was almost ending!

It was going to finish soon!

Peter made use of its advantageous opening framework in the center to surround two of Zhang Ye's white stones!

Zhang Ye neither panicked nor rushed as he started fighting back from the inside!

Peter played a stone to reinforce its attack!

However, Zhang Ye bumped it back. Next, he played a played a knight's move and the Zombie Style reappeared. It had unexpectedly revived three white stones in the right corner this time as he continued his attack from the opposite direction!

Peter's reinforcing play was too late!

Zhang Ye continued attacking as the revived white stones started to surround the black ones!

Peter fell silent!

It was too quick!

It was way too quick!

Chen Ying finally reacted after three seconds as she looked at the Go board in shock. All of a sudden, tears flooded down her cheeks and she could not stop herself from crying!

Yu Yingyi got frightened. "What's the matter? Teacher Chen, what is it?"

Xiang Rong's hands were trembling!

Yu Yingyi said in panic, "Teacher Xiang? Teacher Chen? What's happening?"

Chen Ying sobbed, "We've won!"

Yu Yingyi was startled. "What?"

Chen Ying cried, "We wooooon!"

Yu Yingyi froze!

## Chapter 1145: A hero is born!

We won?

We really won?

When they heard that on the Central TV Sports Channel live broadcast, all of the television viewers sprang up from their seats and stared at the screen in shock, watching as Zhang Ye and Peter played out the endgame. It wasn't over yet, and many people were still unsure whether Chen Ying 7-dan's claims were true!

One stone.

Five stones.

Ten stones.

Zhang Ye kept smiling.

But Peter's moves were getting more and more pathetic as it started making more and more mistakes!

The moment the match ended, the two international referees fast walked over to verify the game!

The Americans were pale as a sheet of paper!

The room fell eerily silent!

. . .

Japan.

"The game's over!"

"It's ended!"

How was it?"

"Who won?"

• • •

Korea.

```
"What are things like?"

"How did it go?"

"Hurry up and announce the result already!"

...

Over in China, people were even more interested!

"Has he won?"

"Quickly announce the result!"

"Damn, what exactly is the result?"
```

In the game room.

As this was a very crucial match, the international referees had to verify the game several times before finally giving each other a look. The older referee of the two gave a slight smile.

The camera focused on him!

Thousands and thousands of people were watching him on their televisions!

They heard the older referee announce, "In this game, Zhang Ye is victorious!"

2-1!

Zhang Ye had won!

Humanity won!

And he even won by more than 20 points!

In the endgame, Zhang Ye took an overwhelming victory by making a comeback from more than 30 points down to win the game by over 20 points. It was truly a miracle!

Yu Yingyi shouted, "We've won! We've won!"

Chen Ying was still sobbing. "Congratulations, Professor Zhang!

This is a historic victory for the Go world! Professor Zhang has helped the Go world safeguard the honor of humanity! He is amazing! Professor Zhang was amazing today! This has got to be the highest level of Go achieved by humans! This has got to be the most unforgettable match of the entire international world of Go! After three days of competition, Professor Zhang has defeated the AI by a score of two to one! Professor Zhang has used the most practical of actions to show machines and those arrogant Americans that humans are unbeatable in Go!"

**Arrogant Americans?** 

The director quickly cautioned Chen Ying through her earpiece!

But Chen Ying was already feeling so fired up that she could no longer contain herself. How could she be bothered with using the proper courtesy? She could only use shouting to express herself!

• • •

At the Xuanwumen Go Club for the elderly.

A middle-aged man threw the game record in his hands into the air!

An old man looked at the screen all atremble. He was crying!

"We've won!"

"Zhang Ye has won!"

"Victory is ours! It's ours!"

• • •

At home.

His mother let out an excited shout!

His father couldn't contain his excitement either!

"My son won!"

"Little Ye defeated the computer!"

...

At Old Rao's house.

Yang Shu shouted so loudly that the entire apartment complex could hear her!

"Senior Bro wooooon!"

Rao Aimin rolled her eyes. "That kid really won?"

• • •

At the SARFT.

Wu Zeqing called Secretary Bai over with a smile.

"Chief Wu?"

"I'll be treating everyone for lunch."

"Ah, alright."

• • •

At Old Yao's house.

Yao Mi yelled, "He snatched victory from the jaws of defeat! Oh my God!"

Yao Jiancai's wife said, "Little Zhang really did it!"

"He's ascending!" Yao Jiancai's jaw dropped!

• • •

The live broadcast was still filming!

Chaos reigned at the venue. The moment the result was announced, someone pushed open the door to the game room from outside. Then China Qiyuan's people started streaming in. Wu Changhe, Li Qinqin, Dan Donghe, Li Yi, and Liu Hong were all looking pleasantly surprised!

Zhang Ye stood up and waved at everyone.

He was instantly surrounded by the group of excited people!

Wu Changhe asked loudly, "What are those josekis called?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "They're the Great Slant, Magic Sword, and Avalanche Josekis."

Dan Donghe asked, "What about that playstyle at the end?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "It's called the Zombie Style."

"What a great Zombie Style! What a great Zombie Style!" Wu Changhe's voice was trembling with excitement. No one could stop laughing. "Hahahahaha!"

Li Qinqin said, "Little Zhang, you're the best!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "It was quite a close call; I nearly lost the game. Fortunately, I did not disgrace everyone."

All of a sudden, in the focus of the live broadcast camera.

Hu Liang took a step forward and grabbed Zhang Ye!

Xu Han swiftly followed!

Tian Weiwei also rushed over!

Over a dozen young people lifted Zhang Ye up at once. No one knew if they had discussed this beforehand or thought of it spontaneously.

Zhang Ye was startled by this. "Hey, hey, hey, take it easy! Take it easy!"

But they ignored him and suddenly tossed him high!

Zhang Ye was scared out of his wits, but everyone was cheering!

"Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye!"

They threw him into the air!

Then they caught him!

Then they threw him into the air again!

Many of the pro players expressed their excitement in their own way!

"We've won!"

"We've really won!"

A few female players off to the side were wiping their tears away as they cried with joy. They felt too emotional and did not know how to describe their feelings. Perhaps only by crying could they show their most sincerest of feelings. It was probably also the most direct response they could muster! A lot of people were crying!

Even Dan Donghe couldn't help but tear up a little when he saw this!

No one could control their emotions!

Because it was so incredible they couldn't control themselves!

Shinji 9-dan!

Park Yuhee!

Xiang Rong!

All of the top Go players had fallen to this artificial intelligence. Just as humanity was staring at a crushing defeat, Zhang Ye stepped forward and single-handedly saved the Go world after much difficulty. Witnessing this scene, not only did the blood of those in the Go world race, even the television viewers felt fired up and passionate!

The netizens started flooding the servers with their comments!

The flood of comments was so great that it could even turn the Heavens upside down!

"This is so awesome!"

"Zhang Ye, you're so cool!"

"Damn, I didn't like him that much in the past, but today, I've turned from passerby into fan! I'm even going to be a diehard fan!"

"Face-smacking Zhang has shown his prowess again! I knew he wouldn't be pushed around so easily! Who is Zhang Ye? When has this fellow ever been at a disadvantage?! An AI? And it's even an upgraded version? So what if it has been upgraded! Didn't it still get its face smacked swollen by Face-smacking Zhang all the same! Look at the faces of those Americans!"

"This release feels so good!"

"This is so fun!"

"No one else could do something like this! Zhang Ye is amazing!"

"There hasn't been anyone like Zhang Ye in showbiz for the past 500 years, nor will there be another person like him in the next 500 years!"

"Face-smacking Zhang has left Peter in tears in China!"

"Zhang Ye is indeed the better of the two!"

"My idol! Zhang Ye is definitely going to be my idol for life!"

"I want to learn Go!"

"Me too, I'm suddenly very interested in it!"

"Although I don't know how to play Go, tears were inexplicably rolling down my cheeks from watching the game and listening to the commentary on TV! It was so exciting! Teacher Zhang is a real blessing to mankind. Everyone, please don't criticize him in the future! Otherwise, if we encounter this kind of situation again in the future, who would want to step forward for us? Who could turn things around like Teacher Zhang has done? Other than him, no one's capable of doing so! Don't you guys agree?"

"Agreed!"

"Well-spoken! There's nothing wrong with it!"

"Right, let's not criticize him in the future!"

"Just based on this war between humans and machines, I will support all of Zhang Ye's future works!"

"Teacher Zhang was really fucking cool today!"

"Today, Zhang Ye is the hero of the Go world!"

## Chapter 1146: How lonely it is to be invincible!

Outside the Qiyuan.

Firecrackers popped. Nobody knew who had lit them, but several strings of firecrackers went off one after another. It sounded like the new year had come again.

Faint shouts could also be heard.

"Face-smacking Zhang is almighty!"

"Face-smacking Zhang is almighty!"

"Face-smacking Zhang is almighty!"

"Go back home, you Americans!"

"Hahahahaha!"

The crowd waiting at the entrance were in a celebratory mood! Inside.

Zhang Ye's phone was blowing up with calls!

His eldest younger sister's call:

"Brother! You were so awesome!"

"Haha, that's of course!"

"I would like to learn Go too, teach me."

"Man, you don't have the talent, so you should forget about it."

B-list singer Xiaodong's call:

"You were incredible!"

"Haha, I guess I wasn't too bad."

"Damn, who could have thought that you would really win against the AI! The group of us were all watching the live broadcast. Amy, Xiaoxian, and I were dumbfounded from watching!"

He received over a dozen calls!

His friends and relatives each took turns to bombard his phone with calls!

After hanging up on the last call, Zhang Ye was feeling quite happy. He was suddenly overcome with emotion and sang.

"How lonely it is to be invincible.

"How empty it feels to be invincible.

"Standing alone at the summit, the cold wind continues to blow past.

"Who can understand my loneliness!"

The more he sang, the more excited he became.

"How lonely it is to be invincible.

"How empty it feels to be invincible.

"She who hides beyond the horizon, can you hear what I have to relate!

"My loneliness!

"Endless loneliness!"

Zhang Ye did not even notice that there were still some reporters and cameras nearby. He just sang a song from his previous world called "Invincible "!

The reporters were dumbfounded by what they heard!

A cameraman nearly burst out laughing!

How arrogant!

This fellow was too good at putting on a show!

A middle-aged reporter suddenly looked to the cameraman and asked loudly, "Did you get that? Did you record the singing?"

That cameraman was stunned and quickly checked the camera. "Oh, it was recorded!"

"That's great!" The reporters were all excited!

No matter what conduct that was, it was still Zhang Ye's new song!

• •

At the press conference venue.

Everyone had arrived.

Zhang Ye was led over together with the Qiyuan's people, as well as the American team members.

The press conference was about to begin, and it was the largest one held over the span of the three games. Almost all of the media outlets that could attend were present. The mainstream Chinese media, television stations, and quite a number of Japanese and Korean reporters, along with some Caucasian reporters from either Europe or America, were all gathered here.

The sea of reporters took to their seats and stared in anticipation as they waited to ask their questions. Some of the reporters could not wait anymore and shot off a barrage of questions!

Dan Donghe pressed both hands down to quiet the crowd. "Can you please ask one by one?"

An assistant from the Qiyuan pointed at a reporter whose hand was raised.

That person stood up and asked the American team, "Peter has lost, so the AI you claimed would surpass the wisdom and intelligence of humans couldn't win in the end. So then, will your side admit that the AI is inferior to the wisdom and intelligence of humanity? Or do you all still insist you are right?"

The American representative said, "I firmly believe that it will be the era of AIs from now on. Today's loss was just a minor setback to the long road ahead. It's not that big a deal at all. We're also very grateful to Professor Zhang for showing us that humans are that skilled. We hadn't believed it was possible. Moving on, we will continue to work on and develop our research on Peter's artificial intelligence! Peter will only get stronger and stronger from here on out!"

Another reporter asked, "Will you all try to challenge Professor Zhang again?"

The American representative said with a sunken expression, "Yes, we will certainly challenge him again. For example, we are currently developing Peter's Xiangqi functionalities and believe that it won't be too long before everyone gets to see it. Compared to Go, Xiangqi is also a rather difficult type of strategy board game. If Peter can defeat humanity in that, then..."

He no longer mentioned anything about Go!

The Americans had changed the subject to Xiangqi!

The reporters were surprised by this. Just as they were about to continue questioning, Zhang Ye spoke up!

Zhang Ye undoubtedly lived up to his nickname of Face-smacking Zhang. He interrupted with a laugh, "Sure, I can actually play Xiangqi too."

The American representative almost fainted!

Several of the American team members nearly vomited blood!

Fuck your second uncle!

How the fuck do you know everything!

Why don't you just die!

Why don't you just go and die!

The Americans were left speechless in the end. They no longer mentioned anything about Xiangqi!

The reporters burst out laughing in their heads Yu Yingyi was amused in the audience!

Li Qinqin and the others were also in stitches. There was really no one else like Professor Zhang! But there was indeed nothing wrong with what he said. Everyone had witnessed Zhang Ye's Xiangqi skill before and it was really quite advanced!

In the cheerful and light-hearted atmosphere of the venue.

A female reporter stood up. "Hello, I'm a reporter from Xinhua News. Teacher Zhang, you have represented the Go world today and protected its honor by unwaveringly playing out a wonderful game to turn defeat into victory. It left a lot of people covered in cold sweat from watching, but everyone is happy for you. You are indeed worthy of being called the smartest person in the world now!"

Zhang Ye smiled. "Thank you, but you think too highly of me."

A female reporter asked, "What do you think of everyone proclaiming you as a hero?"

Zhang Ye immediately waved it off and kept his smile. He said, "I'm not a hero, I'm really not one. There are many heroes in the Go world, some you can see and others that you don't know about. Everyone here has a dream and has a sincere passion for Go. It's a feeling that most people probably wouldn't understand. I couldn't understand it either in the past, but after being around the Qiyuan's people over the past few days, I've gained a deeper insight." He looked at the Go players from the Qiyuan and said, "There are some people here who retired many years ago but still have the Go world's considerations at heart. They would step forward the moment the Go world faced any trouble. Some of the young players here even studied game records at the Qiyuan until 1 AM. Some of them have had glorious pasts, while others have stayed unknown to those outside the world of Go. But it is these people who have supported the Go world to this stage step by step,

so if there are any heroes to speak of, it should be them!"

Many of the reporters were stunned.

Zhang Ye pointed to a man. "Dan Donghe. He made his debut at age 16 and became a world champion in 1984 at the International Go Tournament!"

Applause thundered!

Dan Donghe teared up as he stood and bowed.

Zhang Ye pointed at a second person. "Wu Changhe, once the world number one in Go, led the national team to achieve a historic first in claiming three successive championships. He retired in 1995!"

Wu Changhe gave a soft sigh as he stood up and bowed.

All of the audience was applauding!

Zhang Ye said, "Zhao Hui, an 8th dan Go player. With his teammate seriously sick and absent from an international match, he took it upon himself to step up and face the Japanese team and won the match decider. He retired in 1998!"

Zhao Hui was starting to cry, but he held back his tears and stood up ramrod straight!

Zhang Ye said, "Li Qi, a 7th dan player, previously ranked in the top 20 of the world, and retired in 2005. After his divorce, he volunteered to assist in training the national team for over a decade. In that time, he trained many batches of pro Go players who have gone on to excel in the world stage from behind the scenes! Even now, he has not remarried!"

Li Qi slowly stood up with pride!

The audience kept applauding!

Li Qi's ex-wife cried as she watched the television.

Li Qi's daughter was choking back her tears. "Dad!"

Li Yi.

Xiang Rong.

Chen Ying.

Zhang Ye introduced them one by one.

The reporters were moved. All of them stood up and gave their loudest round of applause! There were many names they had never heard, nor did they know who those people were. But when they listened to Zhang Ye introduce each of their stories, none of the reporters interrupted him nor showed any signs of impatience. They were all very touched, and a few young reporters felt fired up as their emotions surged. There were even two female reporters who could not help but wipe the tears from the corners of their eyes. Their hearts were filled to the brim with emotion!

After he finished introducing them.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I'm only a layman who has played three games, so I'm really nothing much in comparison. They are the true heroes of the Go world. Please give them a round of applause!"

The reporters gave another thunderous round of applause!

When the viewers watching TV saw, they were all moved!

Well said, that was really well said!

They are the heroes!

No, all of you are the heroes!

## Chapter 1147: The eternal line of defense for humanity's wisdom!

Half an hour later.

Zhang Ye's speech ended.

With that, the press conference was also done.

The press conference this time felt more like Zhang Ye's oratory ceremony. The reporters had only asked him one question, but what followed was a long talk by Zhang Ye. He knew what to say and knew what the reporters wanted to know, so he just said everything in a single breath. After all, he and the media had been in such regular contact that they understood each other perfectly. Sometimes, there was even a tacit understanding of a common enemy, such as right now.

Applause was sounding for the umpteenth time. Not counting those domestic reporters, even China Qiyuan's people and the foreign reporters were standing up to applaud Zhang Ye!

Chen Ying was feeling some admiration for him.

Dan Donghe was very pleased.

Yu Yingyi learned quite a lot from Zhang Ye's speech.

Everyone was pretty convinced by Zhang Ye. They knew that it wasn't accidental that he could arrive at where he was today and could sense it from the speech that he had just given. On the contrary, they rather disliked the American team who spoke pompous words and had a condescending attitude toward the wisdom of humanity and Zhang Ye, insisting on their belief that Peter would win for sure. However, even after the results were confirmed, they still seemed like they were not accepting their defeat. Not being able to compete in Go, they shifted their talk to taking on the Xiangqi world instead and tried to justify why Peter had lost during the entire press conference. Compared to Zhang

Ye's speech, it was really on a different level. Zhang Ye had not spoken about himself at all and never once took credit for the outcome. Instead, he talked about the veterans and novices of the Go world, as well as the staff working behind the scenes, hailing them as the true heroes!

He was good at speaking?

His emotional quotient was high?

That was absolutely untrue!

The foreign reporters might not know him well, but which Chinese reporter did not understand what kind of person Zhang Ye was? Who would dare to claim that Zhang Ye had a high emotional quotient? If anyone did, they would be the first to get spat on by the others! Zhang Ye's emotional quotient was definitely not high, but the words he spoke all came from his heart. In these days, he had really taken a liking to these lovely people who gave their heart and soul to Go.

Humans were emotional beings. This was unlike machines and perhaps the reason Zhang Ye could win against Peter. And on this point, even if the artificial intelligence were to get developed further and have its computational ability increased and sped up, it would still not be able to learn a thing like emotions.

Everyone dispersed.

The media gradually left to head back to their office to quickly prepare for the news release!

Dan Donghe brought along some people from the Qiyuan and found Zhang Ye. "Professor Zhang, thank you!"

Zhang Ye smiled. "It's what I should do; don't be so courteous."

Dan Donghe tried for the umpteenth time to invite Zhang Ye. "Are you interested in taking up Go? From today onward, your world Go ranking should be number one!"

Hu Liang 7-dan said, "Come join us, Professor Zhang!"

Xu Han said, "Yeah!"

Xiang Rong 9-dan also sincerely invited him. "I've been thinking of retiring for some time now too. I'm already getting old and starting to lose focus whenever I play. pBut our country's young players are not fully mature yet. Tian Weiwei still lacks experience and his playstyle is not stable yet. He can't stand up on his own yet, so I must hold the fort for now. If you do join us, I'll be able to take a step back at last."

"Yeah, Professor Zhang. You are so skilled at Go, it would such a pity if you don't join the national team!" Chen Ying said with a laugh, "If you join us, our national team would dominate everyone else for the next ten years at least!"

This was not drivel. In fact, dominating for just ten years was at the lower end of the estimates. If Zhang Ye were to lead the national Go team, together with Xiang Rong and Li Yi 9-dan, there probably wouldn't be any opponents who could match them. Be it Japan or Korean, be it Shinji 9-dan, Park Yuhee, or anyone else, even if Xiang Rong 9-dan were to retire suddenly, Zhang Ye alone could carry the team and not let them fall.

Zhang Ye quickly waved it off. "I'll pass. But if Peter makes a comeback in the future, just give me a ring. I'll come right over."

Everyone was disappointed.

A Go genius who only came along once a century, the only person who was capable of taking over Xiang Rong 9-dan's position, had actually turned out to be an amateur? He wasn't even considered a professional Go player. This made them all feel a little frustrated. Comparisons really were torturous, and this was certainly the first ever such case in the history of Go!

Dan Donghe knew that Zhang Ye's heart was in a different place, so he didn't try to persuade him any further. He said, "Wherever

you might end up in the future, you will always be part of our Qiyuan. If there's anything you need, just let us know!"

Zhang Ye laughed, "Sure."

"Let's go to my place for a meal then." Dan Donghe still remembered what he promised earlier.

Zhang Ye grunted and did not know how to reject his invitation.

As a result, Wu Changhe, who had been silent all this while, suddenly rolled his eyes and said, "Old Dan, what do you mean by going to your place for a meal?"

Dan Donghe said, "Didn't we already agree on that?"

"Who agreed with you?" Wu Changhe harrumphed. "This kid is coming with me. I still have something to settle with him afterwards."

Dan Donghe was having none of it. "I said it first, I asked him to come over first!"

Wu Changhe said, "Who said that you asked him first? I arranged it with him 800 years ago!"

Dan Donghe said, "Were you even born 800 years ago?"

"Why do you care when I was born?" Wu Changhe bickered, "I was born before you, in any case!"

The two of them started arguing.

Everyone else didn't know whether to laugh or cry. They hurriedly tried to calm them down.

In the end, it was Li Qinqin who took Zhang Ye by his hand with a smile. "Let's go, Little Zhang. Come to Auntie's place for a meal." Then she looked at Dan Donghe and said, "Old Dan, I already made food at home."

"Alright then, Sister-in-law," Dan Donghe had to agree.
"Professor Zhang, I'll treat you to a meal another day then."

"Sure." Zhang Ye did not say anything else. "I'll be heading off then."

Hu Liang said, "Let's play a practice game some other day."

Zhang Ye said, "No problem."

Xiang Rong said, "Let's have an exchange sometime. We never finished the game game we started."

Zhang Ye smiled, "Sure, at a later date."

"Take care, Professor Zhang!"

"You did a great job!"

"Thank you!"

"If you need any favors in the future, just let us know!"

Everyone waved goodbye to Zhang Ye. Having spent time together over the past few days, Zhang Ye had taken a liking to this group of people who loved Go so deeply, so how could they not change their opinion of him? The rumors regarding Zhang Ye had painted him in a bad light as someone with a bad temper and a vile person who liked scolding people. So they had initially stayed a distance from him even though they respected him. At times, they would even feel uneasy in his presence. But the short time they had together allowed them to understand Zhang Ye better and realize that those rumors were just that, rumors. To those he considered his own, Zhang Ye always treated them very nicely and with a good temper. As a superstar, he never put on any airs around them and could also play Go very well. This made them unable to feel jealous even if they wanted to be jealous of him. They thought of Zhang Ye as a friend now.

• • •

On the way to Old Wu's parents' place, the newspapers and news reports were starting to appear all over the place!

"Zhang Ye trashes Peter!"

"In the war between humans and machines, humans have prevailed!"

"The ultimate explosion of humanity's wisdom!"

"AI still inferior to wisdom of humanity. Zhang Ye proves the point once again!"

"The savior of the Go world: Zhang Ye!"

"The American team has been sent packing!"

"Zhang Ye's press conference speech: The unsung heroes of the Go world!"

"Zhang Ye says, 'I know how to play Xiangqi too!'"

"Peter will suffer from a phobia of 'Zhang Ye' from here on out!"

"We have reason to believe that as long as Zhang Ye is around, the last line of humanity's wisdom will never be broken through! We should be grateful that a genius like Zhang Ye exists in our world!"

Zhang Ye was once again on fire!

Just a short half a month after King of Masked Singers, Zhang Ye's popularity was once again off the charts!

There were only cheers in the media!

The citizens were also full of praise!

"How awesome!"

"This is Face-smacking Zhang!"

"Hey, Americans, I just want to ask if you have conceded defeat yet?"

"Hahahaha!"

"Zhang Ye was so godly today!"

"I just like the absurdity of Zhang Ye!"

"Yeah, Teacher Zhang's talent and intelligence are really too

fucking absurd!"

"If I were those Americans, I would be crying myself home! And I probably won't ever be returning back here ever again!"

## Chapter 1148: Love comes to fruition!

Later that afternoon.

At a courtyard house in Xuanwumen.

When they entered the northern building, Li Qinqin asked him warmly, "Little Zhang, what would you like to drink?"

"Anything is fine, Auntie," Zhang Ye smiled and said.

Li Qinqin said, "Please don't say that. We have all kinds of drinks here at home that you can choose from."

Zhang Ye replied, "I'm really fine with anything."

Wu Changhe glanced at his wife. "Just get him a cup of hot water."

Li Qinqin stared at him. "How can we serve him hot water?" She then turned to Zhang Ye and said with a smile, "That's right, we actually do have some good tea at home. I heard that just a single gram of it can fetch a price of 10,000 yuan. I don't know if it's true or not, but it's what everyone is saying. Besides, you can't get this tea from anywhere. My daughter brought it back some time ago for us to have a taste. Why don't you have some!"

Wu Changhe put out his hand to stop her. "Hey, that Da Hong Pao is for us!"

Li Qinqin rolled her eyes at him. "You've almost finished all of it already, so why don't you let Little Zhang have a taste."

Wu Changhe's eyes twitched. "We still have some superior Longjing around! Use that!"

Li Qinqin did not listen to him. "I'll just make tea with Da Hong Pao."

Wu Changhe reminded her, "Don't use too many tea leaves! We don't have much left!"

What?

Da Hong Pao?

Zhang Ye was a little taken aback but did not say anything.

Li Qinqin went off to brew the tea, leaving Zhang Ye and Wu Changhe to stare at each other in awkward silence.

Zhang Ye tried to strike up a conversation. "Uncle, is this courtyard house part of your family's property?"

When they were at the Qiyuan, Wu Changhe acted rather chummy with Zhang Ye after he had won the game. But after they returned home, he went back to his uncaring attitude, probably because he still bore a grudge from when he was utterly demolished by Zhang Ye in online Go. He said, "Who else could it belong to if not my family?"

Li Qinqin said as she boiled the water, "Changhe earned some money back when he was playing Go competitively. The value of money at that time was much better and property prices were not expensive, so we bought this courtyard house, as well as a few apartments, some antiques, and calligraphy works. Your uncle is very interested in collecting things like antiques and the such. In recent years, with antiques and property prices rising, we've managed to make quite a bit of money. We're actually just your average family."

Wu Changhe asked, "Is our daughter not back yet?"

"I called her already." Li Qinqin said, "She said that she would knock off earlier today, so she should be back soon. Since you two have some free time, why don't you play a game of Go?"

Zhang Ye was fine with that. "Sure."

But Wu Changhe said in a speechless manner, "Who wants to play him!"

Li Qinqin laughed and said, "Are you afraid of losing?"

"Me? Afraid of losing?" Wu Changhe let out a furious laugh. "I'm telling you, Li Qinqin. It's just that I'm getting on in years. Thinking back to when I, Wu Changhe, was dominating the world of Go for over ten years, was there anyone who dared to challenge me? It's not that I'm bragging, but even I myself would be afraid to face the Go skill that I had at my peak. If I were to return to that era, would a mere AI be a threat to me? Who knows who would win and who would lose!"

Li Qinqin pursed her lips. "Say what you like."

"What do you mean?" Then Wu Changhe looked at Zhang Ye and said, "You just haven't witnessed how good I was back then, you know?"

Zhang Ye hemmed and hawed as he listened to the boasting.

At this moment, the door in the courtyard creaked and footfalls rang out.

Wu Changhe smiled and said, "My daughter is back!"

Zhang Ye stood up and turned around.

Wu Zeqing, who was dressed in a skirt, stepped lightly into the house. She looked at Zhang Ye and smiled. "How about it? I said that you could do it, right? You won today's game beautifully. It was even better than yesterday's game."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I had to."

Wu Zeqing asked in concern, "Have you eaten lunch yet?"

"Not yet. The interview got dragged on into lunch time," Zhang Ye said.

Wu Zeqing said, "Let's eat now, I'll cook." Then she pointed at Zhang Ye's attire and said with a smile, "Don't wear such light-colored clothes when you go on camera next time. It doesn't look good on screen. You'd look better dressed in black."

Zhang Ye nodded. "Alright."

Wu Changhe fumed at that. "Daughter, you didn't even say a word to me or your mother after stepping into the house. Is this kid your world?"

Wu Zeqing smiled. She was holding something in her hand and waved it around to her father. "How can that be? I bought edible bird's nest for you and Mom. I got someone to help me bring it over from Indonesia by air."

"That's more like it." Wu Changhe took it from her.

Li Qinqin walked up, taking short strides. "Come, the tea is ready. Come and have a taste."

Wu Zeqing asked, "What type of tea?"

Wu Changhe said angrily, "Your mother is such a wasteful woman. She brewed tea using the Da Hong Pao tea leaves that you gave me that time. Whoa, didn't I say not to use so many tea leaves? Are you crazy? Why did you put in so many tea leaves? Isn't that a little too much?"

Li Qinqin pouted and said to her daughter, "Look at how stingy your dad is. He wouldn't allow others to touch his tea leaves. When I said that I wanted to let Little Zhang try some, he became unhappy."

"But it's so expensive!" Wu Changhe said in distress.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Auntie, I can just have some other tea."

Li Qinqin wouldn't allow it. "That won't do. You definitely have not tried this before. Try it, it's a really good tea. I heard that even those CEOs and celebrities couldn't get their hands on it. This tea is even more valuable than gold."

Wu Zeqing laughed helplessly and said, "Mom, how can he not have tasted it before."

Li Qinqin was taken aback. "Did you give some of it to Little

Zhang too?"

Wu Zeqing smiled gently and said, "I didn't give him any. In fact, he was the one who gave me the tea leaves. Those Da Hong Pao parent trees on Wuyishan are all his private property. You can only find two types of Da Hong Pao in the market at the moment, and they are either fake or gifted by Little Ye."

Wu Changhe was stunned. "What?"

Li Qinqin was stunned too. "Those tea trees belong to Little Zhang?"

Zhang Ye said in embarrassment, "I bought them while I was on vacation there a while ago."

"Heh, and I was even showing off in front of Little Zhang." Li Qinqin was amused. "So these are his tea leaves. It's really a very good tea! Your dad could never bear to drink it!"

Wu Zeqing said, "If you like the tea, get Little Ye to bring some more over."

Li Qinqin waved her off and said, "That's not necessary, this tea is too expensive. It's just like drinking gold."

But Wu Changhe looked at Zhang Ye as his eyes lit up. "Why would we not want it! Bring a few more catties over. He can't drink all that by himself anyway, so don't let it go to waste."

Zhang Ye was speechless.

Li Qinqin smiled and said, "Why are you so rude?"

Wu Changhe got angry at the very mention. "My daughter has already been duped by him, so why do I have to be polite with him? Even if we uproot his Da Hong Pao parent trees and plant them in our yard, it still wouldn't be enough to appease my anger!"

Zhang Ye cleared his throat. "Uncle, what do you mean by dupe?"

"You are a dupe!"

```
"How have I duped her?"
```

The two of them started bickering again!

Wu Zeqing and Li Qinqin were smiling off to the side.

Even though they were arguing, things felt completely different from the first time Zhang Ye came to their house!

It was obvious that Wu Changhe had silently approved of the relationship between Zhang Ye and Wu Zeqing from the way he spoke, even though he wasn't exactly willing to accept it.

An hour later, lunch was ready.

As they were eating, Wu Zeqing tested the waters by asking with a smile, "The two of you already know about Little Ye and I. So then, I guess that's how it is?"

Wu Changhe groaned as he ate lunch without saying a word.

But Li Qinqin was very happy. "Little Zhang is quite good, I rather like him."

Wu Zeqing said, "That's great then."

Li Qinqin probed further, "When are you two getting married? Have you decided on a date yet?"

"Not yet. Aren't we seeking both your opinions right now? I haven't visited Little Ye's family either. I think I'll have to make a

<sup>&</sup>quot;In any case, just bring a few catties over!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;A few catties? A few catties? Even I don't have that much of it!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;I don't care!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;I'll bring you half a catty."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Two catties!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;300 grams!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;1.5 catties!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;350 grams at the most!"

trip there soon," Wu Zeqing said.

Li Qinqin said happily, "You aren't young anymore and have been single for so many years. Your dad and I are also pretty anxious about you. You two can just decide on a date; there's no need to seek our opinions. Your dad and I will not have any objections."

Wu Changhe rolled his eyes.

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "Dad, you don't have any objections either?"

Wu Changhe said angrily, "Of course I have objections! But would that matter to you!"

"Then that means there are no objections." Wu Zeqing nodded and said, "Alright, I understand. I will discuss this later with Little Ye."

Zhang Ye was overcome with happiness!

It had not been easy!

It really had not been easy!

The love between this bro and Old Wu has finally come to fruition!

1 catty = 500 grams (half a kilo)

# Chapter 1149: The Celebrity Rankings Index is updated!

After lunch.

Zhang Ye insisted on clearing the dishes.

"Little Zhang, take a break."

"Auntie, let me do it!"

"Just leave it there, I'll clear them."

"No, no, leave it to me!"

"Aiya, why are you being like that!"

"Where's the sink?"

"There's one in the house and another in the yard."

"Alright, you can go rest for a bit. Leave it to me!"

He stood in the yard and did the dishes. Zhang Ye was not one to usually do chores at home as his mother handled all of that. Old Wu also did not let him touch any pots and pans when he was at her place. But now that he was visiting Old Wu's parents' place for the first time as Wu Zeqing's official boyfriend, Zhang Ye definitely had to impress them a little. It didn't matter if he could clean them properly or not. It was the least he could do to show his sincerity and bearing. He was slow at washing the dishes, but he did it very seriously.

Li Qinqin nodded slightly in approval beside him.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Auntie, in the future, if you need any chores done or have anything you need, just give me call. I'll be at your service immediately."

Li Qinqin smiled and said, "OK."

Suddenly, the wind outside picked up.

Li Qinqin looked up. "It's going to rain soon. Let's get inside."

Zhang Ye quickly finished washing the dishes. "OK."

Back in the house, Wu Changhe and Wu Zeqing were chatting as they watched the news.

Wu Zeqing said, "This turned out to be a blessing in disguise for the Go world."

Wu Changhe said, "Yes, what a close call. It was almost like we were caught between life and death at that moment!"

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "It was really quite dangerous. If the AI had won, Go would start going downhill as a sport. But the Americans clearly never thought that there would really be a person in this world who could face the AI. After Little Ye's win, it's likely that Go will start thriving and get better from here. The news just reported that Go classes for children have been filled up for summer break. This is the start of something new."

Wu Changhe grunted, "That kid has at least done something human for once."

Even Wu Changhe had to admit that it was Zhang Ye who saved the Go world this time!

On the TV, they were replaying Zhang Ye's win against Peter. Suddenly, it switched to a different scene and a song came on.

"How lonely it is to be invincible.

"How empty it feels to be invincible."

Wu Zeqing was startled!

Wu Changhe and Li Qinqin were startled as well!

Pfft!

What kind of song was that!

Zhang Ye said dumbfounded, "Damn, when did they record this?"

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "Did you sing it?"

Zhang Ye was floored and replied, "I was just singing it at the Qiyuan after winning the game. Why did they record that? And they're even broadcasting it on TV now?"

This song made a lot of people laugh hard!

Everyone was rolling on the floor laughing on the Internet!

"Teacher Zhang released a new song!"

"Quickly watch TV!"

"Hahahahaha!"

"What lousy song is this!"

"Aiyo, I can't take it!"

"How lonely it is to be invincible?"

"What a great song!"

"Pfft, this song is indeed Teacher Zhang's style!"

"What a jokester! He's so cocky!"

"What's the title of this song? I've been brainwashed by it!"

"Requesting review of the Americans' phobia!"

"Teacher Zhang is indeed invincible! Who can understand him!"

"Now that Zhang Ye is at this level, it really does get a little lonely!"

"She who hides beyond the horizon? Who is 'she'?"

"Yeah, who was Teacher Zhang singing the song for?"

When the video clip was released, it got forwarded countless times. "Invincible" went viral and became an instant hit. The lyrics that went "she who hides beyond the horizon" also got discussed by countless people. Everyone was trying to guess who "she" was!

Watching the television.

Wu Changhe grunted, "What a show off!" Go is not a game that is

particular about employing masterful moves, but focuses on the strategy, stability, and intense discipline of one's behavior. That was why Wu Changhe and many of the Qiyuan's people couldn't understand why a rash and showy person like Zhang Ye could play the game so well. That in itself didn't make any sense! But Wu Changhe did not seem to realize that his own temper was not any better!

Wu Zeqing chuckled. "I don't think it's a bad thing. When it's time to keep a low profile, he keeps a low profile. But when it's time to let loose, he does so."

Zhang Ye liked what he heard. "Old Wu knows me so well!"

Li Qinqin looked at him and said, "Little Zhang, what's your popularity ranking now?

"Uh, I didn't pay attention to it." Zhang Ye said, "I've been so busy playing Go for the past few days that I forgot to check."

Li Qinqin laughed and said, "Since you won the game today, there'll definitely be a large increase in your popularity."

Zhang Ye immediately checked the Celebrity Rankings Index. He still found himself in third place on the A-list rankings, sitting close behind Ning Lan, who was in second place. Although there were no changes in the rankings, Zhang Ye's popularity score was almost even with Ning Lan's. He had almost caught up to her. Needless to say, there was a boost to his popularity yesterday after he won against Peter in the second game of the final battle between humans and machines. And today, Zhang Ye won again to defeat Peter by a score of two to one. No one knew if there would be any more changes to the popularity ranking!

Thinking of that, Zhang Ye started to greatly anticipate how it would turn out. His original intent was only to help the Go world, and also to gain the acknowledgment of the Wu family regarding his relationship with Wu Zeqing. The matter of how much his popularity could increase by was not even on his mind as Go was

just a niche sport, while Go players were only considered small-time celebrities. For example, Xiang Rong 9-dan, the Go world's number one who was also a public figure to speak of. He should be the most glamorous celebrity in the Go world at the moment, but was only an E-list celebrity in the popularity rankings. As for the rest of the professional Go players, they were even less popular and famous. They probably wouldn't even rank among the E-list celebrities!

But Zhang Ye was clearly an exception. Just a single victory in Go had brought him such a massive increase in popularity. That was because many people paid attention to the war between humans and machines!

Would his popularity soar again?

This was really such a pleasant surprise!

• • •

At night.

The moment he reached home, it started raining.

His mother greeted him. "Son, did you get caught in the rain?"

"No." Zhang Ye smiled.

His father strode out from the bedroom. "Little Ye, you played well! You played really well in today's game!"

Zhang Ye said with a laugh, "I guess so. Whoa, did someone come over? Why is it so messy?"

His mother said, "It was our neighbors. They came over in the evening, and everyone was praising you. They said that you were going to get popular again and might even overtake Ning Lan this time!"

Zhang Ye shrugged. "Who knows."

His mother asked, "Are they refreshing the rankings at midnight?"

"Yes."

"OK, I will wait for it then!"

"Hey, you better hurry off to bed. It's late."

"I'm so happy today that I can't sleep!"

Ring, ring, ring.

Speak of the devil and he will call.

It was Ning Lan. Zhang Ye answered.

Ning Lan immediately said when the call connected: "Hey, Teacher Zhang, you didn't play fair!"

Zhang Ye asked: "What's up?"

Ning Lan laughed and said: "Just look at your popularity score. You claimed you were going on a two-week break. How did I fall for your lie! All of us have been slogging so hard every day and night, yet our popularity only creeps up by a little bit. But when it comes to you, you have it so good. You take a two-week break from work and your popularity is still going up every other day. The way it is increasing really makes no sense at all! I'm about to be overtaken by you!"

Zhang Ye laughed and said: "That might not necessarily happen."

"Today's rankings haven't been updated, but I think it will be difficult for my popularity score to increase by much." Ning Lan said sadly, "I've been cast in three movies this year, but my gained popularity is not even close to what you've gained by playing Go in the past three days. You are really doing things differently, huh? I can only take my hat off to you. Do you know what the people in the industry are saying about you? They say that your luck is so good that you can get popular even without doing anything."

Zhang Ye didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "What do they mean by without doing anything? It's just that you don't know this, but I was nearly annihilated by that Peter. I was this close to

losing!"

Ning Lan said: "I will congratulate you first then, although I'm still clenching my teeth in hatred, haha!"

Zhang Ye quickly said: "Don't congratulate me yet. It might not increase by much."

"Don't worry, you will definitely overtake me," Ning Lan said.

That same night.

There were also reports in the foreign news.

The Japanese media: "Chinese genius defeats an AI!"

The Korean media: "The Go world could be welcoming a hundred years of glory!"

The American media: "The most advanced AI in history was dealt a shocking blow by humanity!"

On Weibo.

A lot of netizens were waiting.

"It's almost midnight!"

"Are the rankings updated yet?"

"Not yet!"

"Teacher Zhang's popularity has gone up way too fast. King of Masked Singers only just ended and his popularity is soaring again? I wonder how much his popularity will increase this time!"

"Well, Teacher Zhang is truly very capable after all!"

"Being invincible is indeed lonely!"

People were waiting to find out!

Zhang Ye's close friends and relatives were waiting to find out!

Everyone in the entertainment industry was also waiting to find out!

Everyone was concerned about how much Zhang Ye's popularity would rise by. This was because it was the first time in history that someone could gain popularity from such a niche activity like Go. For show business, this was rather refreshing. So the industry insiders wanted to see if they could learn a thing or two from Zhang Ye's success. Since they were all in the same industry, everyone had to keep learning from one another. But many of them also knew that Zhang Ye's success model was not replicable!

Midnight arrived!

The Celebrity Rankings Index was updated!

The netizens got excited.

"It's here!"

"It's time!"

"Has it been updated yet?"

"Quickly!"

"Is it out yet?"

"Did Zhang Ye overtake Ning Lan?"

After a delay of two minutes, the rankings were suddenly updated!

When they saw the A-list celebrity rankings, everyone online suddenly became silent!

The netizens were astonished!

The industry insiders were tongue-tied!

Even Zhang Ye and his parents couldn't react!

His popularity score had shot past Ning Lan's score. Not only that, Zhang Ye even overtook and replaced that A-list celebrity who used to be in first! The first and third places might only be two spots apart, but it was an entirely different concept altogether. Even the treatment of each one's status was an earth-shattering

difference!

The top A-list celebrity!

—This was the result that Zhang Ye had achieved in the Go world over the past three days!

A lot of industry insiders were greatly shocked by how insane Zhang Ye's achievement was!

This is Go we're talking about!

This is only a fucking game of Go!

How does this make any fucking sense at all!

# Chapter 1150: A global mathematical conjecture proved!

The next day.

Early in the morning.

In the Goof Group.

Xiaodong: "Ahhh."

Amy: "Teacher Zhang has reached number one in the A-list rankings already? Holy shit!"

Li Xiaoxian: "We just saw! Did something so serious happen in the night?"

Chen Guang: "Yeah, Zhang Ye's popularity score has shot him into first place."

Huo Dongfang: "Hur hur, I learned of it during the night."

A director: "Congratulations, Little Zhang."

A famous male actor: "Outside of the S-list, Zhang Ye has reached the top!"

Ning Lan also appeared, clenching her teeth in hatred. "@ZhangYe! Hurry up and show yourself, stop sleeping! Only a red packet can appease my broken heart!"

Xiaodong: "Hehe, Sister Ning has been overtaken."

There were red packets in this world too. However, they only became popular in recent months. Although the specific interface and functions were a little different from Zhang Ye's previous world, the concept was essentially the same.

When Zhang Ye woke up, he saw the messages in the chat group. He smiled and immediately sent out some red packets.

"Wow!"

"Here come the red packets!"

"Snatch them!"

The chat group stirred with activity

Ning Lan has received your red packet!

Xiaodong has received your red packet!

Zhang Yuanqi has received your red packet!

So Zhang Yuanqi had been lurking all this while!

In just a few seconds, all the red packets were snapped up by them. Then everyone was furious!

Zhang Yuanqi: "Your sister!"

Ning Lan: "Your sister!"

Xiaodong: "Your sister!"

Huo Dongfang: "Your sister!"

Amy called out: "How can there be such a stingy person!"

Li Xiaoxian: "My data! I've suffered a loss this time!"

Everyone received a red packet of only one cent!

A smile on his face, Zhang Ye typed: "Thanks, everyone."

Zhang Yuanqi said: "You're at the top of A-list rankings and you're still unwilling to give out generous red packets? You're not going to have a bright future, hur hur. Ning Lan, finish him off and get back your spot!"

Xiaodong: "Sister Ning, finish him off!"

Amy: "Sister Ning, finish him off!"

Huo Dongfang: "Sister Ning, finish him off!"

They copypasted the same message as they thought that Zhang Ye was way too stingy!

After bantering a bit with them, Zhang Ye was in a rather good

mood. These past three months had brought the largest ever boost to his popularity. When he had first entered the A-list celebrity rankings, he struggled to stay in them before finally settling near the bottom of the rankings. Then, he suddenly shot up the charts to reach the front spots after revealing his identity on King of Masked Singers. And now, after playing three games of Go, he suddenly found himself at the top of the A-list celebrity rankings. It was a very surreal experience for him. Initially, he had only set a target to get into the A-list rankings at the beginning of the year. Who could have expected that he could achieve this terrific a result? From the looks of it, it seemed like he was only a step away from the S-list rankings!

But of course, that was just what it looked like.

This next step up was really going to require a great effort to achieve!

Zhang Ye was still too far away from the coveted throne of the S-list. It was different from the A-list rankings and was a whole different world and battleground. For example, Ning Lan, who had once reached the top spot of the A-list rankings, only managed to hold on to that position for three months. She couldn't maintain her ranking or take another step forward. That was because even though it might seem like it was only a step away, this step was actually way too big. It was as though a cliff were separating these two ranking lists. There was once someone who remained stuck in the first place of the A-list rankings for several years. But in the end, that person was unable to advance forward. Now that Zhang Ye was in this position as well, it would probably be the same for him too. He was still too far away from the S-list. Zhang Ye might not even be able to hold on to his first place in the A-list rankings during the next few days!

The previous first place celebrity of the A-list rankings was now in second place and was going to overtake him soon. Zhang Ye barely passed him with a microscopic difference in the popularity scores. He could probably catch back up with just a song, half a movie, or two Weibo posts!

His mother had made breakfast.

His father had bought a stack of newspapers home.

Zhang Ye said in a speechless manner, "Why did you buy so many copies?"

His father placed the newspapers on the table. "All these newspapers wrote about you."

His mother said smugly, "My son is at the top of the A-list celebrity rankings. Which newspapers would dare not report about him?! They'd have to dedicate the front page to our son!"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "How could I possibly get on the front page? It would already be quite good if I manage to get on the headlines of the entertainment sections."

Almost all of the entertainment section headlines belonged to Zhang Ye today. Other than one newspaper firm that was probably not on good terms with him and had deliberately pushed his news further down, all the other newspapers published Zhang Ye's picture in full color, along with a distinct headline on the first page of the entertainment section.

"Zhang Ye Reaches Top of A-list Rankings!"

"Does Zhang Ye have any hope of breaking into the S-list within the next two years?"

"Zhang Ye takes unusual path on his journey of popularity!"

"'Invincible' Storms into Major Music Charts!"

"Getting to the top of the A-list rankings: Perhaps this might be a short-lived high?"

The family ate breakfast together while flipping through the newspapers.

When his mother finished reading the final copy of the newspapers, she seethed, "What do they mean by a short-lived high?"

Zhang Ye explained, "The person behind me has almost caught up. The gap between us is shrinking very quickly."

His mother said anxiously, "Then you'll have to come up with some new works quickly!"

Zhang Ye said, "I'll just see how it goes. You can't force new works out because of something like that, and neither can it be rushed. Getting to this to this level of popularity has already surpassed my expectations."

His father gave a deep nod. "Our son is right. He can't just mess around for the sake of increasing his popularity."

His mother said, "But what if they catch up to you?"

"If they catch up, so be it. At most, I'll just have to catch back up again in the future." Zhang Ye smiled.

These days, Zhang Ye was battle-hardened after going through so many ups and downs in the entertainment industry. He had grown from a newcomer into a veteran of sorts. Having seen so much and gone through so many experiences, he was now more composed than ever, although he would still let fly a curse or two at times and go into a rage. But that was something which was impossible to change since it was ingrained in his character. His temper had become much better as well. At the very least, he was no longer as impatient as before in the way he did and said some things. There were some issues he definitely would not back off on, but there were also some things that could not be rushed.

However, the more he wasn't anxious about it, the more things developed in that direction!

As Zhang Ye finished eating breakfast, his phone started ringing!

On the caller ID: The Dean of the School of Mathematical

Sciences, Pan Yang.

Zhang Ye answered: "Hello, Dean Pan, you're looking for me?"

Dean Pan sounded a little excited. "Yes, that's right!"

"What happened?" Zhang Ye said in surprise.

When his parents heard that, they looked over.

Dean Pan said loudly: "It's a great piece of news!"

Zhang Ye: "Oh?"

"Professor Zhang, I now represent the Dale's Conjecture verification team to officially inform you that the proof you wrote has been fully validated after a year of checks by many of our world-class mathematicians!" Dean Pan was so excited that his voice went hoarse. "Dale's Conjecture has been solved by you! It has been solved by a Chinese mathematician! You're not just a world-class mathematician anymore! You can now be considered one of the smartest world-class mathematicians! You're just too fantastic! Professor Zhang! You've brought glory to us!"

It had been proven?

The verification was finally complete?

Zhang Ye could not sit still. "I'll be right over!"

"OK! OK! We are all waiting for you!" Dean Pan said: "We've already notified both the foreign and local media that we will be holding an official press conference this afternoon!"

Zhang Ye had waited for this day for too long!

Peking University had also waited for this day for too long, and so had China!

One of the most difficult mathematical conjectures in the world had been proven by Zhang Ye, a mathematician from China. It was an extremely meaningful day for the global mathematics world. And to Zhang Ye, this would definitely be one of the most memorable events in his life as well. Before Dale's Conjecture had been verified and proven, he was approached to be a recipient of an international math award. That would mean to say that even if there were any mistakes found during the verification process that would displace the entire proof, they were still willing to give him the award. From that, it could be seen just how highly regarded and difficult Dale's Conjecture was to the global mathematics world. But after a year of work by an international team made up of dozens of mathematicians, the proof was finally validated. This contributed to a major increase in Zhang Ye's popularity and reputation. A world-class mathematician had now become a preeminent world-class mathematician!

Just by adding the word "preeminent," the difference in meaning between the two titles immediately became poles apart! All of those preeminent mathematicians of the world and those who came before were considered treasures of humanity. They were all historical legends. And today, Zhang Ye had also stepped up to that most glorious throne of the mathematics world!

He was now coronated with honor!

### Chapter 1151: Can you be a little bit more mindful!

At 9 in the morning.

On Central TV News Channel, Beijing Television News Channel, Jinshi Morning News Broadcast, and a dozen other television stations, every one of them simultaneously announced an important piece of news: "We interrupt this broadcast with a news update. Our station's reporters have just received news about the proof to one of the famous Math Problems that had caused quite a sensation throughout the field of mathematics. There has been now been a major breakthrough, with an update coming from the World Mathematics Association's Dale's Conjecture verification team. A press conference will be held later today at 1 PM Beijing time in Peking University. Our station's reporters will be following up with details when the event begins and update our viewers on the latest developments!"

They did not say everything in full.

Nor was it thoroughly explained.

But that announcement alone was more than enough!

The common folk were not stupid. How could they not know what this was about?

Then, Zhang Ye's army swept across Weibo!

"Heavens!"

"Oh my God!"

"Zhang Ye's proof has been validated?"

"It's been confirmed?"

"That's really awesome!"

"Teacher Zhang has really freaking become a preeminent world-

class mathematician!"

"Has there ever been a preeminent world-class mathematician who hailed from China? There have only been a handful of worldclass mathematicians, right? And most of them are dead now!"

"I don't know. There wasn't any classification like this in the past, so there was no such label as a 'preeminent world-class mathematician.' After it was implemented, China has only had Zhang Ye who has been labeled as such. But nowadays, as long as a mathematician can solve a major math conjecture or make an important contribution to the global field of mathematics, they are conferred the title of preeminent world-class mathematician. That title is definitely in the bag for Zhang Ye! There shouldn't be more than 40 people in the entire world who have obtained the title! While those who have this title and are still alive shouldn't number more than 20!"

"How exciting!"

"Yeah, our country's mathematics world shall have a major figure from now on!"

"Teacher Zhang is going to be on fire again!"

"Hahaha, he was already barely holding on to the first place on the A-list celebrity rankings and was almost going to be surpassed. In the end, everything just worked out nicely and Teacher Zhang is finally going to be able to gain a foothold in his ranking! This time, he is definitely going to gain a lot of popularity again. I just wonder if it would allow him to start breaking into the international celebrity's popularity ranking list!"

"Let's wait for the press conference then, it's all only guesses for now!"

"What do you mean it's all guesses? Even a fool can see what's going on!"

"Yeah, why else would they hold a press conference for?"

"Congratulations, Zhang Ye!"

"This is really Zhang Ye's year, isn't it? Haha!"

. . .

Peking University.

The students were already on vacation, so there shouldn't have been much people around at the school.

But when Zhang Ye drove over, he saw a crowd of cheering people the moment he reached the school gates. There were some people in the crowd that he knew and some that he didn't!

When they saw the car arriving, everyone rushed forward and surrounded it!

When Zhang Ye stepped out of the car, Dean Pan immediately gave him a bear hug. It was an extremely tight hug as he patted Zhang Ye on the back thumpingly. It was obvious that Old Pan was extremely happy today!

Pan Yang said, "Congratulations!"

Zhang Ye nodded. "Thank you."

Han Henian also came forward to give Zhang Ye a hug. "Congratulations, Professor Zhang!"

This was Zhang Ye's former love rival, but that was already a thing of the past. "Thank you, Teacher Han."

Xin Ya, Old Wu's best friend, also came up to him. "I won't be hugging you, but congratulations anyway!"

"Same to you." Zhang Ye said with a smile.

Xin Ya said in a smiling way, "What has it got to do with me? You're from Peking University while I'm from Tsinghua University."

Zhang Ye said amused, "Professor Xin, why are you still so narrow-minded about things?"

Xin Ya rolled her eyes. "You just can't say anything good, can you? Can't you see that I'm just making a joke? Now that you have reached the pinnacle, it has given an invaluable boost to our Chinese mathematics world! Who wouldn't be happy for you?"

Zhang Ye said, "Thank you."

Over there, a British female mathematician named Jennifer came forward with a smile. She gave him a hug and said, "Congratulations, my Chinese friend!"

Zhang Ye said, "Thanks, my British friend."

Wang Yiming.

Fellow Wan of the Chinese Academy of Sciences.

A young German mathematician.

A French mathematician that Zhang Ye knew from before.

And so on and so forth. There were too many of them and they were all present here today to applaud Zhang Ye!

"Zhang, you are really awesome!"

"I welcome you to visit Germany and be our guest!"

"My friend! You're a great mathematician!"

"Congratulations! I knew that your proof would definitely be proven right!"

Many reporters have also gathered around, and the number was only getting more and more. A lot of them rushed over to the school immediately after receiving news about this and had wanted to get first-hand information about the matter. There were even many foreign faces within the reporters, including the Japanese and Americans!

However, Zhang Ye did not take any interviews. The press conference was scheduled for the afternoon, so of course he could not talk about it right now. Therefore, he followed Dean Pan and the others into Peking University and left the reporters waiting outside.

On the way in.

Xin Ya said, "In this past year, we've all really been tired out badly. It's not too bad for us since we're stationed in Beijing, but for those in the verification team who are from other countries, they keep having to fly around. They would head back to their own countries for a few days before coming back here to continue on the verification work again. Don't even think of not giving a treat today, you have to make it up to us for our suffering!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "That's of course, it has been hard for everyone."

That French mathematician smiled and said in English, "Zhang, I hear that you're a big star in China. My wife likes Miss Zhang Yuanqi a lot and her movies are really very popular back in my country too. Can you help me to get an autograph from her? I think my wife would definitely be very happy if you could!"

Zhang Ye smiled and patted him on the shoulders, "No-pra-bolem!"

The French mathematician was dumbfounded. "What pra-bolem?"

Xin Ya was left speechless by that. She translated for them and said, "He just means 'no problem'."

A Russian mathematician who was a burly man laughed when he heard that. "Zhang, you better not speak in English. Your English standard is really too atrocious!"

Everyone laughed.

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes. "Don't talk about me, you're not any better yourself."

The Russian mathematician laughed heartily.

At this moment, Fellow Wan found him. "Professor Zhang, are you interested to join us at the Chinese Academy of Sciences?"

Zhang Ye was taken aback for a bit. "Someone has already asked me that before."

"I know." Fellow Wan said sincerely, "I heard that you rejected the offer, so I'm here to invite you again."

Zhang Ye thought about it for a moment before saying with a wry smile, "Let me think about it again."

Fellow Wan could only say, "Alright, I'll be waiting for your news then."

As there were a lot of people here, Fellow Wan did not speak further about this. The Chinese Academy of Sciences was an academic institution. It was different from those companies or television stations which could use money to attract people to join them. To be able to get admitted into the Chinese Academy of Sciences, the most important prerequisite was ability. The second thing would be that one would have to join willingly. This was not something that could be forced.

• • •

1 o'clock in the afternoon.

The press conference started on time!

A dense crowd of Chinese and foreign reporters had already filled up the entire venue. There were a lot of video cameras set up for a live broadcast, as countless cameras flashed clickingly across the floor.

Zhang Ye sat down at the middle of the stage.

Fellow Wan, Dean Pan, Xin Ya and those mathematicians of the verification team were all gathered beside him!

In front of the television, the viewers were already unable to wait!

"How many press conferences has Zhang Ye attended in these past few days already!"

"He has been hogging all the news headlines across the country in recent days!"

"That's so impressive!"

"Quickly announce it!"

"Yeah, we're all waiting!"

Zhang Ye's parents were watching in anticipation!

His relatives were also waiting excitedly in front of their televisions!

Then, there was also Ning Lan, Xiaodong, Li Xiaoxian, Chen Guang, Fan Wenli, Yao Jiancai, Zhang Yuanqi, Wu Changhe, Li Qinqin, Rao Aimin, Yang Shu...

Although they could already guess what it was about!

Although there was already no suspense to it!

But for some reason, everyone was still waiting eagerly in front of their televisions, just so that they could see and hear it for themselves!

Fellow Wan adjusted the microphone before announcing loudly, "This morning, we have finally wrapped up the validation work for Dale's Conjecture. I hereby officially announce on behalf of the verification team that Zhang Ye's proposed proof has been fully validated without any errors!"

In an instant, the sound of applause broke out!

The Chinese reporters were applauding with everything they had!

The foreign reporters also gave a round of enthusiastic applause!

The clapping went on for a very long time. It lasted for a full minute before gradually stopping. Many of the foreign

mathematicians were even standing up and giving Zhang Ye the thumbs up! For the past year, Zhang Ye had barely taken part in the verification process as he was the one who had originally proposed the proof, so it wasn't proper for him to get personally involved in it. But at the very least, he would still spend some time to go down to verify some key parts of the proof. After such a long period of contact, these foreign mathematicians had generally gotten to know Zhang Ye better. Even the two American mathematicians who had had a conflict with Zhang Ye before were already having a very harmonious relationship with him. As such, they spared no effort in sending him their blessings and congratulations!

It was time for the Q&A session.

A female American reporter raised her hand.

Pan Yang who was chairing the conference pointed at her. "This lady here."

The female reporter asked, "Mr. David, can you tell us why the verification process for the proof to Dale's Conjecture has taken so long to complete? Why did it drag on for a year?"

A translator repeated the question in Mandarin.

The American mathematician, David, clearly knew this reporter. "Miss Denise, you might not be familiar with the verification process for a mathematical conjecture. It is very tedious work and requires a lot of meticulous going through. What's more, Dale's Conjecture is different from the other mathematical conjectures in that it is one of the major Math Problems of the mathematics world. As such, the workload would definitely be much greater. Luckily, Zhang has provided us with very clear formulas and detailed notes about it. That has greatly cut down the amount of time that we needed to validate the proof. Otherwise, it would have taken much longer to complete. Zhang Ye is really very great." He looked at Zhang Ye, then said, "He is one of the

youngest, most talented and greatest mathematicians that I have ever seen!"

Zhang Ye smiled and nodded at him to express his thanks.

Comrade David was indeed nice!

Then, a barrage of the reporters' hands shot up again!

Pan Yang pointed out at a French reporter.

The French reporter said, "Professor Zhang, there are people who say that the validation of the proof to Dale's Conjecture is a very historical moment in mathematics. They also claimed that you're the hero who saved the Chinese mathematics world by allowing the Chinese mathematicians to have a renewed chance of being seen by the world again. According to what I know, there are already five to six mathematics organizations who have actively sought out Chinese mathematicians to join their new projects or research in the past year. All of that was undoubtedly to your credit. I interviewed a young mathematician earlier and he said that you were the mathematics world's hero. What do you have to say to that?"

That was indeed the truth. In recent international mathematics projects around the world, there has really been quite a number of Chinese mathematicians taking part in them. If anyone claimed that this wasn't because of Zhang Ye, even a fool would not believe that!

Fellow Wan looked towards Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye did not even think it through and directly answered, "I'm not a hero, I'm really not one. There are many heroes in the mathematics world, some of whom you can see and others that you don't know about. Everyone here harbors a dream and has a sincere passion for mathematics. Speaking about the past, there have been countless mathematicians in China who have done a lot. In the future, there will also be many young mathematicians

appearing who will lead the world forward. It was our predecessors who have supported the mathematics world up to this stage step by step, and it will be down to the future generation to lead the Chinese mathematics world forward step by step. Who am I in all of these? I'm not anyone at all. If there are any heroes to speak of, it should be them instead!"

His words were concurrently translated!

When then French reporter heard that, he immediately stood up in awe and started clapping!

The German reporter beside also clapped hard!

Those other foreign reporters who heard it were also praising it inside their hearts!

But the bunch of Chinese reporters nearly fainted onto the ground!

Fellow Wan: "....\$%^&\*()!"

Pan Yang felt like vomiting blood!

Xin Ya also very nearly fell off from her chair!

The viewers in front of the televisions were left looking confused!

Those words...why did those words sound so goddamn familiar, huh?

Fuck, didn't you say something similar to this during yesterday's press conference for the war between humans and the machines? And it even fucking sounded like the original speech from then?

Everyone had to take their hats off to him!

They were really left kneeling to him!

Just what kind of an occasion did you think this was? This was a press conference that was going to be broadcasted to the entire world!

Can you be a little bit more mindful!

Can you fucking be a little bit more mindful!

# Chapter 1152: The only dual faculty professor in Peking University!

The netizens nearly pissed themselves laughing!

There were all kinds of bashing on Weibo!

"That Zhang Ye!"

"How could he still joke around at a setting like that?!"

"Pfft, how can he be so funny!"

"Hahahaha, that shameless behavior is what I like most about him!"

"Aiyo, how amusing!"

"Teacher Zhang is such an oddball!"

"Yeah, if it were anyone else, who wouldn't speak mindfully on such an occasion? Who wouldn't get nervous and speak cautiously? But just look at him, he even dares talk that much bull in front of the whole world. Didn't he say the exact same thing at the press conference yesterday after the war between humans and machines! Weren't those words what he said about the Go world too? He really isn't afraid that the global mathematics world would get pissed and strip him of his title! I'm already trembling just from hearing it! Only Zhang Ye could do something like this!"

"Hai, this isn't even anything serious!"

"It's not like Zhang Ye has not done anything more ridiculous than this before!"

"Haha, that's just how he is and I've got used to it!"

"If Teacher Zhang were to start behaving seriously, then that would be too uninteresting!"

"I like him!"

"Teacher Zhang has brought glory to our country! So don't pick on him over such minor things!"

"When has a live broadcast involving Zhang Ye not ended up with him causing a big incident? When has he not scolded others? He did not even write a poem or scold anyone this time, so let's just be content. Teacher Zhang has toned it down a lot!"

"Pfft, I'm actually unable to refute the previous poster!"

There were all kinds of reactions to the speech. But overall, everyone was able to accept what happened. If it were any other celebrity or mathematician who said something like that, they would definitely be cursed to death or get doubted by countless people. However, since it was Zhang Ye who did this, everyone realized that they had already gotten used to it and weren't the least bit surprised. Those who facepalmed or vomited blood due to what happened all ended up laughing at it in the end.

Half an hour.

An hour.

The live broadcast of the press conference had concluded.

The press conference was broadcast live across the country. At the same time, it was also relayed very quickly throughout Asia and the international scene!

For such huge news like Dale's Conjecture being proven by a Chinese mathematician, it was impossible that it would not get reported at the international level. There was only issue the issue of how much coverage each country would give to it!

Everyone dispersed.

Xin Ya pulled Zhang Ye aside as she rolled her eyes at him and said, "Can you be a little more mindful of that lousy mouth of yours?"

Zhang Ye was stunned. "Ah? What's the matter?"

Dean Pan also came up to him. "What do you think is the matter!"

Wang Yiming didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "We really have to give it you!"

"What about me?" Zhang Ye was confused.

Xin Ya stared at him and said, "Didn't you realize that when you answered the first reporter's question, your answer sounded somewhat familiar? Huh?"

When Zhang Ye thought about it, it dawned on him. "Yes, yes, it really does feel a little familiar!"

Han Henian gave a wry smile and reminded him. "At the Go press conference yesterday..."

Only then did Zhang Ye realize it. He facepalmed and exclaimed, "Aiya, I think I already used that speech yesterday. Heh, no wonder it felt so familiar. I was wondering why I was speaking so fluidly!" He really did not do it on purpose. This fellow had been too busy recently and everything was coming together at once. With so many reporters questioning and interviewing him, he would even sometimes forget what he had just answered with. "Hai, great wits have short memories!"

"Pfft!"

"Who would refer to themselves as a great wit?"

"Never mind, it's already been broadcast. Let's just leave it as is."

"Yeah, your reputation stinks anyway, so no one will care."

Many of the local mathematicians present started talking about this among themselves.

Zhang Ye could not keep listening and cleared his throat. "Why would my reputation stink? That reporter asked me if I was a hero. Surely, I can't say that I am one and ask them to quickly kowtow to me, right?"

Everyone laughed in derision!

Who would want to kowtow to you!

Dean Pan laughed and said, "Alright, stop with the bantering already, Professor Zhang. I still have some proper business that I need to speak to you about."

"What is it?" Zhang Ye asked.

Dean Pan gave a hearty laugh. "It's about something good!"

Zhang Ye nodded and said, "If it's something good, I'm all ears."

Dean Pan said, "Alright then, come with me."

After everyone else left, Dean Pan and some heads of the Math Department headed back to their faculty. They went into someone's office where Pan Yang looked around in a drawer before taking something out of it. Then he handed a document to Zhang Ye and said with a smile, "Have a look at this."

When Zhang Ye took a look, he was startled. "An application for a promotion to professor?"

Dean Pan nodded. "That's right."

This professorship was unlike the previous professorship!

Zhang Ye was already an associate professor in Peking University's Math Department. But this application was a recommendation to promote Zhang Ye to a full professorship in the Math Department. There really was a big difference between being an associate professor and a full professor. Be it the pay, qualification, or status in the profession, these two positions couldn't be lumped together. Furthermore, this was a full professorship at the Math Department of Peking University. How many full professors were there in the entire School of Mathematical Sciences? There was practically none who were younger than 45!

Zhang Ye was feeling a little embarrassed. "Hey, is this appropriate?"

Dean Pan said, "If you think you're ready, I'll submit the application. I'm not sure if it'll get approved, but this was unanimously decided by us at the School of Mathematical Sciences after we had a meeting."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "My associate professorship at that time was also a one-off exception, wasn't it? I've only assumed that position for a year, but I'm up for another promotion to full professor? Won't the others gossip about this? I'm only 25 years old. Which university has a 25-year-old associate professor in their ranks? Not to mention a 25-year-old full professor at Peking University?"

Dean Pan simply said, "If you think that it's not appropriate, let's just drop it."

"Don't! Don't mind me!" Zhang Ye panicked. "Old Pan, since you've already brought out the application form, how can you just take it back like this? Submit it, of course you must submit it! Would I be afraid of people gossiping about this? If I was bothered about people talking bad about me, I would have died 200 times in the past few years!" This statement was actually quite true.

Old Pan?

Dean Pan rolled his eyes!

Zhang Ye joyfully said, "Then it's set!"

Dean Pan said, "We still have to see if the higher-ups agree to it or not."

"You are such a reputable person, so how won't the heads of the school agree to it?" Zhang Ye felt that Old Pan was quite loyal, and would think of him if something good came up. The title of a full professor was going to be more practical and useful than anything else!

• •

Later that afternoon.

At Zhang Ye's parents' house.

The moment he reached home, his mother stopped him and chided him!

She even wished she could pull him by the ear. "Why weren't you more mindful of your words at such an important occasion? You can even copy your own thank you speech? Are you intending to drive me to my grave?"

Zhang Ye said, "It just slipped my mind, alright?"

His mother pointed at the computer. "Look at the people online. They're all ridiculing you, and several experts have already criticized your actions. They said that your attitude toward academia is not correct and that you were just fooling around!"

Zhang Ye smiled and shrugged. "I have so many enemies. If I don't get criticized by eighty to a hundred people each day, I might even think that the sun rose from the west. If they want to criticize me, then just let them do it. Why should we care about them? By the way, Mom, Dad." He looked at his parents and announced to them, "They're looking to promote me to a full professor at Peking University!"

His parents exclaimed in astonishment!

His father said excitedly, "Has it been confirmed yet?"

His mother stared and her jaw dropped. "Are you serious?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Yes, but it hasn't been given yet. I assume that there shouldn't be any problems."

His mother said anxiously, "Don't assume things like that! This is an important matter, so has it been confirmed or not yet? Don't make me and your dad happy for nothing!"

"I'm quite certain it'll be given," Zhang Ye said.

His mother instantly beamed with pride. "Good! Good! That's great! I must quickly tell your grandpa and grandma about it!" As

she spoke, she went over to the telephone and picked it up and made a call. "Hello, Mom...ai...have you seen the news? That's right. The conjecture has been proven. Little Ye is now a preeminent international mathematician. Also, inform Dad and the others that Little Ye is going to get promoted to full professor at Peking University....It's true! Why would I lie to you!"

In the media, there were already some news reports that were gathered from the grapevine!

Over here in China, no news could stay hidden for long. Everything was linked and the complex web of relationships was just too intertwined. There would always be some people who were just very well-informed about things!

At 5 o'clock in the afternoon!

Peking University finally made a public announcement. "Zhang Ye has been appointed as a full professor at Peking University's School of Mathematical Sciences!"

But to everyone's surprise, that was not the end of it!

Peking University: "Zhang Ye has been appointed as an associate professor at Peking University's Chinese Department!"

After being part of the Chinese Department for two years, he had also been promoted to an associate professor from his lecturer role?

A full professor of the Math Department?

An associate professor at the Chinese Department?

He had now become Peking University's only dual department professor?

#### Chapter 1153: Sitting firmly at the top of the A-list!

News of Zhang Ye was once again carpet bombarding the country!

This was happening for the umpteenth time over the past few days!

"Zhang Ye gets promoted to full professor!"

"China's Youngest Full Professor!"

The youngest math professor in history emerges!"

"Peking University's Astonishing Act!"

"Peking University's Chinese Department confers the title of Associate Professor to Zhang Ye?"

"The first dual department professor in Peking University's history!"

"An unprecedented occurrence: A 25-year-old becomes a full professor!"

"At press time, Peking University has yet to issue a statement!"

A glowing honor has been bestowed onto Zhang Ye!"

"Together with his title of visiting associate professor at Media College, Zhang Ye is perhaps the person with the most professorships in the country!"

The Goof Group blew up.

Ning Lan: "Professor Zhang, time to come out and distribute red packets!"

Xiaodong: "Professor Zhang, time to come out and distribute red packets!"

Huo Dongfang: "Professor Zhang, time to come out and distribute

red packets!"

Zhang Ye did not send a one-cent red packet this time, instead giving out a big one!

Amy was the quickest to claim hers and got the highest amount as well. "Wow, thank you, boss!"

Zhang Ye sent a smiley face.

Ning Lan: "Haha, thank you, Professor!"

Xiaodong: "We're rich! Congratulations, Professor Zhang!"

Huo Dongfang: "I've lost count of how many times I've congratulated you these past two days. If we include you being a visiting associate professor at Media College, this is your third professorship title! Not to mention showbiz, even in the academic and education fields, there isn't anyone who has more professorships than you do!"

Zhang Ye sent an embarrassed emoticon and said: "Thanks, everyone."

Xiaodong said in a depressed way, "What's important here is that Teacher Zhang doesn't even conduct any lessons!"

Li Xiaoxian: "Pfft, that's indeed so!"

Xiaodong said wryly: "This is what makes me so speechless. A teacher who doesn't even conduct lessons was actually promoted to a full professor in the Math Department, and an associate professor in the Chinese Department. I don't even know what to say anymore. Thinking back to when I had just graduated, I was thinking of becoming a graduate student, but I didn't manage to make it! But in comparison?"

Fan Wenli: "Congratulations!"

Chen Guang: "Treat us!"

Online.

The netizens also found this to be ironic and ridiculous!

"A full professorship?"

"Impressive!"

"Peking University has really made an exception for him?"

"I feel that Teacher Zhang deserves the full professorship at the Math Department since it was he who solved Dale's Conjecture. But as for the associate professorship over in the Chinese Department? What's with that? Has this guy even been giving any lessons?"

"I think he hasn't been there for a year already!"

"Pfft, that's right!"

"In any case, congratulations to Professor Zhang!"

"Face-smacking Zhang has gained another few titles for his list!"

"If this goes on, no one will be able to stop him in the future!"

"Yeah, Teacher Zhang's qualifications are almost surpassing the Heavens. He's adding on to his titles and protective charms one after another. But what can we say about that? He is really that capable after all!"

"This calls for a celebration!"

"Rejoice and spread the word!"

At home.

Very soon, Zhang Ye received a call from Chang Kaige.

Chang Kaige: the dean of Peking University's Chinese Department.

"Dean Chang." Zhang Ye quickly asked: "What's this about my appointment?"

Chang Kaige said with a laugh: "Are you talking about the title?"

Zhang Ye said: "Yes, I didn't even receive any news about that

and I've suddenly become an associate professor?"

Chang Kaige said: "Everyone already knows about your contributions to the cultural world. How many good pieces of work have you come up with over the years? I heard that the textbooks are going through a review and update. Who knows if your essays and poetry might also be included in them this time? So what's the big deal with conferring you the title of associate professor in the Chinese Department? Is that too much for you?"

Zhang Ye said feeling rather awkward: "The important thing here is that I've never really conducted any lessons."

"Giving lessons is not a measure of how knowledgeable one is." Chang Kaige said supportively: "We've long been thinking of appointing you as an associate professor, but the pressure at that time was too great. When you were still around at Peking University, that scolding incident involving the foreign dignitaries had a great effect and caused a lot of anxiety for everyone. So they suppressed and downplayed the incident at that time. But now that you've already been restored to your duties at Peking University and with the momentum brought along by your proof of Dale's Conjecture, the Chinese Department went ahead with the application for you to be appointed as an associate professor. We submitted the application together with Old Pan, and to our surprise, the school heads handled this matter specially and approved of it right away."

Zhang Ye blinked. "The school heads?"

Chang Kaige knew what he was thinking. He advised: "That affair happened so long ago. They suspended you from duty because they had no choice. So you should understand how it is by now? Other than a few people, whether they are the school heads, teachers, or students, they all of see you as one of our own. Therefore, don't feel so bad about it anymore. If you're free, come back often to have a look around and teach some classes. Besides, I believe that the school heads approved of your appointment to associate

professor mainly because they also wanted to make it up to you for that time."

That decision back then to suspend Zhang Ye had caused a very great difference of opinions!

Some teachers thought that Peking University had handled it well and that a teacher who led students to scold others should definitely be suspended. Some teachers felt that it wasn't the right thing to do as Zhang Ye had contributed a lot to Peking University after all. Besides, he had done it for the students while the Japanese dignitaries had also behaved quite idiotically. They were at fault in the first place. After Zhang Ye's departure, this incident died down gradually. It wasn't until the incident at the previous student recruitment exercise that everyone was reminded of Zhang Ye's good side again.

If it weren't for him, those college entrance exam scholars would all have been taken away by Tsinghua University! It was Zhang Ye who came charging and smashing cars, snatching the students back while bearing the brunt of the scolding! At that moment, a lot of the teachers and school heads who did not used to like Zhang Ye no longer had any reason to speak ill of him!

The way he handled that incident was very generous and chivalrous!

He was dedicated to Peking University!

Zhang Ye immediately said: "Dean Chang, please don't say that. That incident was down to my personal behavior, and I know that I didn't act in the right way. But I've said what I've said, and even if it happens again, I would still scold them all over again. I've never spoken badly about our Peking University in any situation before, so why would I want to blame them for anything then? Am I such a petty person?"

Chang Kaige nodded in agreement. "Then I have no worries."

Zhang Ye smiled and said: "In any case, thank you."

"There's no need to thank me, I didn't do much at all." Chang Kaige said: "Teacher Su and Old Zeng are always talking about you. Find a day when you're free and let's meet up someday."

Zhang Ye said: "Let's not wait for someday. We should go with the flow rather than try to force things. Let me treat everyone tonight!"

Chang Kaige replied: "Alright, then we must definitely have something good since you're treating!"

"No problem!" Zhang Ye said happily: "I'll invite Dean Pan and the others as well then?"

Chang Kaige said: "You're the boss! We'll show up as long as you invite us!"

Zhang Ye said: "Sure!"

For such a happy occasion, Zhang Ye definitely had to treat everyone. He immediately made some calls and invited several teachers from the Math Department and other departments of Peking University that he knew. Whether it was Su Na or Professor Zeng, he hadn't seen them all in a very long time. Now that he could meet them again, they definitely had to enjoy a good meal together!

• • •

On the same night.

At midnight.

The Celebrity Rankings Index was updated!

Zhang Ye's name was still clearly at the number one spot of the A-list rankings. He did not budge from it at all while the gap between second place was slowly widening! The validation of the proof to the mathematical conjecture had really come at the right time. It allowed Zhang Ye to gain a proper foothold on his shaky

popularity and helped him sit firmly at the number one spot. It seemed like it would be very difficult for him to fall off from there in the short term unless Ning Lan and the other person were to experience a similar explosion in popularity like Zhang Ye had today!

But how many Zhang Yes were there in the entertainment industry?

What he had done was not something that just anyone could replicate!

# Chapter 1154: Zhang Ye's Asian Popularity Ranking!

Over the next two days, Zhang Ye was so busy with treating all of his friends, bringing them around to enjoy a good meal, that he didn't go back home at all. In recent days, he had caused quite a big stir. First, he prevailed over PeterGo. Then, his proof of Dale's Conjecture was finally validated. On top of that, he was appointed as a full professor at Peking University. He also secured his foothold of the number one spot on the A-list celebrity rankings. With all that coming together and adding in the previously accumulated events, the results could finally be seen now. The entire country's media outlets were making mention of Zhang Ye's name without stop for a few days. This pushed his popularity up by quite a lot, which led to many celebratory feasts!

For example, with China Qiyuan.

For example, with his extended family.

For example, with friends like Yao Jiancai, Chen Guang, and the others.

For example, with his colleagues from Peking University.

And for example, with Rao Aimin, Yang Shu, and Chenchen.

How many meals was that already?

Later on, Dong Shanshan, Yu Yingyi, and the group of his old classmates also arranged to have a meal together with Zhang Ye to throw him a party. But as Zhang Ye was really unable to squeeze any time out from his schedule, they settled for having breakfast together.

At Dong Shanshan's villa.

His old classmates were all seated around the dining table and staring at the fried dough sticks and soy milk on the table, not knowing whether to laugh or cry.

Zhang Ye said, "Eat, eat, don't stand on ceremony with me. I just bought them, so have it while they're still hot!"

Dong Shanshan laughed and said, "Why would we stand on ceremony with you for over some lousy breakfast?"

Yu Yingyi rolled her eyes. "This is the first time I'm seeing someone treat others in this way!"

Wang He also said in a speechless manner, "Zhang'er, aren't you playing us for fools like this!"

Ma Xufei fumed while glaring, "I object! I strongly object to this!" He Kui laughed from beside them.

"Hai, I really haven't had much time recently, and you guys are also going to be busy with your own work next week, so we could only decide on this morning to gather together like this. I have other appointments planned for this afternoon and tonight. Since we're all old classmates and know each other quite well, what's there to be so formal about. Don't dismiss breakfast as not fitting of a feast. Soy milk and fried dough sticks are really expensive too," Zhang Ye explained as he rubbed his temples. He had been drinking so much these past few days that his brain was hurting.

Yu Yingyi sighed. "Alright, we'll just have to make do. Squeezing a meal out of Professor Zhang is already an achievement. He's indeed quite busy these days, and I can testify to that."

Zhang Ye laughed. "Right?"

He Kui rolled his eyes. "You two are singing the same tune now, eh?"

Yu Yingyi said happily, "That's right. Just doing the commentary work for those three games that Zhang'er played helped me gain quite a lot of popularity, although this girl might not be comparable to Classmate Shanshan yet. But amongst the country's

sports hosts, I'm considered as one of the more popular ones, haha. In the future, if there are any sports events that you all would like to attend, just let me know. Big Sis will help to get the tickets for you guys. It's not that I'm trying to brag, but with just a phone call from me, everyone is pretty much willing to give face to me."

He Kui said enviously, "Right now, it seems like only the three of you are doing well."

Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and Yu Yingyi were the three referred to, of course.

Yu Yingyi said, "Compared to Zhang'er, who dares say that they're doing well."

Zhang Ye quickly said, "Ha, don't you guys tread on me like this."

Dong Shanshan drank some soy milk and gave him a look. "You're at the top of the A-list. Another step forward and you'll be in the S-list rankings. What plans do you have?"

"Hai." Zhang Ye shook his head. "I've not thought of any yet."

Dong Shanshan blinked several times. "You're probably going to get into the international rankings, right?"

Zhang Ye spread his hands. "I'm not even popular on the international stage, so I can't climb onto that list for sure. I don't even have any works that are known on the international scene, so I'll just take it step by step."

S-list.

Asia.

International.

There was still a long road ahead!

. . .

Meanwhile.

The news of Dale's Conjecture being proven was gradually

spreading across Asia.

The Japanese netizens.

"What?"

"Why does this name sound so familiar?"

"Zhang Ye? Isn't that the man who played Go?"

"Oh yes, it's that guy from the war between humans and machines!"

"No wonder! So he's really a mathematician!"

The Korean netizens.

"Dale's Conjecture has been solved?"

"When did it happen?"

"Long ago? So it was him who solved it!"

"Why is this guy so good?"

"Is he really the smartest person in the world?"

• • •

That night.

A major incident happened again in the Chinese entertainment industry.

Almost without warning, and to everyone's surprise, when the Asian Celebrity Rankings Index was updated, Zhang Ye's name appeared on the Asian C-list rankings!

The Asian Celebrity Rankings Index. This was not a celebrity ranking list under the jurisdiction of China and the SARFT. It was overseen by a different authority and was a list of rankings that one wouldn't be able to get into if they did not have a certain level of influence around Asia. Every person that was in the rankings were well-known stars in the Asian countries and the index was segmented into four grades. They were respectively: Asian S-list

rankings.

Asian A-list rankings.

Asian B-list rankings.

Asian C-list rankings.

The statistics used in the rankings were not based solely on the number of fans that one had. Otherwise, with the population of China being so large, any random B-list celebrity would easily be qualified to be called a big shot around Asia. This rankings index was not that superficial. The number of fans one had was still the main statistical data—that was definitely necessary, of course. But there was also the status of whether their works won any awards, their qualifications, as well as how large their influence around the Asian region was. Combining all of those statistics, it would make it very difficult for someone to gain a place in the Asian Celebrity Rankings Index. This was especially true for celebrities from China and Japan. Currently, the celebrities in the Asian Celebrity Rankings Index were mainly Koreans!

For example, Korean star Lee Anson, who was sent flying by a kick from Zhang Ye, was in the rankings. He was in the Asian C-list rankings!

Lee Anson was actually very popular back then in China, although he was sent packing afterwards due to that incident. However, the base of his popularity was still there. Coupled with him doing quite well back home in Korea for the past two years, and having many fans in Japan and other Asian countries who loved him, those statistics made him a big shot as an Asian C-list celebrity! In contrast, although Zhang Ye was very well-known by everyone back in China and enjoyed a high level of popularity, he was still relatively unknown in Asia. He had never released any major works that were propagated into the Asian region, so his influence in the region was much more limited!

But this time, Zhang Ye had suddenly made it into the rankings!

And it wasn't just at the bottom of the Asian C-list rankings. He had appeared in the middle of the rankings!

There was a celebration across Weibo!

Zhang Ye's fans cheered!

"Damn!"

"He has made it to the Asian Celebrity Rankings Index!"

"He's finally there!"

"Teacher Zhang has blown up!"

"It was definitely due to the Go incident and the mathematical conjecture being proven!"

"Yeah, I was wondering why with Teacher Zhang's popularity in the country, he still hadn't made it onto this index. Look at Ning Lan and Xiaodong of Spring Garden, they've been in the Asian rankings all this time. So why was there nothing from Teacher Zhang? And now, I see that he has finally started his chapter in Asia!"

"Hahaha, congratulations!"

"Teacher Zhang's been having a year to remember since a few days ago!"

"Teacher Zhang can finally become more popular outside of the country! This is worth being happy and congratulated for!"

"Asian C-list rankings? Isn't that a little low?"

"It is a little low. Ning Lan is behind Zhang Ye by a little within China, but she's already a B-lister in Asia. Uh, but we can't really put it that way since Sister Ning's movies have always done very well in Asia. Along with being screened domestically, the box office earnings throughout Asia are also quite good. So of course she has an advantage there! As for Teacher Zhang's works, they're basically only known within the country, so there aren't too many people from the other Asian countries who know about him!"

"You still call that popularity of his low? Don't forget that Teacher Zhang has beaten up a Korean celebrity and scolded those Japanese dignitaries. Don't you remember the stir it caused back then? Just how badly had he been boycotted by those two main countries in Asia at that time? The Asian media was basically unwilling to report any news about him at all. So now that he has made it into the Asian C-list rankings, you should know just how heaven defying Teacher Zhang has been! He's totally unstoppable!"

"He's truly awesome!"

"Tossing flowers in celebration!"

"This is going to be an extremely important step for him!"

"Starting today, Zhang Ye is an Asian star!"

The fans sent in their congratulatory messages!

The media outlets were fighting to get their first reports out!

Zhang Ye's friends and family also called to congratulate him!

He had been getting so many such calls these days that he lost count of how many times he had been congratulated. It felt like everyone was constantly congratulating him one after another every other day!

## Chapter 1155: Establishing Zhang Ye's Studio!

Several days later.

Zhang Ye finally had some free time.

The news couldn't possibly revolve around him every day. After a few days of hype by the media, everything returned to normal. That was because an even more important event was approaching!

The Beijing Olympics!

There were a little more than two weeks to go before the Olympic Games began!

This was going to be the single largest event in recent times for China. The media outlets had been reporting this for the past few days. They reported on things like who would be the invited guests for the opening ceremony, who would make up the contingent for Team China in the games, which sports stars could not participate due to injuries, and so on and so forth. The Olympics atmosphere was getting hyped up. Although there was still some time until the start of the Olympics, one could clearly sense that there were more and more foreigners around the streets. There were people of all nationalities around.

In all of China, Zhang Ye was perhaps the last one who knew about this. This fellow had only happened to catch a glimpse of the news this morning before finding out about it with a shock!

Zhang Ye wore an exaggerated expression of surprise. "Beijing Olympics?"

His father looked at him and asked, "What's the matter?"

Zhang Ye said, "They're holding it in Beijing this year?"

"Yeah!" His mother said, "Didn't they bid for the rights many years ago?"

Zhang Ye simply nodded when he remembered that this was no longer his previous world. Too many things had changed over here, like the bidding rights for the Olympics and the year that it would be held. Back in his previous world, the bid to be the host country had since long been won, and the Beijing Olympics had been successfully held.

His mother asked, "Oh, don't you have a classmate working at the Central TV Sports Channel?"

"Yeah, Yu Yingyi," Zhang Ye said.

His mother smiled and said, "See if she can get us some tickets for the events."

Zhang Ye said, "I'll ask her. You're interested in going and watching?"

His mother said, "Of course we have to go and watch. It was not easy to win a bid to organize the Olympic Games. Since it's being held in our country, shouldn't we go and give our support? Aren't you going?"

Zhang Ye threw up his hands. "Why would I go and watch it! It's not like you don't know about the relationship between me and the sports world."

His mother smacked her lips and said, "That's true. Which industries have you not offended?"

After the table tennis interview incident, and the resulting scolding battle and skit that called upon the "rejection of prostitution, gambling, and table tennis," the fight between Zhang Ye and the sports world reached a fever pitch. Many of the sports world's executives, coaches, and athletes gnashed their teeth in hatred of Zhang Ye. This was well-known to everyone.

Zhang Ye sat on the sofa and watched the news for a while. After he had a look at some of the famous athletes of this world, he stopped paying attention to the news. He did not really know most of them anyway. He turned to thinking about what he should be doing next. Zhang Ye was feeling a little overwhelmed after his popularity had soared so quickly in recent times, making him the top A-list celebrity in the country, as well as breaking into the Asian C-list rankings. However, he knew that he would have to take it step by step from here. This little bit of achievement was really incomparable to what his target was. The road ahead was a very long one, and he was still too far away from becoming an international celebrity.

What should he do next?

Which direction should he work towards?

Zhang Ye was still undecided. As such, he drove to Rao Aimin's place after he finished eating breakfast. He wanted to ask Old Rao if there was anyone who wanted to work with him recently.

At Old Rao's place.

The moment Zhang Ye stepped into the house, he was given a tongue-lashing!

Rao Aimin pointed at him and said, "I'm telling you, kid, I'm quitting as your agent. Go find someone else who wants this shitty job. Are you trying to tire me out? You're just staying at home with nothing to do and idling around as you like. Meanwhile, I have to take calls for you even when I go to the bathroom! Do you want to die?"

Chenchen walked in. "Zhang Ye, you've angered my aunt."

Zhang Ye said nervously, "What's going on?"

Rao Aimin slid her cell phone to him. "Just look at how many calls I've taken in these past few days."

Zhang Ye had a look at it and also thought that it was a little too much. There were more than a hundred calls. He quickly put on a placating smile and said, "Big Sis Rao, I know it was hard on you. Can't you see that I'm here now because I care about you? Here,

take this Brain Gold supplement regularly." He placed the Brain Gold on her coffee table and said, "Oh yes, has there been any suitable work for me recently?"

Rao Aimin said, "Yes."

Zhang Ye's eyes lit up. "What kinda work?"

Rao Aimin pointed at the bathroom. "The toilet broke, get it fixed!"

Zhang Ye was speechless.

At this moment, Yang Shu opened the bathroom door. "Ai, Senior Bro, you're here?" She wiped her hands clean and said, "Master Rao, the toilet has been fixed."

Chenchen gave her a thumbs up. "Old Yang, well done."

Rao Aimin said, "Look at Little Yang! And then look at yourself! Other than posturing for the media every day, what do you know? If you keep stirring up all that commotion, who is going to handle the fallout for you? Won't they just come calling me for answers? You're pretty habitual in giving out my number to whoever you like!"

Zhang Ye lamented, "But you're my agent."

"Just hire someone better qualified already," Rao Aimin said.

Zhang Ye said, "Please endure it a little. I know it's been hard on you."

Yang Shu immediately said, "That's right, Master Rao. It isn't easy for Senior Bro either, so please help him out." At all times, Yang Shu was on his side.

Rao Aimin exclaimed, "Then do you think it's easy for me?"

Zhang Ye said, "How about I give you a higher percentage of the earnings?"

Rao Aimin howled, "Have you ever taken any commercial

appearances? How much money can you earn in a year? Depend on your earnings? Then I'd have starved to death ages ago!"

Zhang Ye gave a wry smile and said, "If you quit now, where on earth am I going to find an agent? I don't know that many people, and I don't trust them either."

Rao Aimin said, "In any case, I've already got too much on my hands!"

Suddenly, his cell phone rang.

It was a call from Ha Qiqi.

"Director Zhang!"

"Ai, Sister Ha."

"Where are you?"

"I'm at a friend's place. What's the matter?"

"Everyone has quit their jobs and plans to go join up with you."

"Ah?"

"Will you take us in?"

"What happened? Come over first!"

Twenty minutes later, a group of people gradually arrived at Rao Aimin's house.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, Little Wang, Wu Yi, Tong Fu, and some others were all from Zhang Ye's old team. The longest serving member had worked together with him on The Voice, while the more recent ones worked on A Bite of China and the Documentary on Air Pollution in China together with him. This was the best program team in the TV show industry!

Zhang Ye wondered, "Why did everyone quit?"

Zhang Zuo replied, "Old Ha and I did not renew our contracts after it ran out, so we were considered to have left by ourselves. Little Wang was sacked over a minor matter. The higher-ups

skipped over Director Yan's authority and got her fired."

Little Wang said angrily, "I only rebuked someone from Central TV Department 1!"

Wu Yi said, "I resigned out of anger!"

Zhang Ye looked at the others.

Tong Fu said, "Since everyone left, I followed suit."

Little He added, "I prefer working with Director Zhang, so I resigned too!"

"Director Zhang, we'll listen to your plan!"

"Yeah, we'll all listen to you!"

"There's no way we can continue working there! All of us used to be on your team, so the higher-ups are always picking on us! They kept making things difficult for us and treated us with a bad attitude. Who would want to tolerate their behavior!"

Everyone started complaining!

Zhang Ye said in a speechless manner, "But you all are the industry's best program team. How can they just let you guys leave like that?"

Ha Qiqi said bitterly, "Director Zhang, not many people know about us even though we are the industry's best program team. To put it bluntly, how can we still claim to be number one if you're not on the team?"

Zhang Ye waved it off. "Take a seat and tell me more."

Chenchen waved to them. "Old Ha, Old Zhang, Old Wu."

Zhang Zuo smiled and said, "If it isn't our Little Leader."

Little Wang said joyfully, "Ah, Chenchen has grown taller!"

Chenchen replied, "Mmm, I guess I did."

Zhang Ye introduced everyone to his assistants. "Some of you

might have seen them before and some have not. This is Rao Aimin, my agent. This is Yang Shu, my bodyguard." Then he introduced Ha Qiqi and the rest of the others one by one to Rao Aimin and Yang Shu. "When you weren't around for those six months, I had some trouble juggling my show's production work and taking care of the child. At that time, I brought Chenchen with me to Central TV where everyone helped take care of her. They all treated Chenchen quite well."

Rao Aimin acknowledged him and said lightly, "Stay for the afternoon. I'll make lunch."

Ha Qiqi quickly said, "Sister Rao, there's no need to trouble you."

However, Zhang Ye said, "Don't stand on ceremony with her. Old Rao is a very good cook. You'll all regret it if we don't stay for lunch."

"We? Did I say that I want you to stay for lunch?" Rao Aimin said.

Zhang Ye pretended not to have heard her. He turned to ask Tong Fu, "How did Huang Dandan's surgery go?"

Tong Fu smiled and said, "She's recovering quite well. She even kept saying that she wanted to come and join you, but I stopped her."

Zhang Ye said, "That's good. She should rest up for now, so don't let her get back to work yet."

Little Wang said fervently, "Director Zhang, let's pull off another big one this time!"

"Whoa." Zhang Ye said in amusement, "Are you planning on robbing a bank?"

Little Wang coughed and said, "We can do something on a smaller scale too. We're jobless anyway. If you don't take care of us, we won't have anywhere left to go."

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Didn't I say this before? If you all

don't have anywhere to go in the future, just come look for me and we can plan something. I was so looking forward to you all coming and join me. It's not easy to build another team that has such a deep bond and understanding. It's Central TV's loss that they did not keep all of you in the company. Let me do a headcount. One, two, three, four, five...There's a total of 13 people. Good, so almost the entire team is here."

Ha Qiqi laughed and said, "Basically everyone on the old team is here."

Tong Fu raised his hand. "And some from the new team."

Zhang Ye decided, "Alright, I'll take everyone who wants to join me!"

Ha Qiqi asked, "Then what are we looking at doing?"

Zhang Zuo asked, "Yeah, what should we do?"

They all knew Zhang Ye well. There was a very strong friendship and trust after working together for such a long time. This was not purely about tapping on the interests that each one of them could offer. The reason why everyone came to Zhang Ye the moment they left the Central TV Documentary Channel was not because they had nowhere to go. There were endless people in the industry trying to poach them, yet they were all here because they still wanted to work with Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye was quite happy that his old team that had swept through the entertainment industry was now reunited. When he thought about Rao Aimin's earlier complaints of being too busy, Zhang Ye suddenly had an idea. This idea was probably one that he had in mind since a very long time ago!

Zhang Ye suggested something astonishing. "Let's set up a studio!"

Ha Qiqi was taken aback. "A studio?"

Zhang Zuo said in surprise, "Aiyo, that is a good idea!"

"Right, all the A-list celebrities have their own studios!" Wu Yi said.

Little Wang clapped her hands and said, "I'll join!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Me too!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Count me in!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Haha, and me too!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Follow Director Zhang's lead! And he'll give you meal to eat!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;A studio is a great idea!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;I've been waiting for a long time for this day!"

## Chapter 1156: Hiring a bodyguard for the studio?

Owning a studio was a sure sign of being an A-list celebrity. Some of the top B-list celebrities would also set up their own personal studios as long as they could afford to maintain one. This was equivalent to a small talent agency that would handle artist related affairs like promotions and PR work. For those slightly larger celebrity studios, they would even incorporate production and distribution functions. The only difference was that an agency was responsible for multiple artists, whereas a celebrity studio usually serviced a single celebrity. This was the main difference between the two.

Zhang Ye asked Rao Aimin, "Big Sis Rao, what do you think?"

Rao Aimin spoke like a layman, "What's the use of opening a studio?"

It would be of great use," Zhang Ye quickly replied.

Rao Aimin asked, "What sort of great use?"

"The great use is of course..." Zhang Ye paused and turned to Ha Qiqi. "Uh, what sort of great use?" He was unable to explain what it was good for.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others were floored. How could you not know when you were the one who suggested it?

You're an Asian celebrity, but why are you still so ignorant?!

Little Wang was perceptive of the situation and immediately explained, "Big Sis Rao, the idea of opening a studio is so that everyone would be working around Director Zhang to support him. We would all be working towards the same goal. As for the kind of work it handles, it may include things like being the contact point for people who are interested in having Director Zhang make a commercial appearance, or having specialized

personnel discuss and come up with solutions in the event of emergency PR. There would also be people handling requests for media interviews and other similar activities, so you wouldn't be required to take on such tasks in the future. Since you're Director Zhang's agent, you'd only be required to handle the important issues at hand. All the other minor details and work can be delegated to us to handle. As for who would handle which areas of work, we'll discuss that at a later time."

Zhang Ye repeatedly agreed, "That's right, that's right. In any case, you won't have to do much in the future. There won't be anyone chasing or calling you up every other day."

Rao Aimin sneered. "Why should I believe you?"

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "That's really how it is! Why would I lie to you!"

"I'm already been tricked into it by you once," Rao Aimin said.

Zhang Zuo also persuaded, "Sister Rao, with us sharing the workload, our efficiency will be much higher."

Tong Fu said, "Actually, Director Zhang should have already set up a studio long ago. In all of show business, he's the only A-list celebrity who does not have an agency or studio!"

Wu Yi nodded and said, "Yeah! Once he has a team to support him, Director Zhang would no longer need to personally handle any emergency PR or issue any public statements himself! He is an Asian celebrity now, so if he still doesn't have a studio to deal with his affairs, he won't be able to cope once the workload gets heavier! If some foreign projects come along or the foreign media approaches him, he wouldn't be able to handle them with that English of his. It would be for the best if we could have a dedicated translator to handle all of this. Of course, it would take some time for the team to slowly improve."

Zhang Ye said to Yang Shu, "Little Yang, what about you?"

Yang Shu said without thinking, "Wherever Senior Bro goes, I go."

"Good." Zhang Ye nodded. "Then that's that!"

An agent.

A bodyguard.

A chauffeur.

An assistant.

A videographer.

A secretary.

A director.

A technical director.

Business operations.

Counting all that, a team had practically been fully assembled!

His old group of team members were all very skilled and were basically a complete team that transferred straight over from the television station. They were not missing any roles that a complete program team would have. After they transferred over to the studio, there shouldn't be any drastic changes to their roles. At the very least, their job functions in the team would still be unique. Since this was the same team that produced, promoted, and did the public relations for The Voice and A Bite of China, they did not need to waste any time to get to know each other. They were already quite familiar with one another!

Since everything clicked, the matter was settled!

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Since we've decided to establish a new studio, I'm not sure about how we should get things rolling. If anyone has any suggestions, please bring it up."

Ha Qiqi asked, "Where will the studio be located?"

"Yeah, we have to rent a place for the office and get the business

registration done as soon as possible." Zhang Zuo said, "But the rental prices for office space these days are not cheap."

Zhang Ye's eyes fell upon Rao Aimin.

Rao Aimin gave him a look. "What are you looking at me for!"

Zhang Ye asked, "Old Rao, do you have any spare apartments?"

Rao Aimin pursed her lips and said, "No."

"That can't be." Zhang Ye pointed out knowingly, "Isn't that duplex not rented out yet? The one on the top floor with over 200 square meters of floor space."

Little Wang exclaimed, "There's such a big place?"

Wu Yi said in surprise, "Sister Rao owns another apartment?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "All the units in this apartment building belong to her. This is quite a good place as the units are dual-purpose apartments that we can use to register as our company's address."

Rao Aimin immediately said, "Dream on, kid. How much are you going to pay me?"

Zhang Ye said, "Don't mention money. That could hurt our friendship!"

Rao Aimin rebutted, "Don't mention friendship. That would hurt my money!"

Zhang Ye was left with no choice. Seeing that she was not willing to give in, he could only say, "Alright then, will it do if I rent it from you at the market rate? I've never come across someone as stingy as you!"

"You should have said so earlier." Rao Aimin looked around and found a key. She threw it to him. "Take proper care of the place. Don't damage my apartment!"

Zhang Ye and the others headed upstairs to view the unit.

When they opened the door, they astonished by what they saw!

Although the unit was not considered big, there were two floors of around a hundred square meters each. It was renovated very well and had a little bit of European style furnishing in it. All of the furniture was also new. Once the beds and cabinets in the bedrooms were cleared and replaced with desks, the office would almost be fully equipped without needing any further renovations. Since their studio would only be operating with about a dozen employees for the time being, they did not require too big an office, like those housed in an office building.

Little Wang praised, "This place is good, this place is good!"

Ha Qiqi also liked it a lot. "There's more than enough space!"

Zhang Zuo smiled and said, "Then let's go ahead with the plan. Starting from today, our company's name will be known as 'Zhang Ye's Studio'?"

Zhang Ye said, "Yes!"

Ha Qiqi asked, "Do we still need to hire any more staff?"

"What roles do we need?" Zhang Ye asked.

Tong Fu coughed. "We still require bodyguards, don't we?"

Yang Shu said, "Aren't I the bodyguard?"

Tong Fu said, "Uh, I'm afraid that one bodyguard is not be enough for Director Zhang. He has offended too many people, after all. Now that he has gotten this popular, if he were to meet with any trouble while participating in public activities, or if the fans get too passionate, or if he gets surrounded by too many reporters, something could easily happen to him."

Ha Qiqi nodded. "Right, so should we hire another two bodyguards?"

Yang Shu didn't like the sound of that. She frowned and said, "With me around, who could get near my Senior Bro?"

Little Wang blinked. "Sister Yang, don't tell me you know kung fu?"

Yang Shu gave a slight smile. "I know a bit of Taiji Fist."

Little Wang said in amazement, "Really? Like the one in the movies?"

Yang Shu scoffed. "The Taiji Fist that you see in the movies are all fake. If you want to learn it, I can teach you. I'm giving lessons daily in the neighborhood below our apartment. Do you want to come? It's free to join. Taiji Fist is a superior type of martial arts. Not only can it strengthen the body, it also can..." She rattled on and on. She launched into a sales pitch on Taiji Fist like what she had been saying to the elderly in the neighborhood every day.

Little Wang said, "You're that awesome?"

Yang Shu smiled and said, "My senior bro is even more awesome."

It was obvious no one understood what she meant.

Wu Yi asked curiously, "Senior Bro? This form of address..."

Zhang Zuo guessed, "You graduated from Media College too? Are you Director Zhang's junior at school? Eh, when did Media College start giving martial arts lessons? I've never heard about that!"

Yang Shu said, "Huh? What junior at school?"

Zhang Ye interrupted, "Alright, there's no need to recruit any more bodyguards. She's enough."

Everyone gave Yang Shu a skeptical look but did not say anything more.

What could such a small woman possibly do?

None of them knew how strong Yang Shu was at this point in time!

Unbeknownst to them, now that Zhang Ye's Studio had been

established, the role of bodyguards was going to be the least of their concerns!

With Zhang Ye, Yang Shu, and Rao Aimin around, would there be any in this world who would dare barge in? Even if a martial arts grandmaster were to come attacking, they would arrive standing but leave the place on a stretcher. Zhang Ye's Studio was a much safer place than the Huashan Sect, Shaolin Monastery, and all other large sects. Be it the name of Rao Aimin or Zhang Ye, they were both fearsome existences in the martial arts world who would send anyone running!

#### Chapter 1157: The studio officially opens!

Several days passed.

Zhang Ye's Studio was officially registered and opened for business.

Although the place was not big and there were not a lot of employees yet, with Zhang Ye's reputation staked on it, the company immediately became one of the biggest celebrity studios the moment it started operating.

Zhang Ye's parents came to visit.

Little Wang served them tea and hot water. "Auntie, Uncle, have a seat.

His mother looked around. "Good, very good."

His father commented, "Yup, it's a pretty nice place."

"Where's my son?" His mother asked.

Ha Qiqi smiled and said, "Director Zhang went out to pick someone up. I'll show you around."

His mother nodded. "Alright, let's go have a look around!"

Zhang Zuo asked, "By the way, Auntie, shall we light some firecrackers? So that there'll be a more festive air for the opening?"

His mother waved him off. "There's no need. Little Ye doesn't like it so boisterous, so it's fine as is."

"Grandpa, Grandma." Chenchen skipped over.

"Ai, my little Chenchen. Did you miss Grandma?" Zhang Ye's mother took Chenchen by her hand with a wide smile. "Come, come upstairs with Grandpa and Grandma and have a look."

The first floor was the reception area. There was a sofa, a television, a kitchen where meals could be made, and even a rather large bar. Behind it, the wine cabinet was stocked to the brim with

liquor bottles. This cabinet was newly installed by them, and the entire place was dazzling. There was also a small conference room that had been modified from an existing guest room and was separated from the rest of the area. On the second floor, there were a few standalone office spaces. Everyone would be working from here in the future. The phone and internet connection networks had also all been wired in.

Most worth mentioning was the balcony on the second floor. In the entire apartment complex, only the duplex on the top floor had this feature. The balcony was over ten square meters, so it wasn't small at all. It was resurfaced with a fresh lawn, and they had ordered some customized swings that were installed just this morning. Long rattan benches were placed out on the balcony as well. Looking out from the balcony, one could see the city down below and the endless sky hanging overhead. It wouldn't be a problem if they were to hold an occasional gathering out here. The view from here was gorgeous.

Soon after, Zhang Ye returned with Yao Jiancai beside him.

Little Wang quickly said, "Teacher Yao, hello!"

"Teacher Yao!"

"Teacher Yao is here?"

Yao Jiancai laughed and said, "Hello, everyone!"

Little Wang said, "Director Zhang, Auntie and Uncle are both here. They're out on the balcony upstairs."

"OK, I got it." Zhang Ye was all smiles. "Old Yao, how's my place?"

"It's pretty awesome!" Yao Jiancai said, "It's quite cozy here and much better than my agency, that's for sure." He then turned to the bar. "Whoa, you've got this much alcohol here? Shall we open a bottle?"

Zhang Ye pointed at the drinks. "Just have whatever you like, don't stand on ceremony with me."

Little Wang was still employed as the office assistant in the studio. "Which bottle should I open?"

"The cheapest one!" Zhang Ye said.

Yao Jiancai was speechless.

At this moment, another group arrived outside!

Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi came in with a laugh.

Zhang Ye was taken aback. "Yo, we have distinguished guests."

Dong Shanshan smiled and said, "You didn't even invite us to your studio's opening?"

"Hai, I hadn't planned on inviting anyone at all. I only sent a message to all my friends to inform them about it." Zhang Ye laughed and said, "I didn't expect that you'd come!"

Yu Yingyi said in amusement, "Since we know about it, of course we'd have to come over to congratulate you."

Dong Shanshan said to the delivery person outside, "Just place the flower basket outside the door. Yes, that's it, thank you."

There were two flower baskets, one each from Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi.

Yao Jiancai stretched out his hand and said, "Teacher Shanshan."

"Teacher Yao, it's been a while." Dong Shanshan smiled and shook hands with him.

"This is?" Yao Jiancai had seen the sports commentator before but couldn't remember her name.

Zhang Ye introduced, "This is a classmate of mine and Shanshan's. Gorgeous Beauty Yu, Yu Yingyi."

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "I dare not call myself 'gorgeous.'"

Dong Shanshan said amused, "But you are fine with 'beauty'?"

"Of course." Only then did Yu Yingyi finally shake hands with

Yao Jiancai. "It's our first time meeting, Teacher Yao. Nice to meet you. I've watched all of yours and Zhang'er's crosstalks no less than five times. I still laugh every time I watch them. The two of you are definitely the best crosstalk partners in the industry!"

Yao Jiancai chuckled, "You're too nice. Little Zhang and I only went to take part in the crosstalk competition after we were forced into a dead end."

Suddenly, even more people arrived.

"Is it here?" The trio of Xiaodong, Li Xiaoxian, and Amy came in wondering if they got the right place.

Zhang Ye immediately went up to greet them. "Whoa, you're all here?"

Xiaodong smiled and said, "Teacher Zhang, congratulations."

Zhang Ye gave them a fist and palm salute. "You too, you too."

Amy said, "Our flower basket has been placed outside the door."

"Alright." Zhang Ye said, "Just leave it there."

Xiaodong pointed behind herself and got someone to carry in a box of items. "I brought you a box of red wine."

Amy giggled and said, "Sister Xiaodong has collected all that for many years. She's not even willing to open a bottle for herself."

Xiaodong waved it off. "It's a gift for Director Zhang, I must be willing to give it out!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "You're this generous? Thank you."

Li Xiaoxian covered her mouth and laughed. "Sister Xiaodong means to say that since you have your own studio now, we'll be coming over often to have a drink. So she might as well store the wine here."

Zhang Ye said, "So you're taking this place to be a storage place for your wine now? Ha, I get it. Feel free to come over anytime; I'll certainly welcome you. Treat this place as your own from now on."

Yao Jiancai said, "Alright, I'll come over to have a drink every day then."

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes. "I wasn't talking to you."

Everyone laughed.

Chen Guang and Fan Wenli were both overseas, so they specially called to offer their congratulations. Even though they were not here, they sent over some gifts that were pretty heavy. Then, there was also Grandma Zhang Xia. She couldn't find time to come over today, so she purposely got her son to send over a flower basket. There was even calligraphy that was written by Grandma Zhang herself. And Ning Lan, the skit actress Ci Xiufang, Central TV Documentary Channel's Yan Tianfei, Beijing Television's Hu Fei, China Qiyuan, and so on and so forth. In the end, there was even a flower basket sent by the Heavenly Queen, Zhang Yuanqi. The official Weibo of Zhang Yuanqi's Studio also posted a message: "Congratulations on the establishment of Zhang Ye's Studio."

Zhang Ye's Studio also set up its own Weibo and got a verification tag for the account.

For some other industry insiders who were not that close or well acquainted with Zhang Ye, they also offered their congratulations online.

"@ZhangYeStudio."

"Congratulations, Teacher Zhang!"

"Wishing your company's business success in scaling new heights!"

"Hoping you flourish and expand throughout the world."

"Rich blessings for a smooth sailing business."

There were a few of these messages, while the rest were all replies and likes by the netizens!

All of Zhang Ye's good friends in the industry that could be seen had been seen. It might seem like there were a lot of them, but it was really only those few people. He didn't really have any friends in the entertainment industry. Any C-or D-list celebrity probably had a much better social network than he did. Whenever someone's company was established, or whenever someone got married, they could easily invite over half of the entertainment industry to attend. But this sort of turnout could never happen to a fellow like Zhang Ye!

Oh, actually, it shouldn't be put that way.

Zhang Ye felt that if he were to die someday, he could almost definitely attract the entire entertainment industry to turn out for his funeral, and the number of wreaths that he would receive would probably line all the way from his house to Tiananmen Square!

#### Chapter 1158: The first big project!

That night.

Zhang Ye was laying down on the balcony outside the studio and stargazing. He poured himself a glass of red wine. There was a cool light breeze blowing. Eh, but there were just too many mosquitoes.

With a team of his own now, Zhang Ye no longer had to worry about how a lot of things were run. He felt relaxed and at ease now, but had one small regret—he had spent too much! The rental, the renovations, the equipment, the utilities, and the payroll, Zhang Ye had to pay for all that out of his own pocket. With such a large family to support now, he would surely have to improve further from here. He could only bring everyone together and slowly move forward now!

What should he do next?

After resting for so many days, it was time to start work again!

The window opened and Chenchen's head popped out. "Zhang Ye, I'm going to bed."

"Go on then," Zhang Ye said.

"Tell me a bedtime story," Chenchen said.

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes. "Go, go, go get Yang Shu to tell one to you."

Chenchen pouted. "Zhang Ye, you're so lazy." Then she turned around and went off.

Ha Qiqi also poked her head out and said with a bitter smile, "Director Zhang, why are you still lying around? We're almost dying from being so busy."

Zhang Ye sat up. "Hey, I thought that you all had already knocked off. What are you guys still doing here?"

Ha Qiqi said, "Our studio has just opened for business, so there

are a lot of people trying to contact us. They're looking for you to collab on movies, TV series, or are trying to ask you for a song, or accept some commercial appearances. We received so many calls that we lost count. But so far, there has been nothing that caught our eye. There was an offer to play the second male lead with a pay of 10 million RMB, but we're totally uninterested in that."

Zhang Zuo also stuck his head out the window. "Director Zhang, at least give us some direction. Just what kind of projects are you looking to work on?"

Zhang Ye said, "A big project."

"What would you call a big project?" Zhang Zuo questioned.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "The bigger the better, of course!"

At his level, he could already be considered one of the top few celebrities in the country. Although he still couldn't compare to those Heavenly Kings and Queens, he was at the level where he could choose which projects he wanted to take. In the industry, there were those who picked their jobs based on the amount of money offered and would work for whomever paid them more. Then, there were those who picked their jobs based on relationships. If they had a good relationship with the crew, they'd help out over there. Meanwhile, Zhang Ye mainly based his decisions on whatever would bring him more popularity. Whichever project was bigger, whichever one that would allow him to gain more popularity, he would definitely prefer those over the others.

Suddenly, he heard Little Wang shouting, "Director Zhang! Director Zhang!"

Ha Qiqi was startled. "What's the matter? What is it?"

Little Wang came running over. "There's a big project! It's a huge project!"

Zhang Ye said, feeling rather interested, "Do tell."

Little Wang panted, "Someone has asked you for a song!"

Zhang Ye immediately lost interest. He shrugged and said, "Didn't I say that I don't casually write songs for others unless I have a really good relationship with them?"

Little Wang said anxiously, "This one's different!"

Ha Qiqi looked at her. "How much are they offering?"

Little Wang said, "I don't think they're paying anything."

Zhang Zuo didn't know how to react. "They're not paying and want Director Zhang to write them a free song? Do you know how much one song of Director Zhang's can fetch? Even if it were Sister Zhang, she wouldn't ask Director Zhang to write her a song for free!"

However, Little Wang's next words shocked everyone!

Little Wang said loudly, "It's the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games that is asking for the song! It's for the Olympic theme song! They said that it would be used during the opening ceremony of the Olympics!"

"What?"

"What did you just say?"

"The Olympic theme song?"

"Holy shit!"

"That's really a big project, fucking hell!"

"Aiyo, did they really approach us?"

Little Wang said, "Yes, really!"

Everyone became very excited!

It was for the Olympics!

It was for the Olympics that was held once every four years!

The Olympics that would be broadcast live all over the world!

Wu Yi said loudly, "Director Zhang, you must take this job! Even if they aren't paying, you must take the job! This will greatly affect your popularity!"

Ha Qiqi said excitedly, "It's going to add very good credentials to your résumé! If you take this project, you won't have to worry for the rest of your life! I could never have expected that we would be approached with such a huge project so soon after our opening! How many people are competing to get on the Olympic opening ceremony, and still, they wouldn't get a chance at something like that!"

Zhang Ye narrowed his eyes. He hadn't expected that the Organizing Committee would come looking for him. He raised some doubts about the offer. "We're slightly less than two weeks away from the opening ceremony of the Olympics, aren't we? Hadn't everything already been planned long ago for the opening ceremony? They can't possibly be starting to prepare for it at the last minute. How many years ago was it since they won the Olympic bid? How can they possibly be thrown off balance in their planning at a time like this?"

Zhang Zuo was startled. "Yeah, the rehearsals are already about to begin."

Little Wang said, "I don't know about that. I, I didn't ask."

Zhang Ye asked again, "Did they only mention that they wanted me to write a song?"

"Yes," Little Wang replied.

Zhang Ye said, "They didn't mention anything about me singing it?"

Little Wang said, "I...don't think they did."

Zhang Ye nodded. "Are you sure that the call was from the Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games?"

"I've already verified it with them. The caller was the head of the

Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games," Little Wang said.

Zhang Ye said, "Alright, then let them know that since this is not a small matter, I will need some time to consider it."

Little Wang was dumbfounded. "Consider?"

Wu Yi nearly fainted. "You still need to consider for an offer like that?"

"Director Zhang, this is too good an opportunity to be missed!" Zhang Zuo was also nearly driven mad. "This is the Olympics we're talking about! The opening theme song for the Olympics! What is there still left to consider? If you miss this chance, it would really be a big loss. Our country is probably only able to host one Olympic Games in the near future. This is the only chance where we can showcase ourselves to the entire world! Aiyo, just...just what are you thinking?"

But Zhang Ye said, "Little Wang, just tell them that."

"OK." Little Wang could only helplessly obey the orders. She left to make the call.

Then, Zhang Ye said to everyone, "It's not that I don't wish to take on the project. For a huge project like this, even if I have to suffer a big loss, I would still take it on. But think about it for a moment. It doesn't mean that I would get to sing the song even if I wrote it. If I were to promise them so quickly, then when I finish writing the song for them and don't get to sing it during the opening ceremony, who will I go to for answers?"

Zhang Zuo analyzed, "Surely not, right? Since they came looking for you, that would mean that they want you to sing it too, isn't that so?"

Zhang Ye waved his hands and said, "There's nothing impossible about that. After being in the industry for so long and coming across all kinds of people, you can see from the news that I have

always been getting into fights over such incidents. How many people have I scolded? For things like this, I am more experienced than any of you. We can't make any promises in a hurry, so just drag it out a little for now. I believe that something has cropped up over on their side, so they needed to change the song at the last minute. Otherwise, based on my relationship with those from the sports world, do you think they would lower their heads and come to me for help? There's definitely something going on here."

Ha Qiqi was convinced. "Director Zhang has a valid point there."

Wu Yi said anxiously, "But what if..."

Zhang Zuo said, "Yeah, don't let the opportunity slip away!"

Zhang Ye said calmly, "Just wait a little and see how it goes. If it's really ours, this chance will never get away. But coming back to the point, if there's really no song to be sung at the Olympics, even if they don't want me to sing it, I would still write one for them. This is a matter of national affairs, and this bro is not such a narrow-minded person. It wasn't easy for China to organize an Olympic Games. The next time it happens again would probably be decades to a century later. We can't allow it to fail in the hands of our generation."

He would still fight for what was needed!

He still had to do what was necessary!

This had always been how Zhang Ye handled things!

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Alright, it's time to knock off. Everyone has worked hard today."

After everyone left, Zhang Ye stayed around. He laid down outside on the balcony and flipped on a colored lamp. Then he picked up a score and twisted the felt-tip pen in his hand before writing down a few words.

<sup>&</sup>quot; You and Me ".

Eid Mubarak, everyone! & all the best to your World Cup teams!

# Chapter 1159: Zhang Ye is going to the Olympic opening ceremony!

The next day.

There were already stories in the news!

At Jiaomen East, Zhang Ye's Studio.

Little Wang was holding several copies of newspapers in her hands and shouting, "Here are today's papers!"

Everyone gathered around her while Zhang Ye also came over to have a look.

"Olympic Opening Ceremony Rehearsal Delayed!"

"A major problem might have befallen the Olympic opening ceremony!"

"Last-minute change of singers and theme song for opening ceremony!"

"Jiang Hanwei not destined to perform opening theme song?"

"Who will land the Olympic opening theme song?"

On the Internet, the netizens were also extremely surprised by the news!

"How did something like this happen?"

"It's already so close to the start of the Olympics!"

"The foreign Olympic contingents are already gradually arriving to Beijing!"

"Why did the theme song suddenly get changed? What was wrong with the previous one? I thought that they had already confirmed that it would be performed by Jiang Hanwei and Shu Han? Damn, wouldn't Old Jiang and Sister Shu have worked in vain then!"

"I wonder what's going on?"

"They're changing the lineup and song so suddenly?"

"Is there still time for that?"

"Then who's going to take over?"

"This is going to be a very lucrative job. There's definitely going to be a lot of people eyeing this chance!"

"Yeah, heads will probably roll when everyone contends for the song!"

The citizens were very concerned. After all, this was the first time that China was hosting the Olympics. It would be the only time in history that this was happening, so who wouldn't want it to be carried out flawlessly?

The entertainment industry's artists were also very concerned. Who could take the stage to sing the one and only opening ceremony theme song for the Olympics? This was incredibly important for an artist, especially those who harbored thoughts of stepping into the international stage. The lure was too enticing!

At the studio.

Ha Qiqi exclaimed, "So something really did happen!"

The moment she finished speaking, there was a knock on the door.

Little Wang went to answer it. Then, she got a shock. This was because there were seven or eight people standing outside the door in suits. At a single glance, it was clear that they were officials. She didn't know most of them, but there was one person in the group she recognized immediately. This person was very famous!

#### —Li Ke!

He was one of the most famous film and television directors in China. This "one of" did not refer to being one in dozens, but one in only four people. When mentioning Chinese film directors, he would definitely rank within the top three. Even on the international stage, Li Ke's works had pretty good results. Right now, the post he held was the executive director of the Olympic opening ceremony!

"Is this Zhang Ye's Studio?"

"Yes."

"We're from the Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games."

"Ah, please come in."

Little Wang led the group of people inside.

Zhang Ye also walked up to them slowly.

Li Ke smiled and stretched out his hand. "Director Zhang, I'd been looking forward to meeting you."

Zhang Ye shook hands with him. "I wouldn't dare to call myself a director in front of you, Director Li."

Li Ke was also in the Celebrity Goof Group. He occasionally joined in the conversations, and the two of them had chatted as well. Although they hadn't met, they were not exactly strangers either.

Then, Zhang Ye noticed that the famous lyricist and composer, Wang Zhuishu, was also part of the group. "Old Wang?"

Wang Zhuishu and Zhang Ye had known each other through King of Masked Singers and their relationship was considered alright.

Wang Zhuishu gave a wry smile. "Teacher Zhang, you're really something!"

Zhang Ye played dumb. "Ah? What about me?"

Wang Zhuishu said helplessly, "Let me make some introductions first. This is Qi Yihai, the vice president of the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games."

Qi Yihai smiled and said, "Teacher Zhang, I've been looking forward to meeting you for a long time."

Zhang Ye smiled back. "If I knew that President Qi was visiting today, I would have gone downstairs to welcome you!"

Li Ke joked, "So you wouldn't have gone to welcome us if it was just me?"

"Haha, of course I would have, of course I would have," Zhang Ye laughed.

Afterwards, the rest of the people were introduced. Other than one person who did not seem too friendly, probably because he was from the sports world, the others all greeted Zhang Ye politely. If it were just a normal celebrity, there wouldn't be a need to be so polite. However, as they had come to Zhang Ye for a favor, and with his status different from other normal celebrities since he held three professorships from two universities, everyone had to politely greet him as "Professor Zhang" or "Teacher Zhang." They wouldn't address him as "Little Zhang" or directly by his full name.

After a simple exchange of a few words, Zhang Ye got the studio employees to move upstairs, leaving Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and Little Wang behind with him. Ha Qiqi was now in charge of external communications for Zhang Ye's Studio, while Zhang Zuo was in charge of the internal communications. Meanwhile, the reason for Little Wang staying behind with them was because she had to serve drinks to the guests.

Everyone got seated.

Wang Zhuishu said, "Director Zhang, have you reached a decision yet?"

Zhang Ye blinked. "What decision? Oh, I remember. You mean about the song!"

Wang Zhuishu rolled his eyes.

Zhang Ye said, "May I ask why you all approached me?"

The vice president of the organizing committee looked at him. "Teacher Zhang, I won't hide this from you. There were some problems with the theme song for the opening ceremony. There's a problem with the personnel, as well as with the song. I won't go into detail, but suffice it to say that all the songs that were previously lined up have been rejected. We feel that the lyrics and the melody were completely unsuitable for performing at this sort of an international stage. Like for one of the songs, Chinese elements were too heavily emphasized. This should have been a good thing since it would showcase the charms of our country. But then, it kind of felt unsuitable for the Olympics. After much deliberation, our Organizing Committee feels that we should have something that is a little more international sounding. But there has been nothing suitable so far, and we have already dragged this on for too long."

Wang Zhuishu added, "I wasn't able to help either. I've already written seven or eight drafts for proposal, and so have some of our country's other musicians. A song that is more international sounding is what's making this so difficult. The score for the music is not easy to create, so that's where the problem lies. We were all out of ideas. Then, later, when Director Li mentioned you, I suddenly remembered that writing songs is a specialty of yours. So Director Li and I recommended you to the Organizing Committee."

Is writing songs my only specialty?

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I can sing well too." His words carried a double meaning.

Wang Zhuishu simply nodded.

Li Ke smiled but did not say anything.

An executive from the sports world frowned.

But it was Qi Yihai who spoke, "I know that. My daughter is a fan of your singing. She likes you so much that she doesn't even listen to me anymore, hai." Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Did I just get implicated in something that I don't know about?"

However, Qi Yihai said, "I don't like her chasing after celebrities and idols, but you're an exception. I've always admired Teacher Zhang's principles concerning major issues."

Zhang Ye did not know how to respond to that.

So he listened to Qi Yihai continue, "We're getting closer and closer to the day of the opening ceremony. There isn't much time left. Director Li and Teacher Wang told me that if anyone could come up with a new song in a short period of time, then it would only be you, Teacher Zhang. I agree with what they said, so that's why we came over today to pay you a visit. We wanted to know if you can come up with a song for us. Our requirements for the song is that it has to sound like it was written for the international stage in mind, has to have a nice melody, be able to spread positive energy, and also showcases the bearing of our country."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Your requirements are not simple."

Qi Yihai said, "That's why we came looking for you."

Wang Zhuishu asked, "Director Zhang, do you think you can do it? It's really urgent!"

Zhang Ye thought about it and told Little Wang, "Little Wang, go to my office and take out the document from the first drawer on the right. Bring that to me."

"OK!" Little Wang very quickly returned with what he wanted.

Zhang Ye gripped the score and placed it on the table. "Everyone, please have a look at this song."

What?

There's already a song?

Damn, isn't that too fast! We know that you're the quickest draw around, but isn't that still way too fast! Are you a machine gun or

something?

Everyone was very surprised. Even Ha Qiqi and Zhang Zuo did not know about it!

"You and Me"?

Wang Zhuishu took the score and immediately started humming!

Qi Yihai, Li Ke, and the others watched and listened to him very seriously!

Ten minutes later.

Everyone was stunned!

Li Ke laughed. "Good! It's really good!"

An organizing committee official praised, "This is great!"

Wang Zhuishu banged the table. "This is it! This totally sounds like a theme song that was tailored for the Beijing Olympics!"

Zhang Ye said, "Well, I did write it specifically for the Olympics."

Wang Zhuishu had no reply.

Zhang Ye asked with a smile, "President Qi, what do you think?"

Qi Yihai gave him a thumbs up. "It's impeccable! Teacher Zhang is really as good as everyone says!"

Zhang Ye said, "That's good then."

Qi Yihai was also a smart person. He looked at him and said, "Teacher Zhang, we definitely want this song. You won't have written this in vain. Just tell us what requests you might have."

Zhang Ye said, "I only have two requests. No, I shouldn't say that they're requests since this is a national affair. I only have two wishes. The first one is that I hope to be the one to sing this song since I believe that I should be the one to sing my own song. I could perform it to the best that way. Second, I hope that I am allowed to pick the partner for the part of the female duet."

The person from the sports world immediately said, "No way!"

Zhang Ye looked at him and vaguely remembered from the introduction earlier that his surname was Qian. He was a chief of some bureau it seemed.

Chief Qian said, "The song performers have already been decided. It will definitely be performed by Jiang Hanwei and Shu Han. The two of them rehearsed the opening theme song for a very long time."

Zhang Ye said, "But hasn't the song been switched now?"

Chief Qian looked at him. "We still have to consider the two teachers' feelings."

Zhang Ye asked in return, "If you wish to be considerate of the teachers, I can understand that. You can handle that however you deem fit, but don't use my song to do it. You sound like you're taking things for granted from the way you speak."

"Did I ever say anything like that?" Chief Qian was also getting annoyed. "These Olympics are a matter of national importance. It's a diplomatic mission, so can't you just write a song for someone to sing? Can't you even make a small sacrifice for the country?"

Zhang Ye said, "I can make sacrifices for sure. For my country and its people, I can do a lot of things. Furthermore, it won't just be paying lip service like what you're doing. Everyone knows how much I have done in the past, so don't resort to using moral coercion to pressure me! Why do I have to be the one to do everything and still be the one making sacrifices? Why is it that some people do not have to do anything and still get to bask in the glory of others? In the end, I still have to be insulted like I did something wrong?"

Chief Qian raged, "You!"

Ha Qiqi quickly held Zhang Ye back. "Director Zhang!"

All of a sudden, they started arguing. This had always been

Zhang Ye's style. No one present found this to be odd. They all knew just how ill-tempered Zhang Ye could get, and there was nothing they could do about it.

Qi Yihai looked at the two of them helplessly. "I also know about the disagreements between Teacher Zhang and the sports world from back then. So it's still going on? Hur hur."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I suppose it's not over yet. Please forgive me, President Qi. I don't mean any harm, but it's just that I'm rather blunt and offend people easily."

Qi Yihai thought to himself, Was that being blunt? It sounded more like every word was cutting! However, Qi Yihai's impression of Zhang Ye was still pretty good. He wasn't a member of the sports world and had been assigned here to lead the committee. He also knew about the cold relations between the sports world and Zhang Ye, but that was none of his business, and he wasn't bothered by it either. What he needed to do was just to ensure that the Olympics would be properly organized and that the opening ceremony could be carried out without a hitch. That was all.

Li Ke was on Zhang Ye's side regarding this matter. "Director Zhang's singing is much better than Old Jiang's, and he's also more popular than Old Jiang."

Chief Qian reiterated, "But in terms of international popularity, Teacher Jiang is much more well-known, and his movies are also quite influential overseas. This is an international stage, so we have to consider all these factors. And his partner for the song, Shu Han will definitely..." He started gesturing.

Li Ke did not like hearing that. "Chief Qian, I think I'm the executive director here?"

After getting snubbed, Chief Qian flushed red with embarrassment!

Zhang Ye also spoke at this moment. "President Qi, you can make

the decision?"

"Of course I can," Qi Yihai said.

Zhang Ye nodded. "If the Organizing Committee is really against it and doesn't find me suitable to represent our country on stage, that is fine. Just take the song, and we'll carry on with our lives as they were. It's all fine. This is my country's Olympic Games, so long as I can make a contribution, I won't ask for anything more than that."

Chief Qian said, "President Qi!"

Another person on the Organizing Committee said, "President Qi, we..."

Qi Yihai gave Zhang Ye a look and suddenly said with a smile, "Alright then. Just by those words of yours, I will fulfill your two wishes. Director Li, what do you think?"

Li Ke said, "I don't have any objections."

Qi Yihai said, "Alright, I will let the higher-ups know about this, so it's settled!"

Zhang Ye stood up and put out his hand. "Let's work well together."

Qi Yihai laughed heartily and shook his hand. He said, "You'll have to start making preparations immediately. With the time extension, we're only three days away from the rehearsal for the opening ceremony."

Chief Qian looked annoyed!

The other Organizing Committee members looked at one another!

Let Zhang Ye sing the Olympics opening theme song? Isn't that as good as slapping the face of the sports world! Who didn't know that Zhang Ye had scolded a large number of coaches and athletes of the sports world? He even deliberately used a skit to insult

them. But now? He was going to represent the sports world and perform onstage? Would that work out? Hai, whatever. Since President Qi had decided, it was all set. They just had to make the opening ceremony happen, and everything would be decided in the best interests of the country.

Meanwhile, those people from Zhang Ye's Studio nearly screamed from the excitement!

He had done it!

He had really done it!

Director Zhang was going to represent the country and take to the stage for the Olympic opening ceremony!

## Chapter 1160: International Superstar Lillian!

On the same day.

The news was leaked.

"Olympic Opening Ceremony Song Confirmed!"

"Zhang Ye to open the Games with a rendition of the theme song!"

"The Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games unanimously agrees to use Zhang Ye's song!"

"Zhang Ye joins the opening ceremony to replace Jiang Hanwei and Shu Han!"

"The Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games has verified the authenticity of this news!"

When the netizens saw these headlines, all of them expressed their disbelief!

"Teacher Zhang?"

"Damn, surely not, right!"

"How can it possibly be him!"

"I don't believe this!"

"I don't believe it either, it can't be him!"

"I have a friend working with the Organizing Committee. I heard that this matter has been confirmed, and their management already held a meeting to approve Teacher Zhang's song. He'll be the one performing it as well!"

"Pfft, but don't they know about his relationship with the sports world?"

"Yeah, Zhang Ye is going to open the games with his

performance? Can it get any more ironic than that? Would those people from the sports world agree to this? I was thinking earlier how this slice of pie could land in anyone's plate but Zhang Ye's. After that fearsome war of words with the sports world during the new year, there hasn't been much of such large-scale scolding battles in showbiz! Goddammit, what kind of song could Teacher Zhang have come up with to make the Organizing Committee decide this?"

"Who knows!"

"This is going to be really interesting!"

"Yeah, we'll have a good show to watch again, hahahaha!"

"I feel that Zhang Ye is quite a suitable candidate for this!"

"Why?"

"Because Go can also be generally considered as a form of sports? Teacher Zhang is the greatest Go player in the world right now, and he can also sing well, so it's very normal for him to get chosen!"

"Uh, there's a point to that."

"Did Professor Zhang turn on the 'hogging the headlines' mode again?"

Immediately, some of those athletes who were involved in the scolding battle against Zhang Ye awhile back started protesting!

The head coach of the table tennis team angrily expressed on Weibo: "How can they use someone who is so disrespectful to sports as the singer of the opening theme song? I simply cannot understand this!"

A table tennis player: "Unacceptable!"

A badminton player: "Zhang Ye is representing the country and singing? This must be a mistake!"

But afterwards, the table tennis team's head coach deleted that

Weibo post, perhaps because the Organizing Committee had talked to him?

Actually, they couldn't be blamed for feeling so shocked!

Even Zhang Ye's friends and relatives were finding it hard to believe!

A phone call from his mother came chasing after him for answers!

"Little Ye!"

"Mom."

"Did you get asked to perform the Olympics opening theme song?"

"Hur hur, yes."

"Has it been confirmed?"

"Of course."

"Aiyo, that's great! You're my good son!"

"So I'll be quite busy during this time and probably won't be home for a while."

"That's fine! No problem! Just do what you need to and quickly finish the song. You'll need to practice too, so please don't come home until everything is done! You must sing well at the opening ceremony! It's on the world stage!"

"I understand."

Ning Lan also called him in shock!

"Sister Ning."

"Zhang'er, are you serious?"

"The Olympics theme song you mean? It's true."

"How did you do it?"

"They didn't have a song, so they came to look for me to write

one."

"Will you be performing it as well?"

"Yes, probably because they were moved by my charm, haha."

"What charm do you have! By the way, my new movie will be screening soon. Do help me to advertise it a little on your Weibo when the time comes."

"No problem."

Chen Guang's call:

"Just what song do you have?"

"Haha, it's a secret."

"You're really too fearsome, I suppose Jiang Hanwei must hate you to the bone now!"

"You say it like he didn't hate me before this."

"I am just in shock. How could it be you!"

The calls kept coming in from his friends. While everyone was in disbelief at the news, they were also very happy for him. That was because everyone knew it was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity to be able to perform a song for the Olympic opening ceremony in their own nation. There likely wouldn't be another such chance in several decades. Even the Heavenly Kings and Queens did not get selected; even a veteran like Jiang Hanwei whose social network spanned far and wide in the industry was not chosen. All of that showed just how fierce the competition was to perform the theme song. This was not something that could be achieved with just popularity and social ties. Sometimes, it also needed some luck, and Zhang Ye happened to get the role!

The Go battle!

The mathematical conjecture!

King of Masked Singers!

There was no doubt that those three battles had led Zhang Ye to where he was right now!

If Zhang Ye did not know how to compose songs, if he did not use his astonishing singing skills to become the champion of King of Masked Singers, if he didn't make an appearance during the war between humans and machines, if there wasn't an announcement that Dale's Conjecture had been proven by Zhang Ye and spread his name across the world a little, then it could probably be said that this chance to sing the theme song at the opening ceremony would not have come his way. None of those factors could be missing from the equation. It was all down to Zhang Ye slowly building up his popularity and fame that helped the Organizing Committee to decide to use him in the end!

This was perhaps what luck was about!

This was also the result of Zhang Ye's hard work all this time!

The Olympic opening ceremony. There was without a doubt the largest platform that Zhang Ye would ever perform on so far. Although it was only one song, it was enough. This was the best chance to show himself to the entire world!

• • •

Later that afternoon.

In the studio.

Zhang Ye was alone in his office browsing through some information. He was currently trying to choose a partner to sing with, someone who would be sharing the Olympic stage and performing the song alongside him. Back in his previous world, that version of "You and Me" performed by Liu Huan and Sarah Brightman was simply too amazing. Zhang Ye's singing style was quite different from Teacher Liu Huan's style, but he was also quite inclined to finding a foreign female singer to perform with. Only then would the charm of this song be brought out. But the

problem was that Zhang Ye did not know anyone. He did not know who he could look for!

Joss?

Molly?

These were the more well-known female singers of this world!

But thinking about them, Zhang Ye could only shake his head and strike them off his list of choices. These two people did not have a clear attitude towards the Chinese. One of them was less mainstream and was rumored to be hard to get along with, so he would surely have to avoid getting such international celebrities. Zhang Ye would not dare to invite them no matter how popular they were. He had to play it safe first and foremost. His ideal choice would be someone who liked the Chinese, followed by their popularity and singing skills. But it wasn't easy to find international celebrities who were friendly towards the Chinese these days.

Who should he look for?

Who would be the most suitable?

After browsing for a long time, a name finally appeared in front of Zhang Ye's eyes.

The office door opened.

Ha Qiqi said anxiously, "Director Zhang, the Organizing Committee is rushing us again."

Zhang Zuo stood up and said, "They called three times and were asking if you had anyone in mind. The day of the rehearsal is almost here, and it's a race against time!"

Zhang Ye smiled. "I've picked someone."

Ha Qiqi blinked. "Who?"

Everyone looked over!

Zhang Ye calmly answered, "Lillian."

Everyone was shocked!

"Huh?"

"What?"

"Who did you say?"

Zhang Ye repeated, "I said, Lillian."

Ha Qiqi gave a dry laugh and said, "Director Zhang, are you joking with us?"

Zhang Ye said slightly irked, "I'm not joking."

Zhang Zuo was dumbfounded. "Which Lillian?"

"The most famous Lillian in the world of course." Zhang Ye said.

Everyone was speechless.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "What's the matter? Is there a problem?"

Little Wang wiped her sweat away. "W-Would we even be able to invite her?"

Wu Yi said, "This woman you're talking about is too much of a big shot!"

Zhang Zuo said with a forced smile, "She's not only too much of a big shot. She's simply too...This woman you're talking about ranks in the top twenty of the international superstars!"

Everyone thought that Director Zhang was being too bold!

But what Zhang Ye said next left them unable to rebuke him. "It's not like we're the ones who will need to spend money to invite her, right? We have the Organizing Committee for that. Let them invite her, let them spend the money, what do we have to worry about!"

Everyone was floored!

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "It's settled then. Make the call!"

Ha Qiqi had to acknowledge him. She turned around to make a call to the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games.

As expected, when the person over at the Organizing Committee heard it, they reacted in exactly the same way as them!

The person from the Organizing Committee said: "Who did you say?"

Ha Qiqi replied: "Director Zhang says he would like to invite Lillian."

The person from the Organizing Committee nearly vomited blood!

Lillian?

What the heck!

Are you trying to bankrupt us!

### Chapter 1161: 'Beijing Welcomes You' makes its debut!

Not long after.

A call from the Organizing Committee arrived.

Vice President Qi Yihai immediately said: "Teacher Zhang, pick someone else."

Zhang Ye said: "Lillian is the most suitable person."

"This person you picked is too difficult to get." Qi Yihai kept shaking his head. "We don't have the budget for that. It's really difficult to invite an international superstar like her."

Zhang Ye said: "Can't you play the emotional card?"

Qi Yihai said: "She might not buy it."

Zhang Ye blinked. "What about the sentimental card?"

Qi Yihai thought about it. "You're suggesting that we use her grandmother as a reason?"

Zhang Ye said: "I'm not suggesting that. This is the job of the Organizing Committee. I am only offering some advice, that's all. I don't care about the other things, nor do I have power to do so."

Qi Yihai couldn't come up with a reply.

Lillian was British and around the age of thirty. She was a famous singer and actress, as well as one of the top two international stars. Almost no one would not know who she was at the mention of her name. Even Zhang Ye, who was not from this world originally, had heard of her name on multiple occasions over the years, so it was obvious just how famous she was. Compared to someone like Zhang Ye who couldn't even make it out of Asia, her popularity was way, way higher than his. She was definitely a legend in the industry!

Worth mentioning was the fact that Lillian's paternal grandmother was Han Chinese. Although Lillian had the standard British look, she had a quarter Chinese blood flowing in her. This was the reason why Zhang Ye chose to invite her. Although Lillian didn't seem like she came to China often, nor had she held any concerts here before, according to reliable sources, she knew how to speak Mandarin. It was rumored that she could speak up to eight languages, so it was even rarer to have someone like her. Of course, no one really knew whether this rumor was true. It could just be the media cooking up news. The media these days said whatever they wanted. If you could say "yes," or "baka," they would immediately claim that you were proficient in many different languages.

They spoke a little more.

Finally, Qi Yihai was left with no choice. "Alright, we'll try. But I can't guarantee anything. We can only try our best to invite her!"

Zhang Ye said: "Thanks."

Qi Yihai laughed. "But I have a small favor to ask."

"What is it?" Zhang Ye asked.

Qi Yihai said, "Can you write us another song to be used for the promotion of the Olympic Games?"

Zhang Ye was taken aback. "Isn't there already one? The one that was performed together by the six celebrities?"

Qi Yihai said, "Yes, the promotional song was released some time ago, but it didn't have that great an effect. Its propagation was so-so and not many people have heard it. We studied why it was like that and believe that it was down to the content of the song, so we hope that you can write us another one. This time, we want it to be better and more effective. We've contracted close to a hundred influential celebrities in the country to perform this song together in a music video."

Zhang Ye asked: "When do you need it by?"

Qi Yihai said: "The sooner the better."

Zhang Ye nodded. "Alright, I will get it to you by the afternoon."

Qi Yihai was stunned. "But it's already afternoon."

"I know," Zhang Ye said.

Qi Yihai was very happy. "Alright, that's what we admire about Teacher Zhang the most. You're always so efficient. You've given us a great deal of help this time, so let me thank you on behalf of the Organizing Committee!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said: "I'll be waiting for your good news too then."

"Alright!" Qi Yihai said.

After hanging up, Zhang Ye got to work.

A promotional song?

Which song should he use?

It looked like there was only that one?

• • •

An hour later.

The Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games received the musical score from Zhang Ye via fax.

After the professional music team and officials of the Organizing Committee saw it, they all applauded and praised it. Almost immediately, it was decided that they would use this song!

"How awesome!"

"Yeah, does he not need any inspiration to create a piece of music?"

"He really can write any kind of song!"

Very soon, the organizing committee got started with the

production work for the promotional song's music video. It was obvious that they couldn't get close to a hundred celebrities into the recording studio to film the music video. That would be too chaotic, and also impossible to schedule. After all, they were all big name celebrities in the country and were very busy with work. Therefore, the music video was filmed in batches. Every person or group would record a short segment before it got edited together in post-production. This was a diplomatic mission, so it was specially The celebrities also handled and arranged. were accommodating and got down to work without objections. Everyone was giving their best for the Olympic promotional work!

And so, a music video that included scores of celebrities only took a day and a half to complete. All of it was done before the opening ceremony rehearsal!

On TV.

Online.

On the radio.

They were all playing a song called "Beijing Welcomes You "!

Lyrics: Zhang Ye.

Composer: Zhang Ye.

Xiaodong: "Greet another rising sun, the air a brand new, fun one."

Li Xiaoxian: "Changing air but constant interest, tea's full for everyone."

Amy: "Our doors are always open; we're waiting to embrace you."

Shu Han: "A hug and we'll be close as glue, this place you'll come to love."

Zhang Ye: "Beijing welcomes you, we've got everything ready for you."

Chen Guang: "The flowing charm is full of spirit and energy."

Fan Wenli: "Beijing welcomes you, so let's share a breath under the sun."

Zhang Xia: "And write a new beginning on this land."

There were the new generation singers.

There were the Heavenly Kings and Queens.

There were the veteran singers.

Gathering so many big names together to sing the same song was something that had never happened before. It was the Beijing Olympics that brought them together!

The people who heard it all shouted in satisfaction!

"Great song!"

"This is so good that I'm gonna die!"

"This song is such a classic!"

"Yeah, compared to that promotional song called 'Be Victorious,' this is so much better. The feeling of the song is also good as it portrays our intent to welcome guests from all over the world!"

"The lyrics and melody are by Zhang Ye!"

"Awesome!"

"I'm looking more and more forward to watching Zhang Ye's performance during the opening ceremony!"

"I wonder what song he'll sing?"

"I don't know, they're keeping it a secret!"

"Yeah, the lockdown on the news this time is really strong. What's more, we don't even know if the song will be sung by Zhang Ye alone or as a duet with someone else. In any case, I'm anticipating it!"

On this day, "Beijing Welcomes You" spread all across the country!

Whether it was the lyrics, melody, or the array of stars singing, this song had reached an unprecedented high. Riding the wave of hype surrounding the Olympics, it immediately took the number one spot across all the major music charts. It was simply unstoppable. In a short period of time, the music video had been watched 600-700 million times!

Then, almost without any warning!

A piece of news that would excite anyone was released!

An announcement was made concurrently on News Simulcast, Xinhua News, and the official website of the Olympic Games Organizing Committee: "The international superstar, Lillian, has accepted the invitation of the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games. She will be arriving in Beijing a day before the opening ceremony and will be performing the theme song with Zhang Ye during the Olympic opening ceremony!"

Screams!

**Astonishment!** 

Craze!

The people were all getting excited!

"Ahhh!"

"My God!"

"Lillian? That Lillian?"

"I'm a braindead fan of Lillian! Holy shit! Holy shit! Lillian will be coming to Beijing? She'll be performing with Zhang Ye?"

"How's that possible!"

"The Organizing Committee is so awesome!"

"Yeah, they're so great!"

"Even Lillian has been invited?"

"Lillian, my goddess!"

"Hey, hey, hey! They're really upping the stakes this time!"

No one did not know Lillian!

This news was too shocking and exciting to everyone. Lillian would be attending the Beijing Olympic opening ceremony. She was being so respectful!

Compared to the people's enthusiasm, the local show business was kind of stunned. They were all aware of how famous Lillian was but had never worked with her before. In the past, there were Chinese entertainment companies who had wanted to invite her to the Mainland to hold a concert, but those invitations did not even get a response! Li Ke, one of the country's most famous directors, even invited Lillian to guest star in one of his movies. It was only a guest role that would take at most a day of filming and paid 40 million RMB, but Lillian still rejected it.

This was an international superstar!

A person whose presence was revered by all!

And now that she was coming to China, the first person she'd be working with turned out to be Zhang Ye? This made many of Zhang Ye's foes in the industry burn with hate!

However, Zhang Ye, who was at the center of it all, remained quite calm. After all, he couldn't truly be said to be from this world. He had never heard Lillian's songs when he was young, nor watched her movies. He only caught up on those when he got here, so it was very difficult to grasp the admiration that people from the industry had gradually developed for her. That was why his feelings for her weren't that strong. But if he was going to work with Angelina Jolie from his previous world, he would probably be excited to no end. That was because he grew up watching her movies, and his admiration for her had gradually developed over a decade or two!

Thus, Zhang Ye was very calm when Qi Yihai called.

"It's settled!" Qi Yihai said.

Zhang Ye smiled and said: "Alright, thank you for your hard work, President Qi!"

Qi Yihai gave a bitter laugh. "We spent a lot of effort this time and specially flew a team over to Britain to speak to Lillian and her talent agency. The process was extremely difficult, so I won't talk too much about that. But the good thing is that we managed to invite her, although she can't take part in the opening ceremony rehearsal tomorrow due to a scheduling conflict. She can only arrive one day before the actual opening ceremony, so I hope there's enough time for you two to get things sorted out before then."

Zhang Ye said: "There'll be enough time. We're both used to performing live, so that won't be a problem for us. But of course, she'll have to learn the song first."

Qi Yihai said: "That's for sure. We've already sent the song to them. Or rather, if it weren't for this song of yours, Lillian's team would probably not have agreed to it so readily. They were also very happy with it. Since she can't make it tomorrow, it won't be necessary for you to join in the rehearsal either. We'll just head straight into the opening ceremony performance. The stage has been set up. We're just going to wait for the performance now. I'm really starting to look forward to the opening theme song performance on the day of, so don't disappoint us!"

#### Chapter 1162: Before the opening ceremony!

Ten days later.

There was only a day left until the Olympic Games began!

On the streets and alleys of Beijing, more and more foreigners could be seen walking around. They were all touring the Forbidden City, Summer Palace, and other tourist attractions. The foreign contingents had started arriving some time ago and checked into the Olympic Village. Under the constant bombardment by the media, the atmosphere surrounding the Olympics had reached its peak. There was practically no other news being reported other than the Olympics, like the latest updates on the athletes and the opening ceremony.

It was likewise in the foreign media.

The South Korean media: "Ahn Yoonhee suffers an injury in training and could miss the Beijing Olympics!"

The Japanese media: "Famous swimmer Obata chosen as the contingent's flag bearer!"

The North Korean media: "The motherland's contingent vows to surpass China and America in the gold medal tally for first place!"

The English media:

Lillian to attend the Beijing Olympic opening ceremony!"

The Canadian media: "The most beautiful woman in Britain, Lillian, will be performing the Olympic theme song!"

This was a day that belonged solely to the Olympics!

The entire world had their eyes on Beijing!

• • •

In the Olympic Village.

At the main stadium of the Olympics.

After many workers finished remodeling the performing stage, they added some final decorations and confirmed that everything was in place. On the enormous big screen, some unrelated visuals were displayed to test the camera angles and equipment. Judging from the tense atmosphere, they were in full preparation mode for the main event.

But Zhang Ye was totally at ease. He sat in the audience and took a call.

"Son, get hold of a few more tickets!"

"Didn't I already get them for you and dad?"

"It's not enough. Big Sis Zhou from the neighborhood came to me and asked if she could have one too."

"Heh, do you think I'm selling cabbages in the market? Even I can't get so many tickets for myself."

"Try to ask for a few more. Everyone would like to attend the opening ceremony. And there's your Auntie Chen and Auntie Li too. All the neighbors came to ask me, so how can I not get the tickets for them?"

"Oh, alright. I will try to ask for more."

"Oh, and get Lillian's autograph as well!"

"I haven't even met her in person yet, and I'm not sure what time her flight will arrive either."

"Just ask for it!"

"OK, I understand."

A little while later, he received a few more calls.

Liao Yiqi called.

"Teacher Zhang."

"Ai, Classmate Spinach."

"Can I ask you for a favor?"

"Don't put it that way. Just tell me what you need."

"Can you can me an autograph from Teacher Lillian?"

"Oh damn, you want one too?"

"Yeah, I've liked her for many years!"

"Sure, I'll ask for you when I get the chance."

"Thank you so much! Haha, let me buy you a meal someday. Just choose the place!"

Then Grandma Zhang Xia called, asking for the same thing.

"Grandma Zhang."

"Little Zhang, has Lillian arrived in Beijing yet?"

"I don't think she's here yet."

"Can you get me an autograph?"

"Whoa, you want one too?"

"My granddaughter likes her very much, almost to the point of being fanatical. She asks me every day, so I really have no choice but to ask on her behalf. You're the one who can get closest to Lillian, so of course I have to ask you."

"Sure. I'll get one for you."

"Thank you, hur hur."

This was not the first time he was receiving these calls. Over the past ten days, he had been taking countless calls from his friends on his cell phone or on the office line at his studio. Most of them were regarding the international superstar, Lillian. This led Zhang Ye to discover in shock that he had so many friends and their families who were Lillian's diehard fans. For example, Yao Jiancai's wife, Chen Guang's eldest niece, Amy, as well as his own three sisters. It could be seen just how charming Britain's most beautiful woman was. This made Zhang Ye look even more forward to working with her. He wanted to see just what kind of a

person this legendary international superstar was.

Executive Director Li Ke led a group of the staff past him.

Zhang Ye greeted him and asked, "Director Li, has she arrived yet?"

Li Ke looked at his watch. "She should be here soon. Her flight arrived two hours ago, so she's probably already on the way."

Zhang Ye nodded. "Alright, I'll go for a smoke then."

Li Ke said in a speechless manner, "This place doesn't allow smoking. I need to go handle some work, so I'll tell you when she's here. The duet that you two will be performing is the most important segment of the opening ceremony, so it must be perfected by today. We've readied a place for you two to rehearse. I'll be off now."

Zhang Ye waved goodbye and got up to head out of the stadium.

Outside, there were people working everywhere, as well as security personnel deployed. Together with a large number of volunteers, it wouldn't be nice if he lit a cigarette here. So he walked on. Some of the volunteers secretly came looking for Zhang Ye to get his autograph. There were also some workers who quietly came over to take pictures with him. Other than times when Zhang Ye had urgent matters to attend to, he would rarely reject such requests. Once he satisfied everyone, he put on his sunglasses and found an empty corridor.

He looked to the left, then to the right.

There was no one around. Great, this place would do!

Zhang Ye took a cigarette and a box of matches out. He struck a match and lit the cigarette before starting to smoke in satisfaction. This fellow had been constantly talking about how he wanted to quit smoking and drinking, but that was just pure talk. He had never, ever taken any action to do so. He had smuggled in the matches with much effort. The security checks when coming into

the Olympic Village and Stadium did not allow any lighters to be brought in. They were very strict with the checks, even on those who were working here. Zhang Ye already knew all this as he had been here several times, so he just stuffed the matches inside the cigarette pack. After all, the security personnel would not really check him so thoroughly since he had status. That was the only reason why he managed to smuggle it in.

Suddenly, he heard footsteps from behind!

Zhang Ye quickly flicked the cigarette away and extinguished it under his feet. This was not something to be proud of at all in the first place. If Zhang Ye was exposed to have been smoking in the Olympic Stadium even though he knew it was against the rules, it would surely be sensationalized in the news. He was just about to leave when he realized that the click-clack of the high heels was beside him.

"Hey."

A woman's voice sounded.

Was she calling out to him?

Zhang Ye turned his head as a reflex and was surprised. It was a very tall Caucasian woman whose auburn hair was very conspicuous. She didn't look very old but was not young either. She had a pair of sunglasses on that were even more oversized than Zhang Ye's, so he couldn't really make out her exact age.

A foreigner?

Which country's athlete was she?

Or could she be a foreign coach?

Zhang Ye looked at her and stammered in his broken English, "Y-Y-You are c-c-calling me?" He pointed to himself.

The ginger woman smiled and said, "Yes."

Zhang Ye blinked and said, "How...helping...you?" Even his

grammar was a mess!

The redhead was taken aback. "What?"

Zhang Ye was still throwing out what he was trying to express word by word. If a foreign athlete needed help, he couldn't just ignore it. But this fellow's English could only be described as atrocious. It was so broken that not even a Chinese citizen would be able understand him, let alone a foreigner!

While Zhang Ye was figuring out which words to use, the redheaded foreigner said something very surprising!

She smiled and said in the Beijing dialect, "I say, bro, your English isn't all that put together. I think it's better that you stick to using Mandarin. You must be a Chinese friend, right?"

Zhang Ye was dumbfounded!

The redheaded woman elegantly took out a cigarette and waved it at Zhang Ye. "It's nothing, actually. I just wanted to see if I could borrow a light since I saw you smoking. My lighter was nipped during the security checks."

Dumbfounded, Zhang Ye threw his matches to her.

The ginger woman caught it in midair. "Haha, thank you."

After she lit her cigarette, she leaned back against the wall and started smoking. Then she threw the matchbox back to him.

Zhang Ye caught it, but he was still in a state of shock. It was like he had seen a ghost. Can you imagine a Caucasian woman speaking the Beijing dialect fluently? Damn, your Pekingese is even better than mine! Nipped? You even know how to use that word?

Was this woman some kind of god?!

Zhang Ye was shocked beyond belief!

## Chapter 1163: Hello, fellow smoker!

In the corridor.

She was smoking gracefully while holding a cigarette pack between her fingers. Zhang Ye glanced at the words on it but did not know what brand it was. It was likely that this was a foreign brand for women as the cigarettes looked very slim.

Zhang Ye lit up another cigarette and said, "Did you grow up in Beijing?"

The redhead turned to look at him. "No, but my Chinese teacher is from Beijing."

"I see." Zhang Ye said in admiration, "You really learned it well."

The redheaded woman laughed. "I guess. I do have some talent for languages."

Zhang Ye gave her a thumbs up.

Now she asked, "Are you an athlete?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "No, I'm not."

"A volunteer?" she asked.

Zhang Ye shook his head. "I'm not that either. I'm just nobody to be concerned about."

She said, "Are you a local?"

Zhang Ye said, "That's right."

"I can hear it," she said with a smile.

Zhang Ye said in amusement, "If I didn't see you and just heard your voice, I would've thought that you were a local too."

She smiled.

The two of them began to chat, lulls here and there.

Fellow smokers enjoyed one of the most intimate relationships in

the world. Be it men or women, young or old, it was not a relationship that was separated by geographical boundaries. Once they came together, even without having to say a word, they would instantly know if the other person needed a cigarette or a light with just a simple gesture to which the other person would unconditionally provide. After that, they would be thick as thieves and puff as they talked about everything under the sun.

They finished smoking their cigarettes.

The Caucasian woman shook the cigarette pack in her hand. "Do you want to try mine?"

Zhang Ye did not stand on ceremony with her. "Sure, I'll have one." As he took one, he passed his cigarettes to her. "Have you tried this before? It's flue-cured tobacco."

The Caucasian woman took a cigarette from him like it was the most natural thing in the world. "I haven't. I'll give it a try. When I start work in a while, I won't have time for a cigarette break. I better have a few more while I still have the chance."

"You're right about that." Zhang Ye laughed.

The two smokers were each more hardcore smokers than the other as they lit up another cigarette.

But midway through their second cig, the fire alarm above them suddenly blared, perhaps due to the corridor being filled with too much smoke!

Ring ring ring ring ring!

It was followed by the distant shouting of employees and security guards!

```
"Huh?"
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;What's the matter?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Where's the fire?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What's happening?"

"It's coming from Zone 2!"

Zhang Ye and the redheaded woman were caught off guard. They had not expected that the fire alarm would be so sensitive. When they heard distant footfalls sprinting over, the two of them instantly gave each other a look of understanding before turning and diving into a janitorial closet!

Zhang Ye slammed the door shut!

The redhead stubbed out her cigarette.

They could hear footsteps outside the closet!

The redhead put her finger to her lips. "Shh."

Zhang Ye understood and nodded. He also did not wish to get caught red-handed as this was not something to be proud of.

They could hear sullen voices outside the door!

"Who was it?"

"Who was smoking in here?"

"Don't they know that smoking is not allowed in the stadium? How did they bring a lighter in? What was security doing! What if something serious happens as a result of their carelessness?"

"Find the person! They definitely wouldn't have gotten too far!"

"Aren't they trying to make trouble like this!"

Hearing the scolding outside, Zhang Ye was too embarrassed to make a sound.

When the footfalls trailed off, the redheaded woman asked, "Are they gone?"

Zhang Ye pressed his ear against the door and listened. "They're gone."

The redheaded woman smiled and said, "We nearly got caught by them."

Zhang Ye said, "The alarm went off with just a few cigarettes? How can this piece of crap be so alert? When did the alarms in this country become so sensitive?"

"Next time, let's find a place with a window. This wouldn't have happened if the smoke dispersed outside." The redhead smiled at him. "I've got to run. Do you wanna meet up for a smoke in a bit?"

Zhang Ye said, "Yeah, but why don't I give you the matches?"

The redhead said, "How could I possibly? Why don't we do it this way? Let's arrange to meet again at this place in two hours? I reckon I'll be busy until night. I sure won't be able to bear it if I don't smoke a few."

Zhang Ye nodded. "Alright."

After the fellow smokers set a time to meet, they departed and went their own ways.

Zhang Ye pretended like nothing had happened as he strolled back to the stage. When he got back, someone came looking for him anxiously!

It was Assistant Director Zhou from the opening ceremony program team. "Professor Zhang, where did you go?"

Zhang Ye blinked and said, "I went to the bathroom just now."

Assistant Director Zhou hurriedly said, "Let's go, they've already arrived!"

"Who's arrived?" Zhang Ye had totally forgotten.

"Teacher Lillian's team!" Assistant Director Zhou pulled Zhang Ye along as they quickly walked toward the other end. "Her team arrived a long time ago, and everyone is waiting for you!"

Zhang Ye said evenly, "I've also waited for them for a long time, so why can't they wait awhile for me? Director Zhou, we don't need to be in such a rush."

Assistant Director Zhou didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"You're really great. I think you might be the only person in the world who's not taking things with Teacher Lillian seriously!" He knew what Zhang Ye was like in that he was way too good at offending people, so he reminded him out of worry, "I'm telling you, Professor Zhang. This collaboration was only made possible because the various parties have all spent a great deal of effort on making it happen. It was not easy to get Teacher Lillian to come to Beijing. We don't care if you offend other people, but please don't ever, ever offend our foreign guest!"

Zhang Ye said in a speechless manner, "Listen to what you're saying. Am I that kind of a person?"

Assistant Director Zhou thought to himself who else would be that kind of person if you were not!

In an office.

When they opened the door, the room was full of people.

The Chinese side consisted of Executive Director Li Ke and the officials of the Organizing Committee. Meanwhile, the other side were all Caucasians and probably from Lillian's team. However, Lillian herself was nowhere to be seen.

Zhang Ye came in. "Director Li."

Director Li grumbled, "Did you go and smoke just now?"

An Organizing Committee official said, "Professor Zhang, were you the one who caused the alarm to go off earlier?"

Zhang Ye said in surprise, "Ah? What alarm? I don't know. I was just in the bathroom and didn't hear any alarms. What happened?"

The person from the Organizing Committee said skeptically, "It wasn't you?"

Zhang Ye played dumb and said, "What about me?"

"Oh, it's nothing then." The person from the Organizing Committee dismissed him with a wave.

Li Ke said, "Let me introduce you. This is Teacher Lillian's team." He was also meeting them for the first time, so he could only give a brief introduction.

At this moment, the door opened again!

A redheaded woman walked in.

Immediately, a Caucasian woman from their side asked her something in English, probably about why she had been gone for so long.

The redhead smiled and said in English, "It wasn't easy finding the bathroom."

Then, the redheaded woman saw Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye saw her as well.

When the two of them spotted each other, they were stunned!

A person from the Organizing Committee smiled and pointed at Zhang Ye, speaking in English, "This is Teacher Zhang Ye, who will be performing with Teacher Lillian." Then he introduced her to Zhang Ye as well. "This is Teacher Lillian. Would you like to get to know each other a little?"

Zhang Ye took off his sunglasses with a blank expression.

The redhead also took off her sunglasses!

A jaw-dropping, stunning face that made everyone stare in astonishment was revealed. She had auburn hair, a tall figure, and big eyes with a color of European origins. Her skin was also frighteningly fair, although it was not the kind of delicate fair skin that Asians had, but the kind that was unique to Caucasians. Most worth mentioning was the view of her chest. There was once a study that compiled the statistics of countries with the biggest women's breasts sizes around the world. Britain topped the list and was indeed worthy of its reputation, as could be seen here!

This was the most beautiful woman in Britain?

This was one of the top international superstars in the entertainment industry?

It was her?

It actually turned out to be her!

Lillian stretched her hand out with a smile while she continued to look at him.

Zhang Ye could not help but laugh as he stuck out his hand and shook her hand.

A thought cropped up in their minds.

Hello, smoking buddy.

## Chapter 1164: Because I'm his mother!

The next day.

On the day of the Olympic opening ceremony.

There was wave after wave of excitement online!

"Cheering y'all athletes on!"

"Go for first place in the gold medal tally!"

"Eagerly awaiting the opening ceremony!"

"Lillian, my goddess!"

"This is going to be Lillian's debut performance in China!"

"There are only two more hours to go! I can't wait!"

"Lillian! I love her so much!"

"Hey, didn't we forget about Teacher Zhang?"

"Why should we care about Teacher Zhang! Even if you don't follow that guy, he'll still stir up something big every now and then, and you can see him on the news every other day. But it's different for Lillian. This is her first time coming to China to perform. It's going to be a historic moment!"

"Pfft, that's true."

"I'm still looking forward to hearing Zhang Ye's new song."

"They kept it under wraps really well. No one knows what kind of song they'll be singing."

"Lillian seems to have just arrived in Beijing yesterday. I wonder if they can pair well together? I'm very worried about them."

"I'm also very worried. But what I'm worried about is that bad temper of Zhang Ye's. Hopefully, he won't end up fighting with Lillian's team. We all know that when Zhang Ye flies into a rage, he doesn't give a damn about anyone!" "Dammit, previous poster, don't jinx it!"

"Now that you brought it up, I am starting to get a little worried!"

• • •

At the venue of the Olympics.

Little did they know, Zhang Ye and Lillian were getting along splendidly.

The two of them were in a lounge with a window that had access to the open air. As this place was in a very remote area of the Olympic venue and everyone was busy with the ongoing events at the main arena, hardly anyone came over here. The lounge's window was open at the moment, and smoke was constantly dispersing out from inside.

Zhang Ye had a cigarette in his mouth as he pointed at the music score and said, "Let's do it according to how we did it in yesterday's rehearsal."

Lillian held a cigarette between her fingers and said, "Alright, maybe I'll go an octave higher over here."

"You're still going higher?" Zhang Ye said, "I guess that's fine, but I'm not going an octave higher. My next register up doesn't sound good, although I can still reach it if I want to."

Lillian nodded and said, "Then it's settled. After our smoke, let's run through it once more."

Zhang Ye said, "OK."

On the day of the opening ceremony, in all the years of the Olympics, probably the only ones who dared to smuggle in matches and secretly smoke at the stadium were Zhang Ye and Lillian!

• •

In the Olympic Village.

As there was still plenty of time left for the athletes to proceed to the stadium where the opening ceremony was to be held, the athletes from the various countries stayed in their respective apartments to chat, train, or rest.

At the Chinese table tennis team apartment.

"They're definitely ruining the theme song by letting Zhang Ye sing it."

"His singing is so terrible to listen to!"

"I wonder why they let him sing a duet with Lillian!"

"Just watch! If he ruins the song, it'll reflect so poorly on our Chinese people!"

At the Chinese gymnastics team apartment.

"Why is everyone on the Internet talking about the theme song that Zhang Ye and Lillian will be singing?"

"Because Lillian is an international superstar!"

"Actually, Zhang Ye isn't bad either."

"What do you mean he's not bad? He's totally a hooligan!"

Many of the athletes and coaches who were involved in the scolding battle with Zhang Ye were grumbling and complaining. The skit on Beijing Television's Spring Festival Gala, "Playing it Up," had caused many of those in the Chinese sports world to become Zhang Ye's "enemies for life." They would not be satisfied if they did not criticize him some!

• • •

The Central TV live coverage had already begun!

There were a total of three people in the live coverage studio and one of them was Yu Yingyi. If Yu Yingyi's popularity had not soared because of the Go war between humans and machines some days ago, she would not have had the opportunity to take part in this Olympic live coverage event. At most, she would have been assigned to conduct interviews on the ground rather than being placed within the live coverage studio as one of the hosts.

The famous commentator, Zhao Zhi, said, "We can see that every country's leader has entered the venue."

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "According to the information we received, the Beijing Olympics has the highest participation of world leaders in all the years that the Olympics have been held. It is also going to have the highest number of countries around the world who are broadcasting the Olympics on television and giving the most coverage of events in the history of the games. That is the beauty of sports and the charm of the Olympics!"

It was getting closer and closer to the opening ceremony!

The stadium was filled with several tens of thousands of people, and nearly all seats were occupied. This was astonishing and pumped everyone up! It was the first time that China was hosting the Olympics. As a first time host, they warmly welcomed every country's delegation to the country. With so much attention from the whole world focused on them for the first time, this was not something that they had experienced before. The Chinese were all hoping that this Olympics would go down in the annals of history!

Zhao Zhi said, "Today is a historic moment!"

Another commentator said, "Yeah, I'm already getting excited."

Yu Yingyi said, "Let's switch to a view of the grounds, where we will be interviewing the live audience."

They switched over to the cameras on the ground.

A Central TV reporter appeared on camera.

He smiled and said, "Thank you to our hosts in the studio. I'm currently at the National Stadium, which is the main venue of the Olympics. Everyone can see that the seats are full. Over here, the majority of the audience are locals. But we also have some foreign

friends who specially came from overseas to support their countries' athletes. I will now interview some of them to understand what their expectations for this opening ceremony are." He turned around and walked into the audience.

The cameraman followed.

The live broadcast was being televised across the country.

The Central TV reporter pointed his microphone at a foreign woman and said, "Hello."

She was part of a group that consisted of other foreigners. When they saw the camera, they immediately waved and screamed madly at it.

The reporter asked in English, "What do you look forward to most during the opening ceremony?"

That foreign woman immediately yelled, "Lillian! Lillian, of course! She's my idol for life! I love her!"

The Central TV reporter found a Chinese young adult next. "Hello."

The young adult faced the camera nervously. "Hello."

The Central TV reporter asked, "The opening ceremony is about to begin. What do you wish to see most?"

The young adult answered without any hesitation, "I only wish to see Lillian!"

The reporter asked, "Why?"

The young adult gave a shy smile and said, "Because she is my goddess! I've listened to all of her songs and watched all the movies she acted in!"

The reporter laughed and said, "It looks like you are a diehard fan of hers. Alright, thank you."

After that, the Central TV reporter interviewed a few more

people.

"Lillian!"

"Lillian, of course!"

"I'm only here to see Lillian!"

As expected, everyone talked only about Lillian!

• • •

The people watching the live broadcast on TV were amused.

"I only want to see Lillian, no one else!"

"Did you expect that I would want to see Zhang Ye? We're already bored of him! Haha!"

"How can Teacher Zhang compare to our Lillian!"

"You can ask a hundred people and they'd all tell you that they're here to see Lillian as well."

• • •

At the stadium.

The Central TV reporter smiled into the camera and said, "It looks like this most beautiful woman from Britain is far too popular. I'll keep asking around to see if there's anyone with a different answer."

He found an auntie to interview.

The auntie was on her cell phone, her head down.

The Central TV reporter walked up to her and said, "Hello, auntie."

She was taken aback. "Hmm?"

The reporter asked, "Who do you most look forward to seeing during the opening ceremony?"

The auntie answered, "Zhang Ye."

That Central TV reporter was jarred by her answer. "Great, we finally have someone saying something different. So why are you looking forward to seeing Zhang Ye? Is it because you're looking forward to hearing his new song?"

The auntie said, "Nope."

The reporter probed, "Then is it because his duet partner is Lillian?"

The auntie said, "Nope."

The reporter asked dumbfounded, "Then why are you looking forward to seeing him?"

The auntie looked at him as though he were a fool of some sort. "Because I'm his mother!"

The reporter stumbled and nearly fainted!

The audience watching the live coverage laughed hysterically!

"Aiyo, I can't take this anymore!"

"Hahahahahaha!"

"How funny is that!"

"Can it be any funnier than this! Pfft!"

"This freaking answer is going to be such a classic line!"

"I nearly pissed myself laughing!"

"Hahahaha! I'm in stitches!"

In the live coverage studio.

Zhao Zhi said in a stunned manner, "Is she really Professor Zhang's mother?"

Yu Yingyi stopped holding back her laughter. "Yes, I saw Auntie when I was attending university. After this many years, she still looks as young as ever."

When the audience heard that, they laughed even harder!

Just how coincidental could it get!

In a stadium with several tens of thousands of people, the reporter had actually interviewed Zhang Ye's mother and even asked such a silly question!

## Chapter 1165: An Olympic theme song that astounds the world!

At Zhang Ye's maternal grandma's house.

His relatives nearly collapsed from laughter.

His first uncle said, "Look!"

His second aunt said, "Big Sis is on TV!"

His third uncle said, "It's Central TV's live coverage of the opening ceremony!"

The interview segment was recorded and went viral on social media. Many of the common folk were amused every time they watched the gif due to the reply, "Because I'm his mother." This caused Zhang Ye's mother to become a meme just an hour before the Olympic opening ceremony was to commence. She enraptured everyone and nearly dampened the serious atmosphere surrounding the Olympics!

They were indeed mother and son!

Each was funnier than the other!

The netizens were laughing so much they couldn't close their mouths. They were loving this!

• • •

But this minor episode was not enough to distract from the main event.

An hour later, the Olympic opening ceremony finally began!

The entire world was watching it unfold on the live broadcast!

The entire audience stood up!

Everyone had their hands in the air!

"Five!"

```
"Four!"
"Three!"
"Two!"
"One!"
```

As the entire audience counted down with the sunset to welcome the arrival of the night sky, it was lit up by countless fireworks launched into the sky! This was not the Beijing Olympics that Zhang Ye was so familiar with back in his previous world and was an entirely new opening ceremony over here. There were no fireworks that formed the footsteps "walking" in from a distance, but a new choreography that consisted of golden stars exploding open in the night sky before extinguishing and then reigniting!

The golden stars rose higher and higher!

Every ignited firework exploded with a circumference larger than the one before it!

The 3D effect was incredible and the visuals were stunning. Just this fireworks show at the start of the opening ceremony amazed the entire world's audience!

The audience at the stadium had an even more intense experience. Just looking up into the sky, they could see dazzling, huge, golden stars exploding one after another over their heads!

Now the music played!

The Olympic theme song's melody floated through the stadium!

A light flickered to life in the middle of the stadium that had just turned dark. The spectators were stunned to discover that there was a large model of the globe that wasn't there before. There were a myriad of colors on it, depicting the oceans, continents, and countries of the world. It looked exceptionally beautiful under the lighting and was even spinning slowly without pause. There were two shadowy figures standing on a stage atop the globe. When the

light worked its way over to them, their faces were illuminated for everyone at the stadium, as well as all over the world, to see.

Zhang Ye was standing on the left!

Lillian was on the right!

Piercing screams echoed throughout the stadium!

In the audience, Zhang Ye's parents were staring fixedly at the stage!

Zhang Ye's three sisters jumped up from their seats to wave and cheer!

The hosts on Central TV's live broadcast stopped talking!

All over the world, people who were watching TV also went silent!

At center stage!

Zhang Ye and Lillian stood atop the globe and looked at each other and smiled.

Zhang Ye's hand was trembling a little, not because he was nervous, but because he was excited. He had never before been on such a big stage with so many people listening to him sing. All he could see around him were lights, cameras, and tens of thousands of shadowy figures. He could not see their faces, but he knew that the entire world was watching him at this moment. He also knew that many of them were waiting to see him make a fool of himself. However, the more it was this way, the better his state of mind became and the more fighting spirit he had.

He lightly raised his microphone and shook everyone with his Mandarin singing!

"You and me, from one world.

"We are family.

"Travel, dream, a thousand miles.

"Meeting in Beijing."

He was singing in the tenor register!

His range went very high!

The live audience was startled!

The home viewers were also dumbfounded!

They had never heard Zhang Ye sing like this before, they really had not!

Even Li Ke and his program team who were in the wings were stunned by the singing. Even during the rehearsals, they did not hear Zhang Ye sing it so well!

Zhang Ye smiled as he raised his other hand in a welcoming gesture.

"Come together.

"Put your hand in mine.

"You and me, from one world.

"We are family."

The stadium exploded!

Shouts!

Applause!

Screams!

All kinds of sounds were mixed together!

Then, Lillian raised her microphone. When she sang in English, she pushed the atmosphere to its peak again. It gave countless people watching TV goosebumps!

"You and me, from one world.

"We are family.

"Travel, dream, a thousand miles.

"Meeting in Beijing.

"Come together.

"Put your hand in mine.

"You and me, from one world.

"We are family."

The two of them looked at each other.

Then Lillian sang again.

Simultaneously, Zhang Ye raised his microphone.

"You and me, from one world.

"We are family."

They harmonized!

Lillian had switched to singing in Mandarin!

The foreign audience was stunned!

The stadium audience went crazy!

The two of them smiled as they sang.

"Travel, dream, a thousand miles.

"Meeting in Beijing."

Lillian sang in English, "Come together."

Zhang Ye sang in Mandarin, "Put your hand in mine."

They sang together in English.

"You and me.

"From one world.

"We are family!"

The atmosphere hit a fever pitch!

"Ahhh!"

```
"This is so awesome!"
 "Lillian sang in Mandarin!"
 "Zhang Ye actually sang in English!"
 "It's so good I'm crying!"
 "They sang so well!"
 With this song, they had astounded the entire world!
 The British netizens.
 "How moving!"
 "That Chinese singer is really good!"
 "Was the song written by him?"
 "What's his name?"
 The Japanese netizens.
 "The lyrics were really well written!"
 "It's no wonder Lillian would accept the invitation to take part in
the opening ceremony of the Beijing Olympics!"
 "This song is absolutely world-class!"
 "Zhang Ye? Isn't that the Go player?"
 The Thai netizens.
 "How nice!"
 "I never expected there to be such a nice opening theme song!"
 "It's really quite nice!"
 On Central TV's live broadcast.
```

The famous commentator, Zhao Zihao, said, "How wonderful. Teacher Zhang Ye and Teacher Lillian's duet has officially commenced the start of the Beijing Olympics. This is the first time on the international Olympic stage that China has been heard. This is the Beijing Olympics. We have arrived!"

Yu Yingyi also exclaimed, "This is so amazing!"

• • •

There were only cheers from the Chinese netizens!

Many of the overseas audiences and media were also full of praise!

The song?

The performance?

Their singing skill?

The lyrics?

It was all impeccable!

With this, the athletes and coaches from the sports world who had a feud with Zhang Ye and were grumbling about him singing the Olympic theme song no longer uttered a word! It was at this moment that many people realized why the Organizing Committee had chosen Zhang Ye for the performance. They finally understood why the organizing committee had chosen to use Zhang Ye's song, "You and Me," despite the opposition of those in the sports world!

That was because the opening theme song could only be this!

No other song could top this!

Both Zhang Ye and Lillian had performed the opening theme song brilliantly!

# Chapter 1166: Soaring in the Asian popularity rankings!

The opening theme song ended!

The applause in the stadium was deafening!

As there were still many performances lined up behind them for the opening ceremony, Zhang Ye and Lillian hurried off the stage. When they reached backstage, staff from the Organizing Committee and program team were already waiting there for them.

Bba bba bba!

Someone led the applause for them!

"You sang wonderfully!"

"Nothing else comes close to this song!"

"It sounded much better than during rehearsal!"

"Teacher Zhang, you're great!"

"Teacher Lillian, thanks for coming here from so far!"

"On behalf of the Organizing Committee, I thank you for being here!"

"You've both contributed a near perfect opening theme song for the Beijing Olympics!"

"Professor Zhang, Teacher Lillian, you did a great job!"

Actually, most of the Organizing Committee's staff were here for Lillian. They had already received news that she would be flying away from Beijing tomorrow. As an international superstar, Lillian's schedule was packed to the brim, and she was already practically booked well into the next year. This was why they were very grateful to her for pushing back her work to specially fly to Beijing to sing in the Olympics.

Lillian and the supervisor shook hands. "It's my pleasure."

The supervisor from the Organizing Committee said, "I hope we can work together again in the future."

Lillian smiled and said, "Sure."

As there were still many events lined up and work left to be done, the staff members departed very quickly. The opening theme song, "You and Me," was the most important segment and had kicked off the opening ceremony to a good start. Many of the Organizing Committee's people heaved a sigh of relief knowing that the work left was just going to get easier from here. They knew that the Beijing Olympic opening ceremony would surely finish without a hiccup. They should be able to hold a satisfactory performance for the entire world to see!

They could hear the music coming on in the stadium from backstage.

There were still going to be performances by troupes, an all-star combined singing segment, speeches to be given, the Parade of Nations, and so on and so forth.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Shall we go to the front to watch the ceremony?"

Lillian shrugged. "I'll be leaving on a flight tomorrow. This is my first time visiting China, so I would like to go visit some places."

Zhang Ye was taken aback. "Whoa, you're leaving this soon?"

She said, "Yeah, there's still a lot of work waiting for me."

Zhang Ye said, "But I haven't even managed to play host to you."

Lillian said, "Why don't you recommend a few places that look pretty at night?"

"What's the point of recommending?" Zhang Ye said, "I'll bring you around instead! It's not like you know anyone here."

Lillian laughed. "Sure, then I'll follow you around?"

Zhang Ye snapped his fingers and said, "Leave it to me. I'm really familiar with the place."

Lillian said with some anticipation in her voice, "Alright. Let me get changed first."

"I'll get changed as well, so I'll see you in a bit. I'm going to take you all over the 'Four-Nine City' for your enjoyment." Zhang Ye didn't intend on going around in this stage costume of his either.

An hour later.

The opening ceremony was still ongoing, and there were still fireworks being launched.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye and Lillian had already gone to Gulou, Wangfujing and Tiananmen Square during this time.

Zhang Ye had changed into a casual outfit of a T-shirt and shorts. In the dark of the night and with his sunglasses on, there was almost no one who could recognize him. Lillian had also changed into her casual wear. She was in a long, white dress and wearing black, eight-centimeter stilettos. But even though it was just an ordinary long dress, it still looked absolutely stunning on her. With her figure that was even better than a model's, and matched with her flaming auburn hair and Caucasian appearance, everyone would definitely do a double-take when they saw her.

```
"What a beautiful foreigner!"
```

There really were some people who managed to recognize them!

<sup>&</sup>quot;Damn, it's a goddess!"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Ah, is that Lillian?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What? Lillian?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Heavens! What is she doing here?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Is that Zhang Ye beside her?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Teacher Zhang! My prince!"

Five bodyguards and staffers on Lillian's team immediately came over to stop anyone from getting too close. Zhang Ye and Lillian had no choice but to hurry elsewhere. With such a famous international superstar beside him, there would be no way to move around after being spotted.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "You're too famous in this country."

Lillian gave him a look and said, "I think you're the one who's more famous."

"Compared to you, what am I?" Zhang Ye shrugged.

Lillian chuckled. "Is that so? Well, at the least, I've heard of you overseas."

At this, Zhang Ye was stunned. "Hah? You've heard of me?"

Lillian lit a cigarette and started smoking in the car. She laughed and said, "Yes."

Curious, Zhang Ye asked, "Where'd you hear about me?"

Lillian replied, "My grandmother mentioned you once. She's from Beijing, and I learned my Mandarin from her. She has been paying attention to you all this time."

Zhang Ye was flattered. "Thank your grandma for me."

"Sure, I'll pass the message along when I get back." Lillian smiled.
"If you ever come to Britain, remember to phone me. I'll definitely take care of you. You're the first friend I made in China."

Zhang Ye responded in kind, "OK. If you come to China again, I'll arrange everything for you. It was a little too rushed this time, so I couldn't really bring you anywhere fun."

Lillian said, "You must."

"That's right, please help me sign a few autographs."

"Huh?"

"I've been asked to request for some."

"So you're doing all this with a motive?"

"Of course. I can't just take you around without getting something in return, can I?"

"Hahaha, OK."

It was getting very late.

After getting the autographs and exchanging their numbers, the two fellow smokers cemented their friendship and parted ways. Neither of them knew when they would meet again.

It could be soon?

Or it could be a long time from now.

But they would definitely meet again. Zhang Ye was very confident of that. That was because he knew that he would definitely get to her level someday. He would surely step out from Asia and onto the international stage to stand at the top of the entertainment industry—this was what his goal and beliefs had always been.

• • •

On the same night.

The opening ceremony ended.

The news gradually reported on it.

"A Perfect Opening Ceremony!"

"An opening theme song that earned the praise of the world!"

"Lillian and Zhang Ye dazzle and appear hand in hand!"

"Host's slip of tongue while commentating!"

"The different styles of each nation's delegation!"

"Lillian and Zhang Ye spotted smoking at Gulou!"

"Eyewitnesses say that Zhang Ye and Britain's most beautiful woman were seen at Wangfujing!"

"The start of a friendship between Lillian and Zhang Ye?"

The netizens were commenting on things as always.

"Lillian's a smoker too?"

"You didn't know? Lillian has always been a smoker."

"The photos are proof. Pfft, these two standing by the roadside and smoking make for the perfect picture!"

"So Teacher Zhang brought Britain's most beautiful woman out sightseeing? I'm so jealous!"

"I guess Zhang Ye's popularity is going to grow again this time?"

"It sure will. He has sung for the entire world!"

"It looks like Zhang Ye has reaped the greatest benefit this time at the opening ceremony! He's really too lucky. If it weren't for the Olympic opening ceremony requiring a song change with only a few days to go, the theme song would never have become Zhang Ye's to sing. Then, all the more he wouldn't have had the chance to team up with Lillian for it!"

Midnight passed.

The Chinese Celebrity Rankings Index was updated.

The majority of the rankings did not change much. Yu Yingyi, who was one of the hosts for the opening ceremony, moved up several places in the rankings, while a few celebrities who were part of the all-star singing segment experienced a big boost to their popularity scores. Other than them, Zhang Ye was the one most worth mentioning. He was still in first place on the A-list rankings, but his surge in the popularity score had left the person in second place far in his wake. He was getting closer and closer to becoming a Heavenly King of the S-list rankings!

However, Zhang Ye's greatest popularity change was on the Asian Celebrity Rankings Index!

The moment the Asian Celebrity Rankings Index was updated, a

lot of people were completely dumbfounded!

Zhang Ye, who had only been in the middle of the Asian C-list rankings, had gone on to be a forerunner on it within one night. He was not far from the Asian B-list rankings! What did this mean? It meant that with just one song at the Olympic opening ceremony, in just those four minutes required for the song to be performed, Zhang Ye's popularity score in the Asian region greatly soared!

Beijing is also known as the Four-Nine City. The imperial city had four gates: Tiananmen, Dianmen, Xianmen and Donganmen. Meanwhile, the inner city of Beijing had nine gates. They were Zhengyangmen, Chongwenmen, Xuanwumen, Chaoyangmen, Fuchengmen, Dongzhimen, Xizhimen, Andingmen and Deshengmen.

## Chapter 1167: The crowd goes ballistic!

The next day.

It was the first day of the Olympic Games.

The staff of Zhang Ye's Studio were in a celebratory mood the moment they arrived at work. The studio was established with the core mission and aim of pushing Zhang Ye to a further and higher place in the industry. Everything was centered around Zhang Ye's popularity and image, which was why when Zhang Ye had been selected to sing the Olympic opening theme song after the studio had just been operating for a few days, and with his performance with Lillian being very successful, it helped him leave a good impression on the world's audience and get all around praise from many people. With that, his popularity in China, as well as Asia, soared. This made the studio staff extremely excited and full of hope for the future.

The business operations were also starting to get busy.

The phone lines in the studio were ringing nonstop. Some of the calls were from television stations or reporters seeking interviews, and some were invitations to collaborate on all kinds of projects.

A little after 9 in the morning.

Zhang Ye arrived at work.

Ha Qiqi and the others immediately gave him a status report. The tabulated data and information were given to Zhang Ye with very detailed statistics. This was the advantage of having a team. "Director Zhang, your Weibo followers increased by a million overnight. 'You and Me' was really successful. The live performance music video has already reached number one on the Top Chinese Music Chart, and the second placed song, 'Beijing Welcomes You,' is also your song!"

Little Wang exclaimed, "Mighty, Mighty Director Zhang!"

Wu Yi laughed and said, "Your ranking also went up in the Asian popularity charts!"

Zhang Zuo said, "Yes, a lot of the foreign media has mentioned Director Zhang's name in their reports as well. This is quite a historic breakthrough for us, even though it's unlikely that the foreigners will become your fan with just one song. But at least it's good that you've shown yourself on the world stage for a start."

Zhang Ye had a look at the statistics and said with a laugh, "Great work, everyone."

Ha Qiqi smiled and said, "Your reputation now is great. All the news reports about you at the moment are fairly positive, so I suggest that we build up your reputation during this period. We have to strike while the iron is hot in order to turn around that past negative image of yours. That will help the media and public change their impression of you."

Zhang Ye blinked. "Why do that?"

Zhang Zuo replied, "We analyzed earlier during a meeting that your next target would definitely be to reach the S-list rankings. Only by getting into the highest rankings domestically and becoming a Heavenly King can you continue progressing further in the Asian and international scene. Therefore, our target for you is to first get to the top within China. According to past information, all of those who manage to get into the S-list and become Heavenly Kings and Queens have one thing in common. That is, their reputation and public image are all fantastic without an exception! For example, Zhang Yuanqi and the other Heavenly Kings and Queens. It applies to all of them. That was why we concluded that the prerequisite to reaching the S-list rankings was that, and exactly what you're lacking in and also where you're unable to compare to against the Heavenly Kings and Queens. We can work hard toward that target from now on, although it's unlikely that you'll reach that level anytime soon. But at least we can see whether you can go further with a better reputation and image."

Having a team was just different.

Zhang Ye nodded in agreement. "OK, that makes a lot of sense."

Ha Qiqi smiled and said, "Then let's head in this direction with our PR campaigns? If there are any charity or public service events to attend, you'll have to accommodate them for us."

"Sure, just decide as you will." Zhang Ye did not have any objections.

After confirming his direction for the short term, everyone started getting to work.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye made his rounds in the office before subsequently looking at his watch and leaving to drive off.

His image? Alright then, he would have to watch his public image a little more carefully during this period of time then!

. . .

On the live broadcast of the Olympics.

There was global coverage worldwide.

The first day of events had already begun.

The Chinese netizens were getting extremely excited. Everyone was looking forward to Team China's performance at the Beijing Olympics.

During every previous Olympics, Central TV Sports Channel's viewership rating would outdo all the other programs by a large margin. During this period of time, everyone would only pay attention and have eyes for the Olympic Games. Further, it was even held in Beijing this year in their own backyard. As the hosts, everyone's enthusiasm was even greater than it had ever been. There were people who were camping at their televisions, and some who took time off from work to attend the events!

On Weibo.

"Looking forward to the first gold medal!"

"Who will get the first gold?"

"Come on, athletes!"

"There are so many events with a gold medal up for grabs today!"

"Haha, the fencing event has already started!"

"The qualification round for shooting has started as well!"

"I predict that we'll get at least two gold medals on the first day!"

"There's a chance of getting three gold medals too. There are a lot of events that we're good at on this first day!"

The media was also busy doing a gold medal analysis for China!

Shooting?

Fencing?

Or would it be some of the other events?

A lot of those in the media had prepared their reports beforehand. All they were waiting for was for Team China to score their first gold medal on this first day of the events before publishing their news reports!

• • •

At the live coverage studio of the Olympics.

The shooting event was taking place.

Commentator Zhao Zhi said, "Dear viewers and friends, we're about to begin with the Women's 10-meter Air Rifle event. China's athletes, Qi Xue and Li Chen, placed first and third respectively in the earlier qualification round to qualify for the finals. In the next round of this competition, the first Beijing Olympic gold medalist will be crowned. Can the Qi-Li duo take the first Olympic gold for Team China? Let's wait and see!"

A former Olympic champion, Zhang Chuxia, was also present in

the live coverage studio.

Zhao Zhi said, "The competition is starting!"

Zhang Chuxia shouted, "It's the first shot, come on!"

"Good one! Qi Xue has shot a <u>10.2</u>! Oh, Li Chen has made a mistake on her first shot. She has only scored 9.2 points for her effort. But that's fine, there's still a chance!"

The second shot.

The fifth shot.

The eighth shot.

After several more shots, the results were wilder than anyone's expectations!

Li Chen was performing very badly today and was no longer in the running for a medal. Meanwhile, Qi Xue had fallen to third place after committing a very serious mistake on one of her shots. She was now 2.1 points away from the first place!

Zhao Zhi said, "Things aren't looking too good!"

Zhang Chuxia said, "Let's see how the last few shots go. The team has been too nervous!"

"You can do it, Qi Xue! All the way!"

Whoosh!

After the shot was taken, everyone gasped loudly!

It was over!

The gold medal was no longer possible!

In the end, Qi Xue could only manage a bronze!

Zhao Zhi said, "What a pity!"

Zhang Chuxia sighed, "Hai, the pressure was too stressful."

Watching TV, the home viewers were also crying out in pity!

...

In the next few hours.

The mood of the viewers and China's delegation could only be described as being down in the dumps!

They lost the shooting gold medal!

They lost the fencing gold medal!

They also lost the swimming gold medal!

"First Gold Still Not Here!"

"What is wrong with the Chinese team?"

"Only Hope of First Day Gold Rests on Weightlifting!"

"Go for it!"

"Come on, this is our backyard we're talking about!"

"Don't be too stressed, just do your best!"

"Our weightlifting team should be the favorites for gold, right?"

"Yes, this event should not have any surprises!"

"Come on, get the first gold already! Let's give everyone a boost to their spirits!"

According to the preliminary statistics, Central TV Sports Channel's Olympics coverage had already reached an astonishing 43% viewership! That was to say, for every 100 televisions in the country, close to half were tuned in to the live broadcast of the Olympics. The viewership ratings of the Olympics coverage in other countries around the world were very good as well and were maintained at a very high level everywhere. If they were to translate the ratings to individual viewership numbers, this would probably be the highest rated Olympics meet in history!

And because of that, all the more the Chinese viewers were looking for that gold medal to boost their morale!

There was only weightlifting left!

They had to win gold!

• • •

At night.

On the live broadcast.

A commentator said, "We're going to bring you the live coverage of the Men's 62 kg weightlifting event next. Li Jiaxi, the defending world champion who is representing China, will be taking on the other athletes very soon. In this event, the Chinese athlete has the absolute strength to win. But he still has to be very wary of the North Korean athlete, who is expected to be a strong rival!"

The competition venue was packed to bursting.

There were a lot of Chinese flags in the stands and wave after wave of cheers could be heard from the crowd!

Zhang Ye was wearing his sunglasses as he arrived late for the event. He had quietly sneaked in through the staff entrance.

His third sister waved. "Brother!"

His second sister exclaimed, "Aiyah, why have you only just arrived?"

Zhang Ye laughed. "I was blocked at the entrance by reporters. Has it started already?"

"Soon," his eldest young sister said with a sunken expression. "This is the last chance to get a gold medal today. I hope nothing goes wrong!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Don't worry, he's got this."

His first uncle and aunt said, "Little Ye, get seated quickly."

"Alright." Zhang Ye sat down.

He had actually been at the Olympic venue the entire day. He first brought his parents to watch shooting before taking

Chenchen to catch fencing afterwards. In the end, there were no gold medals won in those events. Zhang Ye was also getting very anxious. Although the country's obsession with getting gold was somewhat extreme, this was still a competition after all, so who wouldn't wish to win a gold medal here?

Zhang Ye shouted, "Come on!"

The people around him also started shouting.

"You can do it!"

"Go Li Jiaxi!"

"Get our first gold medal!"

"We're depending on you!"

The live broadcast cameras suddenly turned to face Zhang Ye.

In the live coverage studio, both of the commentators were laughing.

"Hur hur, they've given Zhang Ye a profile shot. We can see that Teacher Zhang has also brought his family to watch the events. Oh, there's someone there wearing a hat. If I'm not wrong, that should be the singer, Han Fang. Eh, Director He is here too? Look. He's nodding at Zhang Ye. Looks like our celebrities are also very concerned about the Olympics."

"It's starting. They're going to begin with the snatch!"

"The first one up is the South Korean athlete."

"The second to go will be the Australian athlete."

After several people, it was finally the Chinese team's turn!

"Oh, it's Li Jiaxi's first lift and he's already trying for 162 kg!"

"Let's see how this goes. Come on! Li Jiaxi! You can do it!"

"Good one, now lift it up!"

"Great!"

The entire venue was cheering!

Zhang Ye shouted, "Good showing!"

The three sisters were also shouting excitedly!

"Oh, the North Korean athlete upped the weight to 166 kg and has succeeded in lifting it as well!"

"Li Jiaxi will also be attempting 166 kg this time, but the snatch is not what he's good at. Let's see how this one goes....Oh! He did it! He succeeded!"

The crowd erupted into applause again!

The two commentators' startled and surprised reactions made the viewers watching the live coverage feel extremely jittery as well!

When the snatch was completed, Li Jiaxi and the North Korean athlete tied on weight lifted and advanced into the clean and jerk tied for first place!

Li Jiaxi's first clean and jerk ended unsuccessfully before he managed a 190 kg lift on his second attempt!

Meanwhile, the North Korean athlete actually requested to lift a weight that seemed impossible for him on his third attempt—190 kg. In all his previous competitions, he had never attempted such a weight!

Zhang Ye's third sister cursed, "I hope it drops and crushes his feet! Crush his feet!"

Zhang Ye said to her, "Whoa, you're really ruthless!"

The third lift was also going to be the North Korean athlete's final lift. He only had this one chance to succeed!

The North Korean athlete grappled with the bar and brought it up to his chest. The enormous weight was pressing against him so heavily that he was trembling. It was obvious that he was almost about to give way. But suddenly, the North Korean athlete exerted his strength and jerked the bar over his head. However, his hands were not steady and his legs kept wobbling about. After bracing for a moment, he dropped the bar onto the ground!

The commentator said agitatedly, "He didn't hold still!"

The former weightlifting champion said, "We've won, we're the champion—"

But at this moment, the North Korean athlete suddenly jumped up excitedly and let out a howl onscreen. He rushed off the stage to his coach, and they shared a hug!

The commentator said in surprise, "What happened?"

The former weightlifting champion said in disbelief, "What? The referees gave a single red light and two white lights for the result. Did he succeed? The North Korean athlete managed the lift? If the North Korean athlete also succeeded in lifting 190 kg, then with their attempts being the same weight and his body weight being lighter than Li Jiaxi's, he would get the victory!"

The crowd at the venue was stunned!

The Chinese team's coaches were also stunned!

One of the coaches was so mad that he immediately went to appeal the result. However, the weightlifting event for this Olympics did not allow for appeals. The referees sent the Chinese coach back to where he came from.

The commentator said, "What an extremely odd call that was!"

The former weightlifting champion said, "Yeah, it's simply unbelievable!"

The commentator said, "But Li Jiaxi still has a chance! If he can manage to lift 191 kg for his final attempt, he'll still be crowned as the champion! Go Li Jiaxi! Come on, Team China!"

All of the pressure was now on Li Jiaxi!

The next second, Li Jiaxi took to the stage with the entire crowd

cheering for him!

Standing in front of the bar, Li Jiaxi roared to encourage himself. Then he squatted down and gripped the bar. He clenched his teeth and adjusted his breathing!

Up!

The commentator said, "Good one, now bring it up!"

The former weightlifting champion shouted, "Come on!"

The commentator said loudly, "Bring it up! Bring it up!"

Li Jiaxi cleanly jerked and raised the barbell over his head. But as it was incredibly heavy, his legs slightly gave way under him. For a moment, he did not manage to stand still. After he adjusted his footing a little, he held the position. He trembled as he held the bar over him and stayed in that position for two seconds!

The crowd went crazy!

Zhang Ye said, "He's won!"

His eldest younger sister's eyes were brimming with tears. "He's won! We won!"

The director and singer in the stands also stood up and yelled!

The commentator became even more excited. "He's won! Li Jiaxi managed to withstand all that pressure and succeeded! He withstood—" The commentator was suddenly stunned. "What? Wait a moment. What's happening?"

The entire venue fell silent!

The referees seemed like they were discussing something!

Then the North Korean athlete and coaches jumped for joy and hugged as they cheered!

The Chinese athlete, Li Jiaxi, stood there looking stunned!

For his lift, two of the three referees gave a red light!

It was a failed lift!

This lift did not succeed!

The referee team consisting of an Australian, a South Korean, and a Canadian had given a judgment that dumbfounded everyone!

The North Korean athlete had won the gold medal!

Li Jiaxi could only come in second!

Third place went to an Australian athlete. This was also a breakthrough for Australia in weightlifting!

The Chinese coaching team was enraged as they rushed up to the referees!

The crowd was furious as they started yelling angrily!

"Motherfuckers!"

"What the hell are they doing!"

"What kind of judgment is this?"

"Are you all playing dirty now?"

The Central TV commentator also exclaimed, "What's going on here? Can anyone tell me what's going on?"

The former weightlifting champion said angrily, "This has got to be an incorrect call! This doesn't make any sense at all! Let's see how their negotiation goes. The Organizing Committee's people have joined in the discussion as well!"

At the referees' panel in the venue, the referees were whispering to each other!

The Australian referee kept waving his hand!

The South Korean referee also looked like he was saying something.

Finally, the outcome was decided. The referees did not change their decision!

The North Korea athlete roared and beat against his chest to show that he was the champion!

Li Jiaxi could only walk off the stage silently. His eyes reddened as tears flowed down his face!

The commentator said, "A man does not cry easily! But at this moment, our Olympic hero is crying here in Beijing. We don't know what we can say anymore!"

The former Olympic champion said, "This is too unreasonable. If the referees were being strict and insisted that Li Jiaxi's lift was against the rules, then that lift by the North Korean athlete would be a 100 percent against the rules too! It just doesn't make any sense to have different standards for different athletes! What's with that? What are the referees doing?"

The commentator sighed. "The results have been decided. We must accept this outcome!"

But the former Olympic champion said, "I can't accept this! If this was because of us not being good enough, then such a result would be fine. If we have been erratic in our performance today, we can also let that go. But tell me, what's with this? I really can't accept something like this! I believe that many others are feeling the same too!"

The live coverage was still being broadcast!

There was still the medal ceremony to be held later on.

Suddenly, Zhang Ye stood up and pointed at the referees, yelling, "Idiots!"

This voice was so loud that it was deafening within the enclosed area of the arena!

That famous television drama director, He Qidong, also stood up when he heard that. "Idiots!"

The singer, Han Fang, scolded, "Idiots!"

Zhang Ye's second sister: "Idiots!"

His third sister: "Idiots!"

More and more people started standing up!

More and more of them pointed at the referees and scolded them in anger!

At this moment, all the Chinese in the stands were enraged!

The infamous "Peking University Scolding" was now echoing in an Olympic setting!

That Australian referee looked over to the stands, knowing that the crowd was scolding them. However, he just smiled and did not say anything. The South Korean referee also had an indifferent look, while the other referees also behaved like nothing had happened. After the competition ended, they even started chatting and laughing with one another.

This behavior made the Chinese people even angrier!

They clearly had something against the Chinese team!

For a time, the scolding in the stands got even louder!

"Idiots!"

"Idiots!"

"Idiots!"

When Zhang Ye's eldest younger sister saw Li Jiaxi crying, she nearly cried as well. "This is so infuriating! I'm so pissed off! Isn't that as good as bullying? They can't do things like that!"

What kind of temper did Zhang Ye have?

This fellow was someone who would blow up at the slightest provocation!

He hated this sort of injustice the most in life. "These foreign bastards!"

Not far away from him, Director He Qidong said, "They're doing this on purpose!"

This judgment call was simply too blatant. There was basically no way it could have been an incorrect judgment!

"Fuck their grandpas! How dare they act in this way? Alright then!" Zhang Ye turned around and stomped off. He simply said to his uncle and auntie, as well as his three sisters, "I'm going outside for a bit!"

"Where are you off to?"

"Brother?"

His three sisters were also quite taken aback by this.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ye had walked out of the competition venue.

If it were a matter of skills, it would have been fine!

If this Olympics were held in another country, then so be it!

But this was Beijing! This was the Beijing Olympics!

In our territory and on our doorsteps, did you all think that I would fucking let you bully us? Fuck all of you!

Every scoring ring is 5 mm wide and sub-divided in 0.5 mm (≈ 0.1719 MOA) increments in 10 "subrings". Like the other scoring rings the maximum of 10.9 is derived from an additional set of 10 "subrings" within the center 10-point circle, increasing in 0.1 point value as the rings approach the center of the target.

## Chapter 1168: The referees get beaten up!

Meanwhile.

Some countries were celebrating their victories.

Some countries were reflecting on their results.

But the Chinese delegation and the common folk of the country were all enraged by the Men's 62 kg weightlifting event. Even most of the media outlets in China were annoyed at the results!

"China ends first day of events without gold medal!"

"The Chinese delegation repeatedly misses out on gold!"

"An incorrect call in weightlifting?"

"Li Jiaxi painfully loses the gold medal!"

"Team China's gold medal stolen by referees!"

"A failed appeal? Did the refs go blind?"

"The Australian referee had already made an incorrect call against a Chinese athlete four years ago! "

"Four years ago, it was Ding Lei. This time, it's Li Jiaxi?"

"Just how has Team China offended this Australian referee?"

The weightlifting medal presentation had not even begun yet, but the news reports were already spreading everywhere!

Central TV's live coverage had switched from the venue to broadcasting the live coverage studio. The scene of the audience scolding "idiots" in unison at the venue was really unsuitable to continue being shown on live television.

The venue was very chaotic.

The weightlifting team's head coach had already gone to the Organizing Committee's officials to lodge a complaint. This Olympics was organized by them, but to have the foreign referees

so blatantly and deliberately make such misjudgments on the first day of the events, who could bear it?

They were clearly smacking their faces!

They were clearly smacking China's face!

The first day events of the Olympics had ended. When the many coaches and athletes of the different sports for Team China heard about this incident, they all went to watch the replay of the weightlifting event. Then many of them started to step forward in anger!

The table tennis team's main players posted on Weibo: "Li Jiaxi deserved to be the champion!"

The badminton team's assistant head coach criticized sternly: "Li Jiaxi did not lose because of himself or his opponent, but because of the referees!"

The men's weightlifting team's coach: "Strongly questioning this decision!"

And celebrities from all over spoke up too!

Yao Jiancai's Weibo: "This is goddamn match fixing!"

Huo Dongfang's Weibo: "This corruption is too blatant, isn't it?"

Chen Guang's Weibo: "What the hell is this?"

Famous director, Li Ke: "This is the Beijing Olympics! Do you have any respect for us? Shouldn't they ban these types of referees?"

Grandma Zhang Xia: "Why couldn't they initiate an appeal against the decision?"

The Chinese athletes were all criticizing it!

The celebrities were all criticizing it!

The netizens were also criticizing it!

"Bastards!"

"How can they be such bullies!"

"Did they gang up on us?"

"I'm so angry! That was such a shocking and maddening decision!"

"Four years ago, there were already issues raised about some of the referees deliberately targeting our Chinese team. At that time, the relevant organization penalized them for their actions. So why is it that a portion of those people can still appear in the Olympics ref pool? How can they blatantly cheat the Chinese team of its chances like this? Who gave them the authority to do something like that? Who allowed this to happen and condoned their actions that have seriously damaged the spirit of sportsmanship? Such referees should be banned for life!"

"Fuck! This is really making me want to beat someone up now!"

"Even an idiot can see that we were the ones who should have won!"

"That last lift was a proper one! There was nothing wrong with it!"

"Well scolded, Zhang Ye! They're really a bunch of idiots!"

"I also saw Zhang Ye leading the scolding on the live broadcast!"

"What's the use of scolding them? The gold medal has already been lost! This is too difficult to stomach!"

"When Li Jiaxi cried on the live broadcast, my wife cried along! This is too depressing! My heart aches for him!"

This incorrect call was very controversial!

Whether it was the Chinese delegation or the citizens, none of them were having it!

Some foreign media outlets also gave a very objective assessment after watching the competition.

A British media outlet reported: "Unable to understand the decision behind the Men's 62 kg weightlifting event. It looked like the winner should have been the Chinese?"

In the Spanish media: "A huge controversy in the weightlifting event. After viewing the slow-motion replays, the North Korean athlete's lift at the end clearly ran afoul of the rules. Meanwhile, the Chinese athlete's lift was thought to be a good one after analysis by several professionals. All of them said that there were no issues with it and that it should not have been faulted."

The Portuguese media: "In the finals of the weightlifting event, the referees made a big mistake. However, the gold medal has already been awarded and won't be changed!"

The Russian media: "After four years, the Chinese weightlifting team has again fallen victim to the same Australian referee in the finals of a different weight class!"

A lot of the foreign media also expressed their shock and disbelief at the matter. This sort of a clear-cut incorrect call could only be committed by an amateur referee. How could something like this happen in the Olympics?

But the award ceremony was already over!

The gold medal winner could not be changed!

That was this world's rules for the sport of weightlifting!

Yet at this time, the Australian media continued adding fuel to fire!

An Australian media outlet said openly: "The Chinese audience is making a spectacle of themselves in the stadium by verbally abusing the referees. Such behavior makes us very worried about this year's Beijing Olympics. The outcome of the competition cannot be changed, and this is what it means to compete in a sporting event. The results are unpredictable, so why don't they try to accept it and learn from their mistakes?"

After the competition.

An Australian reporter interviewed the Australian athlete who won the bronze medal.

The athlete shook his head and expressed, "I'm very disappointed with the behavior of the Chinese today. They delayed the proceedings of the competition for so long just because they couldn't take a loss. I think we should be the ones protesting instead!"

That made a lot of people even more furious!

On Weibo, there were wave after wave of criticism!

"They even want us to just accept it?"

"Fuck your grandpa!"

"The Australian ref deliberately made a bad call against us and they're asking us to learn from our mistakes?"

"Fuck your grandpa!"

"Ptui!"'

"What dogshit is this!"

"Ahhh! I'm so mad!"

"I'm gonna blow my top!"

"They're being way too arrogant!"

The incident blew up!

But other than cursing and swearing, the athletes, coaches, and citizens could do nothing about it. They were all full of pent-up anger that could not be released anywhere!

A similar scene had happened four years ago. At that time, after the gold medal was lost, the incident died down after some time. Could the same thing happen again at this year's Beijing Olympics? The referees would just be let off with a pointless warning and punishment before everything went back to how it was? Of course, this affair was not over yet!

Even if everyone else agreed to it, Zhang Ye wouldn't!

...

Night had fallen.

But the lights were still shining brightly within the Olympic stadium.

Zhang Ye used his special staff pass that was issued to him for yesterday's opening ceremony to gain access to the place through the staff entrance. He strode into the area where the crowds were not allowed to enter. Even though the competition events for the day were over, this place was still restricted!

Across from him at the exit of the stadiums, five referees were walking out.

The leader of the group was that Australian referee who took charge of the weightlifting event earlier. Beside him were the other foreign referees involved in today's event!

```
"#$%^&*()."
"...%$^&*()!"
```

They were saying something, probably in English, but Zhang Ye could not understand them as they spoke very fast. Well, with that English of his, he probably would not understand even if they spoke slowly.

The Australia referee was beaming.

The South Korean referee had a calm look on his face.

Beside them, there was a referee who looked a little worried.

All of them wore different expressions and were heading out of the stadium toward Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye did not even look at them as he slowly strode in their direction swinging his arms. He was even humming and singing

the song "Beijing Welcomes You."

The atmosphere felt really normal.

The workers and volunteers who were passing by did not sense anything peculiar either. It was the same for those weightlifting referees. The Australian referee suddenly took a look at his watch before saying something in English to the others. The five of them nodded and quickly picked up their pace. They probably had to rush off somewhere as there was still a lot of work to be done post-competition.

But right as they were passing Zhang Ye!

They were passing him but did not make it past him!

Zhang Ye was still humming the tune when he suddenly stuck his leg out. The Australian referee, who was walking very quickly, didn't even have time to react and tripped. He lost his balance and felt like his body's weight was arrested as he fell forward! He yelled while flailing about, hoping to grab onto something. As a result, he grabbed onto the South Korean referee beside him and pulled him down as well! Then another referee, who was behind them, knocked into Zhang Ye's shoulder "accidentally." He felt a very strong impact collide with his shoulder as he fell over with a horrified look and landed on top of the other two referees without warning!

The Australian referee's face smashed against the ground. His nose instantly started bleeding!

The South Korean referee fell over as well and his arm snapped against the ground. He clutched it and shrieked in pain!

The third referee fell onto his back!

The fourth referee was knocked into a table next to him!

After the fifth referee fell down, he even got crushed under two other referees who were clearly heavier than 80 kg. His eyes rolled back as he nearly fainted from the pain!

One second!

In just a mere second!

As they passed each other, only Zhang Ye made it past them while the five referees cried out loudly as they found themselves sprawled out on the ground. None of them stood back up!

It was too fast!

It was really did happen in just the blink of an eye!

It was so strange it was scary!

When many of the volunteers and workers, as well as some of the other foreign referees and athletes around them, heard their screams, many of them either looked over to see what was going on or rushed over!

"Damn!"

"What happened here?"

"The weightlifting referees got beaten up!?"

Several female volunteers screamed!

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye's figure had drifted away. All that was left of the incident was a chaotic crowd that had gathered around the five weightlifting referees wailing in agony!

## Chapter 1169: The surveillance footage gets brought to light!

It was extremely chaotic onsite!

"Hurry, help them up first!"

The five referees were lying on the ground all swollen and bruised. They were wailing and in so much pain they could not get back up on their feet. All of them had been stunned by the fall!

```
"Ah!"
"Fuck!"
"My leg!"
"Help! Help!"
The Australian referee was crying out for help.
```

However, just as the volunteers and Chinese athletes around were about to instinctively help him up, they realized who he was and stopped in their tracks. Instead, they took out their cell phones to record the dumbfounded weightlifting referees!

```
"The refs got beaten up!"

"They're the referees from the weightlifting event!"

"Quick, come and see this!"

"Record it!"

"Damn, who did this?"

The security guards came running over as well!

Some employees on the Organizing Committee also rushed over!

"What's going on?"

"How did something like this happen?"

"What went on over here?"
```

"Where's the medical staff? Let them have a look!"

"They're fine, they didn't suffer any fractures!"

More and more people gathered. Even some of the media arrived to take a look!

Everyone who saw it could only feel a sense of shock and disbelief. This was an Olympic venue, a place with the highest security. How could something like this have happened? How could do it? Who could be so brazen? Who could be so bold!

The media was dumbfounded!

The Organizing Committee staff were dumbfounded!

The local and foreign athletes were dumbfounded!

Beating up referees at an Olympic venue? No one had come across something like this before!

• •

Back at home.

His parents were cursing at the television!

His father said, "Good thing we didn't go watch the weightlifting event tonight, else I'd have been so pissed off!"

His mother said, "Those foreigners are such bastards! How dare they pick on us in our backyard? Who gave them the guts to do that? Who gave them the authority?"

The criticism on the Internet was still going on!

The entertainment industry was criticizing it!

The Chinese media was criticizing it!

The netizens were criticizing it!

"Is there no place to reason this out?"

"These people should just die!"

"Brothers, let's dox those fellas!"

"Someone's already identified those five refs!"

"Fuck, who wants to go with me to confront them?"

"Fuck! Let's go fucking beat them up!"

"Yeah, we won't take this lying down!"

"Count me in! I'll go as well! I've really been enraged today!"

"Go? How are we going to go? That is a restricted area in the Olympic grounds. Can any of you even make it inside?"

"So we're just going to do nothing about it then?"

Ever since the weightlifting event finished, the people cursed and scolded, for a full hour. But all of a sudden, countless news reports appeared. It had come so suddenly all the netizens were caught unawares. Everyone was tongue-tied!

"Five weightlifting referees assaulted!"

"An unexpected incident in an Olympic stadium!"

"Referees fall and injure themselves, or perhaps it was caused by someone else!"

"Police Investigating!"

"Could the surveillance footage shed a light on what really happened?"

"Just what happened in the stadium?"

On Central TV Sports Channel: "Oh, we have just received a piece of news..."

Beijing Television: "An incident has taken place in an Olympic stadium. Let's take a look at a video footage!"

A video recorded at the scene was shown!

The five weightlifting referees who were earlier on television in all their swagger looked miserable in the video clip. Some of them were bleeding from the nose, and some of them had bumps on their heads as all of them laid on the ground crying out in pain!

With this, it became very lively on Weibo!

In an instant, the video clip was Liked over 200,000 times!

The netizens were so delighted they seemed to be welcoming the new year!

"Wow!"

"Hahahaha!"

"This is too awesome!"

"Serves them right! They fucking deserved it!"

"What goes around comes around! Who does Heaven forgive?"

"What a release! This is such a goddamn release!"

"Aiyo, I'm laughing like crazy! This feels so good!"

"Damn, the referees got beaten up in an Olympic stadium? I thought that place was out of bounds to the regular people? Who beat them up then? Just what is going on here? Let me Like this a million times first before I go check it out!"

"Could it have been a volunteer who did it?"

"Haha! All I want to say is, well done!"

"Which hero did this? Let us prostrate in worship to that person!"

"That was too goddamn brilliant!"

"This is the greatest piece of news I've seen this year!"

Yao Jiancai Liked the Weibo video. "Haha!"

Zhang Xia gave it a Like too!

Zhang Yuanqi's manager also hit Like!

Huo Dongfang Liked it!

A Heavenly King Liked it!

A certain Heavenly Queen posted a winking emoticon in

response!

The Beijing Times forwarded the post!

The official Weibo of a Beijing district police station Liked and forwarded it before immediately deleting all traces of both!

The people did not have much qualms about their reactions to the incident, but the entertainment industry celebrities and officials had to be careful about what they did or said. That was because they were public figures and anything they said could be seen as wrong. But they were also using their own methods to express their attitudes regarding the incident!

Zhang Ye's father was startled. "The referees were beaten up?"

His mother yelled in approval, "Well done! Well done!"

How truly satisfying!

The incident made so many people feel very happy!

Although there were also many experts and media putting on a show by stepping forward to criticize such actions, the general public was not bothered. Everyone was just intrigued by who could have done this and if it was done by one of the volunteers or workers. Or perhaps, one of the Chinese athletes or coaches?

The foreign media was also giving a lot of attention to this matter!

"Police investigating and checking surveillance footage!"

"According to eyewitness accounts, no fighting in the stadium!"

"Injured referees lodge complaint to Organizing Committee!"

"Were they beaten up? Or was it just an accident?"

"The truth shall be revealed soon!"

• • •

Later that night.

At Zhang Ye's Studio.

Zhang Ye drove back here hastily. When he came in through the door, he saw that Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others were actually still in the office. They were all chattering and watching television.

Zhang Ye was taken aback. "Whoa, working overtime?"

Ha Qiqi quickly said, "Aiyo, Director Zhang, why did you get back this late?"

Zhang Zuo said in a good mood, "We just saw some news that made all of us so happy that we don't intend to go home yet."

"This wouldn't be included in the overtime pay, right?" Zhang Ye said stingily.

"Why are you bringing up overtime pay, Director Zhang? You're too much of a penny-pincher." Little Wang said joyfully, "Have you watched the news yet? Something big has just happened! Those weightlifting referees got injured!"

Zhang Ye shrugged and said, "Of course I know."

Wu Yi laughed heartily. "They're currently investigating which hero did it!"

"That was so cool!" Little Wang said, "I hope the surveillance cameras did not manage to record anything. Otherwise, that person might get into trouble. If it's an athlete from our country, they're likely to get banned from competing."

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Don't worry, an athlete didn't do it."

Ha Qiqi immediately said, "Director Zhang, quickly go and give the Weibo post a Like. We're currently working on gaining you a good public image, so you shouldn't miss out on latching onto an opportunity like this."

Zhang Zuo nodded. "That's right, you should say a few words on your Weibo or at least post a status update."

But Zhang Ye waved it off. "No need."

"Why not?" Ha Qiqi was taken aback.

Suddenly, the scene on Central TV's live broadcast changed. It was still showing a recap of today's Olympic Games events before it cut back to the studio. Then the host said, "We interrupt this broadcast to report that we have just received an important update on the injured referees. We have gotten our hands on footage that will reveal what happened at the scene."

The video footage was shown on the broadcast!

The country's citizens were jolted!

"Who did it?"

"Quick, let's have a look!"

At present, the number of people watching and waiting in anticipation was uncountable.

Ha Qiqi, Zhang Zuo, and the others also crowded around the television.

Then, the figures of five referees appeared in the surveillance footage, the exact ones who had been injured in the incident. They could be seen walking in a hurry and were even chatting and joking with one another. The next second, a key figure appeared in frame. As the two sides approached each other, right as they were passing each other, what happened was not as described by the news involving a violent beating or a fight scene as imagined by everyone!

It happened in a flash just as they passed each other!

The young man in the surveillance footage maliciously stretched out a leg to trip one of them!

The next instant, the country's citizens were dumbfounded as they saw the five referees chaotically fall to the ground!

The young man had his hand in his pockets and even sounded like he was humming a song. The surveillance footage then got a

close up shot of the young man, leading to everyone in the country reacting like they had their tails stepped on!

Ha Qiqi turned around in shock!

Little Wang shrieked!

Zhang Zuo and Wu Yi also stared in shock at Zhang Ye, who was standing behind them!

It was Director Zhang!

The person in the footage was actually Director Zhang!

Everyone in Zhang Ye's Studio nearly fainted!

Ha Qiqi stood up by supporting herself with the table. "Director Zhang, it was you?!"

Zhang Zuo was nearly in tears. "Director Zhang, didn't we already agree on generating a positive public image for you? We just talked about it this morning!"

Zhang Ye was also feeling a little embarrassed. "I was too impulsive."

Ha Qiqi said angrily, "No, you did it knowingly!"

Zhang Ye gave a hollow laugh. "You all should already know this temper of mine. I won't do it again."

Everyone in the studio could only give each other looks and sigh. Alright then, it looked like they would really have to get back to work and put in some overtime. They should have known better that it wouldn't be that easy being a part of Zhang Ye's management team. Everyone in Zhang Ye's Studio smiled bitterly as they prepared to welcome the impending storm!

## Chapter 1170: The Leg of God!

```
At Zhang Ye's parents' house.
```

His parents were watching the news in high spirits.

"It's been revealed!"

"They're showing the surveillance footage!"

"Eh, doesn't this person's back look a little familiar?"

"Damn, isn't that Little Ye!"

His parents were stunned!

In the Olympic Village.

Many of the athletes and coaches were watching the live broadcast as well.

"Beautiful!"

"That was such a godly trip!"

"Ah!"

"Zhang Ye!"

"Fuck, it's Zhang Ye!"

All over the country, scenes of people getting dumbfounded were playing out. When they saw that figure of a person and Zhang Ye's face, when they saw that malicious leg stick out, everyone wore a look of shock at first before it turned to one of amusement. Everyone realized that they were not surprised at all. The person who did it was Zhang Ye? That was perfectly within expectations for him. Zhang Ye had more than enough past cases when it came to such disreputable behavior. He had always been a person whom everyone hated and loved at the same time!

Weibo exploded once again!

But this time, the netizens were all one-sidedly giving their Likes

to Zhang Ye!

"Aiyo, what the heck!"

"It's Teacher Zhang!"

"Ahhh! It's Zhang Ye!"

"This is cracking me up!"

"I was wondering who had the balls to attack the referees in an Olympic stadium!"

"Yeah! I was rather shocked to know that there was a hero who took things into their own hands! So it turned out to be Teacher Zhang!"

"I'll give him a Like! I'll give Teacher Zhang a year's worth of Likes for that!"

"I've watched the video five times. It's so awesome!"

"That leg trip was simply perfect!"

"Tripping five people over with a leg! Oh my god! How did Zhang Ye manage that?"

"Who knows! That leg trip was just too godly, damn it!"

"How shocking! This is the goddamn Leg of God!"

The leg he stretched out in the video was too wicked and too precise. It was like he had used a computer to accurately work out the required force and execution angles as he lightly tripped one of them to send all five referees sprawling out onto the ground. It really dumbfounded countless viewers. Even many of the foreigners had been shocked by this video clip. If there was a tripping event in the Olympics, then this person would definitely deserve to be the champion. Have you ever seen anyone who could trip five people with just a light swipe of their leg? This leg was simply...

Yes!

It was the Leg of God!

As Zhang Ye had played that amazing "Hand of God" during the "war between humans and machines" against PeterGo, the audience got their inspiration from there and aptly gave a resounding name to this move—the "Leg of God"!

It was so awesome!

It was quite the release!

"Teacher Zhang is so impressive!"

"As expected of Zhang Ye!"

"Zhang Ye, I just love that fiery temper of yours!"

"Zhang Ye is so domineering!"

"I've always scolded Zhang Ye in the past, but I must give him a Like today!"

"There's nothing to say. That leg trip was too good!"

"Zhang Ye put his leg out and tripped them for our nation!"

"He tripped them with such style! You can see how good he is just from that trip alone!"

"Hahahaha! I knew it must be him! Who else could do something like this other than Zhang Ye? No one else would have the guts besides him!"

"This is what I call a real man!"

"Just with that trip alone, I'll only be convinced by Zhang Ye in showbiz!"

"Aiya, don't cause any more trouble. Why aren't you guys worried for Teacher Zhang? The police are investigating the affair. This is very serious, so Teacher Zhang better not get implicated somehow!"

"Previous poster, stay calm."

"Haha, what are you so worried about!"

"Zhang Ye has done so many things in the past that are even more extreme than this, but have you ever seen that fellow get into any trouble? He's still doing as well as ever! It's not like he's beaten anyone up. He only tripped one of them, what's the big deal? Teacher Zhang has been through a lot, so don't worry about him. He knows what he's doing. Do you take him for a pushover?"

"But it'll still affect his image."

"Does he have an image to begin with?"

"But if the foreigners start criticizing him..."

"You're so funny, big sis! This is Zhang Ye we're talking about! When has Zhang Ye ever been afraid of anyone criticizing him? He's just like a rock in the privy—hard and stinky!"

"Alright, I'll stop worrying."

There was a heated discussion on the Internet!

Though to be more accurate, everyone was delighted at the reveal!

Meanwhile, the media reports could not possibly be so blasé. Even if some of the Chinese reporters were applauding this action, they couldn't write that in their reports!

The Chinese media: "Zhang Ye appears in surveillance footage!"

The British media: "The culprit is the singer of the Olympic opening theme song?"

The Australian media: "Shock! Indignation! Objection!"

The South Korean media: "Was the Chinese superstar retaliating?"

The Canadian media: "Unbelievable! A never before witnessed behavior!"

The Chinese people were not surprised as they all understood

Zhang Ye very well!

But the foreigners were very dumbfounded. No one could imagine that the Chinese celebrity who had represented Beijing to sing at the opening ceremony with Lillian would actually trip someone over like this!

What the hell was that?

What kind of a person was he?

And what did he fucking sing in the opening theme song?

You and me, from one world. / We are family!

From one world, your sister!

We are family, your sister!

Why was what you sang and what you did an entirely different thing altogether!

Now that they listened to the song again, it really made many of the foreign media and athletes unsure about how to react!

When those injured weightlifting referees saw the video, they finally understood why they had been injured and how they had fallen down. They became so indignant they immediately lodged a complaint and protested to the higher-ups. They requested for the assailant to be seriously punished so that they could be given a fair answer!

However, the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games did not show any indication of issue them with one and only said that the matter had already been referred to the police.

Sensing that the Organizing Committee was not proactive on the issue, the five referees became furious!

But if they stopped to think for a bit, they were the ones who had deliberately done something as insulting as making an incorrect call in an event at the Beijing Olympics that caused the Chinese team to lose a gold medal. That had affected the Chinese athletes physically and psychologically. The citizens were also angered that this decision was not made in the spirit of sportsmanship. Now that something has happened to you all, you're demanding that the Organizing Committee give you a fair answer? You are demanding for an explanation to be given? Does that make any sense! Aren't you all expecting a little too much! Do you all think that the world revolves around you?

Further, this issue had nothing to do with the Organizing Committee!

Who was Zhang Ye?

A coach? He wasn't!

An athlete? He wasn't!

He wasn't even a worker here!

Zhang Ye was not under their jurisdiction at all. He wasn't an official of the Olympics and had only come to perform the Olympic opening theme song as a guest, so anything after that had nothing to do with them. If they really wanted to say anything, then he would at most be considered as a normal audience member. What authority could the Organizing Committee possibly have over him?

So those referees could only pin their hopes on the police!

A lot of people were also curious about how the police would handle this matter!

• • •

In the studio.

There was a knock on the door, and they saw four police officers standing outside.

Little Wang's expression changed. "You all are?"

The old policeman who was in charge showed his credentials and said sternly, "Hello, we're from the Chaoyang District Police

Station, is Zhang Ye around? We would like to ask him some questions."

Zhang Ye walked up to them. "I'm here."

The old policeman nodded at him. "Hello. Regarding the incident that took place at one of the Olympic venues today, we have identified that you were involved after checking the surveillance footage. Is that correct?"

Zhang Ye said, "It was me."

Ha Qiqi immediately said, "Please talk to our lawyer about this. We won't be answering any questions for now!"

But Zhang Ye waved her off. "It's fine." Then, he said to the police officers, "Ask away."

The old policeman said, "Thank you for your cooperation."

Zhang Ye smiled. "It's my duty."

The old policeman asked another question. "At 8:10 PM tonight, did you go to Olympic Venue No. 3 because you lost your way? Or did you go there for other reasons?"

Zhang Ye answered honestly, "I went there to look for the five referees, of course."

"Director Zhang!" Ha Qiqi tugged at him.

The old policeman acknowledged him and turned to the policeman beside him who was recording the statement. "He lost his way."

That young policeman nodded and recorded it.

Zhang Ye: "..."

The studio staff: "..."

The old policeman looked at him. "In the surveillance footage, you were seen sticking your leg out. Was it intentional? Or unintentional? Did you trip over something on the ground? And

lost your balance thus making you stick your leg out to steady yourself?"

Zhang Ye spoke the truth, "I definitely did it on purpose. I was there for them."

"OK." The old policeman turned to the younger policeman and said, "He tripped over something at the time, so he stuck out his leg as he tried to regain his balance."

The young policeman recorded the statement.

Zhang Ye: "..."

Ha Qiqi: "..."

Zhang Zuo: "..."

Five minutes later, the police were done with their questioning.

They had recorded a statement that was completely different from what Zhang Ye answered!

The old policeman said, "There wouldn't be any criminal liability for this issue. Those referees did not suffer any serious injuries. It was mostly just scraped skin and the like. The surveillance footage wasn't that clear either. At most, you'd be asked to cough up the medical expenses as compensation, but that wouldn't cost much anyway. Alright, if there are any new developments to the case, we might come over again or ask you to come down to the police station to assist with the investigation. Since we're done questioning, that's all for today. We won't be disturbing you all any longer. We still have other matters waiting for us to handle when we get back."

Ha Qiqi hurriedly said, "Let me see you all off!"

"There's no need," the old policeman said with a smile.

Ha Qiqi whispered, "Thank you."

The old policeman waved at her. "We're just doing our jobs. There's nothing to thank me for. We're off then."

As Ha Qiqi was the head of external affairs in the studio, she walked the police officers downstairs and saw them off from there.

## Chapter 1171: International Buzz!

In the studio.

The calls came one after another.

Everyone in the studio was busy handling the media reporters while Zhang Ye took calls from his family and friends. The affair had blown up and no one did not know about it!

Zhang Ye held his cell phone to his ear. "Mom."

His mother praised: "Son, that was a good beating you gave them!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said: "Not bad, right?"

"What's so good about that!" At the other end of the line, his father apparently snatched the phone for himself and said: "You are a member of the Party. How can you go around beating up people again? And they're even Olympic referees?"

Zhang Ye gave a hollow laugh and said: "But I didn't beat them up."

His mother snatched the phone back from his father and said: "Don't listen to your father's griping. When he heard that the referees were injured, he happily applauded it and cheered. He only got anxious after he saw that it was you in the surveillance video. Ignore him, you did a great job! We can't get pushed around by them like this!"

Zhang Ye replied: "Got it."

"Will you be fine?"

"What could possibly happen to me?"

"Alrighty then."

Then Ning Lan called.

Ning Lan asked: "Did you really manhandle them?"

Zhang Ye replied: "Let me make this clear: I did not use my hands on them."

"It's the same even if you used your legs!"

"Cough cough."

"You've gotten into big trouble this time."

"Ha, being unafraid of trouble is in my nature."

"I really have to give it to you!"

Another call came in, this time from the songstress, Grandma Zhang Xia.

Zhang Xia asked, "Don't you want to make it in the international scene?"

Zhang Ye said, "I want to."

"You want to? Then why are you still always getting into trouble?"

"Don't worry about me, I know what I'm doing."

"Oh, you! I don't even know what to say about you anymore."

Zhang Ye's friends called him out of concern as they were afraid he had gotten himself into deep trouble this time. But at the same time, they were really impressed by his courage to do something like this. If it were anyone else, they wouldn't have done something that would land themselves in this kind of trouble, more so for a person of Zhang Ye's stature. What mattered most to those in the entertainment industry was their own reputation, especially those who wanted to advance in the international scene. This incident would definitely stain his reputation for the rest of his life and would not be forgotten by anyone. It was already very difficult for Zhang Ye to advance to the top of the domestic entertainment industry with his qualities, so it would be even harder to get to the top of the Asian rankings and advance in the international stage. And yet, he still created this big of a mess?

Wasn't he just making things difficult for himself? Wasn't this as good as putting obstacles on his future career path?

But how did Zhang Ye see it?

He didn't care at all. He just went ahead and did it!

Just by that alone, they had no choice but take their hats off to him!

. . .

Before long, the findings of the police investigation were released!

Chaoyang District Police Station: "Through our investigation, the suspicious man who appeared in the surveillance footage taken at the Olympic venue was indeed Zhang Ye. The preliminary judgment of the police department is that Zhang Ye entered the Olympic venue to return the staff pass as he did not have the opportunity to do so after the opening ceremony ended the day before. In there, he got tripped by an unidentified object on the ground just as he was walking past the five foreign weightlifting referees. After comparison with the surveillance footage, Zhang Ye does appear to have lost his balance at that moment and kickstarted a domino effect where the five foreign referees fell to the ground after one of them was tripped by him.

And on and on it went.

The findings of the investigation went over 300 words!

But the conclusion was summarized in just a word: accident!

When the findings of the investigation were made public, many of the local citizens greatly praised it!

"Giving a Like for the Chaoyang Police!"

"Hahahaha! Well done!"

"The police are serving the people!"

"They know how to spot right from wrong!"

"That's right, it was just an accident!"

"This case was judged wonderfully!"

"That's right, that's right! It had nothing to do with Teacher Zhang!"

"They're exceedingly right! I know that with Teacher Zhang's character, he would definitely not injure the referees at the Olympics venue on purpose. Teacher Zhang would never do something like that!"

"Correct, he's a triple faculty professor of Peking University and Media College. He's an out-and-out intellectual."

"That's right, that's right. Teacher Zhang is a teacher of the people and a member of the Party. How could he possibly do such a thing? We can't malign a good person. The police have finally cleared Teacher Zhang's name."

"The injustice has been redressed!"

"A teacher of the people would not beat people up!"

"Hai, the truth finally comes out. Teacher Zhang was wronged!"

"My tears are overflowing! I'm so happy for Teacher Zhang!"

The people were talking about how righteous the outcome of the investigation was.

But in reality, all of them were laughing their asses off on the inside!

The injustice was redressed?

They were happy for him?

A teacher of the people would not beat people up?

Bull fucking shit!

Everyone knew in their heart of hearts that even an idiot could

see that this was done by Zhang Ye on purpose. He wouldn't do something like that? If he wouldn't do something like that, then who would! This was exactly the kind of thing he loved doing! But nobody spoke what they thought. Instead, all of them were protesting this injustice against Zhang Ye, "feeling" deeply indignant about the misunderstanding that other people had of him!

Yao Jiancai's Weibo: "..."

Xiaodong's Weibo: "..."

Huo Dongfang's Weibo: "a..."

When many of those in the entertainment industry saw this, they nearly fainted!

That's enough!

That's really enough!

Can you all not be so funny!

In all of China, who does not know what kind of person Zhang Ye is!

However, some foreign reporters actually got fooled by the findings of the Chaoyang District Police Station's investigation. Several foreign media outlets started reporting about this news.

The English media: "All a misunderstanding."

The Russian media: "The findings of the police investigation show that this is not a criminal case."

The Portuguese media: "Let's turn our focus back to the Olympic events."

But more of the foreign media did not believe it!

Especially the Australian and South Korean media. They reacted to this news in a frenzy. The American media, which naturally sided with their allies, also joined in the commotion and criticized the investigations angrily!

A misunderstanding?

An accident?

Who are you trying to bluff!

Only an idiot would believe that!

The referees who got beaten up were even angrier as they did not agree with the outcome of the investigation!

The Australian media: "Hand over the assailant! He must be severely punished for his actions!"

The American media: "The American delegation demands an explanation from the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games!"

The South Korean media: "The assault on the South Korean referee cannot just go unpunished. Requesting that the Interpol take over the investigation!"

When the Chinese netizens saw this, they rolled their eyes. What Interpol? Do you think this is a terrorist attack?! The American delegation even wants us to give an explanation? Do you treat yourselves as Interpol?

However, there were also some Chinese media outlets that joined in the fray.

A small tabloid: "The Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games should give an explanation to the International Olympic Committee!"

An online media outlet: "Zhang Ye has really gone too far! "

A Chinese expert: "Fighting violence with violence never works! It only serves to worsen the conflict!"

A scholar from the education field even resorted to scaremongering: "If the case of the injured international referees does not get handled properly, China will suffer a loss of respect in the international arena. The Beijing Olympics will become a laughing stock!"

A lot of people were supporting Zhang Ye!

A lot of people were also scolding him!

Each side had their views and reasoning!

On the first day of the Olympic Games, all of the domestic and foreign media outlets, along with the people, were in an uproar. All of this was because of Zhang Ye, because of what he had done!

It was an unprecedented occurrence!

Zhang Ye had successfully stolen the headlines from the Olympics!

## Chapter 1172: A shocking statement from the Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games!

At night.

Public opinion was divided.

"What kind of experts do they think they are!"

"They're even criticizing Teacher Zhang?"

"When the gold medal was taken away from us due to that incorrect call, why didn't any of them step forward?"

"Yeah, all they know is how to talk crap!"

"But Zhang Ye still shouldn't have tripped those referees."

"Zhang Ye only knows how to bring down our country's image!"

"Get lost! Never mind that the foreigners are criticizing him, even our own countrymen are also scolding him now?"

A scolding battle began!

Countless people were engaged in a fiery war of words!

The lights in Zhang Ye's Studio were all on as everyone worked overtime to handle the emergency PR. There was someone using the studio's official Weibo account to make clarifications, while others contacted local PR agencies that they were familiar with in an attempt to divert the public's attention. They were hoping that it could limit the amount of negative press brought upon Zhang Ye by this incident.

At this moment, Zhang Ye received an important call from the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games. It was also the first time a leader of the Organizing Committee was contacting Zhang Ye regarding this incident. The person on the other end of the line was the vice-president of the Organizing Committee, Qi

Yihai. He sounded quite serious over the phone.

Qi Yihai said: "Professor Zhang."

Zhang Ye simply replied: "President Qi."

Qi Yihai said: "Do you know how big of a mess you've created?"

"I know," Zhang Ye said calmly.

Qi Yihai sighed and said: "The phone lines here at Organizing Committee are blowing up with complaints as well as inquiries from the foreign media. Even the International Olympic Committee is questioning us."

Zhang Ye said: "This is down to my personal conduct and has nothing to do with you all."

Qi Yihai said: "How can it not have anything to do with us? Did you really think that you were just an audience member? Did you think that you were just representing yourself? You were invited by us to be the Olympic opening ceremony's main lead and represent China by singing onstage. Every action of yours represents China and the Olympic image! But you were really great, huh? Did you think of the consequences before you did that? Look at the public's opinion right now. The foreign media is scolding you, while the local experts, academics, and commentators have also criticized you. Even if it's not for anything else, shouldn't you at least think about your own reputation? Attacking referees on the first day of the Olympics? I've really never heard of something like that happening before!"

Zhang Ye spoke in a casual tone: "Are you done talking?"

Qi Yihai said: "Yes, I'm done!"

"Then it's my turn to speak." Zhang Ye's voice turned cold. "You've never heard of referees getting attacked before? I've also never heard of such blatant and malicious decisions being made against the Chinese on the first day of the Olympics!"

Qi Yihai was stumped!

Zhang Ye said loudly: "The gold medal that was supposed to be ours was lost because of a malicious call by the referees, and we weren't even allowed to appeal or change their decision due to the regulations. So you all shouldn't be asking me whether I thought about the consequences! You all should be asking whether those referees thought about it!"

Zhang Ye's voice alarmed everyone in the studio.

Everyone looked over in shock as they listened to Zhang Ye talking to the official from the Organizing Committee.

Qi Yihai said: "We could've communicated and resolved this matter with the relevant associations. You can't just beat up people and try to be a hero!"

"I'm not trying to be a hero, nor am I a hero," Zhang Ye said in seriousness while holding his cell phone to his ear. "Look at the other Olympics and look at the Olympics that we're organizing. I don't know where the problem lies, and I don't know why our countrymen are so disliked by other countries, but how many 'mistaken calls' in the history of the Olympics were resolved? How many cases were given an explanation in the end? Negotiate? Protest? What's the use of that?! I can't control the things that happened in the past, but do you think I can just pretend not to see what happened in front of my eyes? I can't do that!"

Qi Yihai said in a low and serious voice: "Your leg has helped the common folk to vent their anger, but what about you? Look at how many people are criticizing you."

Ha Qiqi looked over.

Zhang Zuo and the others looked Zhang Ye in the eyes.

They heard Zhang Ye bluntly speak: "I'm fine with that. I've always believed that the people need an occasional hero and that someone would have to step forward when there's a need. I can be

the hero they need when one else is willing to do so. Even if being that 'hero' does not make me look good or causes me to get criticized for a lifetime, I'm fine with that, I'll...just accept it!"

When he heard that, Qi Yihai suddenly went quiet. He suddenly realized that he could not retort to that and even felt quite impressed.

You'll just accept it?

He knew how much that sentence from Zhang Ye meant!

Qi Yihai realized that they had acted like a clown regarding this matter!

Consequences?

Effects?

Responsibility?

Pressure from the public's opinion?

They were being too overly cautious and had too many considerations. Faced with Zhang Ye's "I'll just accept it," Qi Yihai could not say another a word!

After hanging up, Qi Yihai suddenly smiled.

He wanted to assuage the anger of the people even if it meant that he would be criticized for a lifetime?

So this was Zhang Ye?

Seeing was truly believing!

. . .

The next day.

The second day of the Olympics.

Early in the morning, Zhang Ye was already awake. Or rather, he did not sleep much at all. He went out early to buy breakfast for those who were still working overtime in the office.

"Come, let's have breakfast."

"Thank you, Director Zhang."

"Good morning, Director Zhang."

"You guys go ahead and eat breakfast. I need to get something done!"

Everyone had traces of tiredness on their faces.

Zhang Ye was touched by the sight but also felt bad. Because of his stubbornness, he had brought trouble to the people around him many times. Sometimes, even though Zhang Ye felt that he had a clear conscience about the things he did, he would feel somewhat apologetic whenever he thought of his friends, relatives, and colleagues around him.

The netizens were still arguing online!

The foreign media was still denouncing Zhang Ye!

Doubting voices were everywhere as all accusations got directed at Zhang Ye!

But at this moment, something happened that the local media and people could not have imagined. A sudden announcement shocked the world!

The Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games issued a statement: After a study of the regulations, the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games has decided to unilaterally overturn the rule of having no appeal process in the weightlifting event (only applicable to the Beijing Olympics).

After the Organizing Committee and the relevant international referees' associations held an emergency meeting, we have decided the Australian referee, Cooper, will be banned for life while the South Korean referee, Man Gyu, along with four other weightlifting referees will be suspended for two (2) years as punishment.

Accepted the appeal by the Chinese delegation with regards to the Men's 62 kg weightlifting event. After thorough communication and discussion, Li Jiaxi will be awarded the gold medal, with the North Korean athlete's medal changed to silver.

The three rulings shocked the entire world!

The Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games had made its move. This action stunned countless people!

The netizens were all stunned!

"What?"

"Holy shit!"

"This is too assertive! This is too fucking assertive!"

"Oh my god! Is this...is this true?"

"When have we ever been so assertive!"

"They unilaterally changed the regulations?"

"Li Jiaxi has been awarded the gold medal after the appeal went through?"

"The gold medal has been returned to the rightful champion?"

"Ahhhhhh!"

"Is that for real?"

"Holy shit! Holy shit! The Beijing Organizing Committee has handled this beautifully!"

"What is happening here? How could our Organizing Committee have possibly done something like that? Can someone tell me this is really happening? Am I dreaming or what?"

"Damn, I'm crying!"

"Me too, why can't I stop crying?"

"Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games, you are absolutely the best! You are so awesome!"

"Here's a Like for you from the people across the country! Well done!"

"I'm so excited that I don't know what to say!"

"Thank you! Thank you!"

"Thank you, Zhang Ye! Thank you, Beijing Organizing Committee!"

"You're all heroes! All of you!"

The Chinese weightlifting team was dumbfounded!

Li Jiaxi was crying tears of joy. He immediately posted on Weibo to thank his motherland!

Many of the Chinese athletes Liked the post!

Many of the coaches applauded and cheered!

Many of the citizens were simply in disbelief!

• • •

At Zhang Ye's Studio.

Ha Qiqi was stunned. "This...this!"

Zhang Zuo exclaimed, "What's going on?"

Zhang Ye was also stunned at what he was seeing. He did not expect this either.

A call came in. It was from Qi Yihai!

Zhang Ye hurriedly picked it up. "Hello, President Qi!"

Qi Yihai said smilingly: "Have you seen the statement?"

"Yes, holy shit! What are you all trying to do?" Zhang Ye asked dumbfoundedly.

Qi Yihai said: "What do you mean by what are we trying to do? You were the one who stirred this up first. After my call to you yesterday, I thought for a very long time. Then, I conveyed everything that you said to me word for word to the higher-ups in

a meeting. You saying that 'even if you get criticized for a lifetime, you'd just accept it' was enough to leave us unable to criticize you any further. Professor Zhang, we can also do what you were willing to do. Since you weren't afraid of getting criticized, then our Organizing Committee will not be afraid of getting criticized either! We're the Organizing Committee for the Beijing Olympics, so how can we allow our athletes to get bullied in an Olympics held in our own backyard, in our own country? You're right. Isn't it just about getting criticized? Isn't it just about being doubted by the world media? We're not afraid of that either! We also accept it! When the people need us, we can be that 'hero' too!"

Zhang Ye chuckled. "Thank you."

Qi Yihai shook his head and said: "No, we should be the ones thanking you. Anyway, both you and our Organizing Committee will now have to bear the blame for the rest of our lives. When people speak of the Beijing Olympics in the future, there will definitely be countless foreign media outlets calling this the darkest Olympic Games ever. Beating up referees? Unilaterally changing the regulations? Switching the medal results? I think we will probably be remembered and criticized by a lot of people for the rest of our lives. You better be mentally prepared for it."

But Zhang Ye belly laughed. "You all are the ones who should be mentally prepared. I've already been scolded by enough people to last three lifetimes for the things that I did in the past few years, so what am I afraid of?"

Qi Yihai was tickled. "That's true. A heavy debt would not burden you any further."

## Chapter 1173: The sports world's friendly attitude towards Zhang Ye!

The Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games had made an earth-shattering move. A public statement issued by them pushed the entire Beijing Olympics into the public's consciousness. Going by the regulations of this world, the Olympic organizer had the authority to make certain changes to the rules or mete out punishments as they deemed fit. But no one could have expected that they would really enforce it. Even the Americans in their role as the world police had never changed the rules in any of their Olympic events like this. Moreover, this change was even made to the advantage of China itself. This was what made it even more shocking for everyone!

Zhang Yuanqi gave a Like!

Yao Jiancai gave a Like!

Zhang Xia gave a Like too!

There were only cheers throughout the country!

Everyone was overjoyed with this decision!

"This should have been how it was!"

"Yeah, it should have been this way at the beginning!"

"Well changed and well punished!"

"Hahaha, banned for life? Well done!"

"Let's see who still dares to deliberately target us during our Olympics!"

"This is such an important statement! I never expected that our country would do such a shocking thing! Even now, I can't believe this is happening!"

"It happened!"

"It really happened!"

Cheering?

Jumping in joy?

Just these words alone were unable to describe the current feelings of the Chinese people. After suppressing their pent-up anger for a day, they could finally vent it all. They were all flowing with happiness from head to toe! When they were faced with such incorrect calls and deliberate malicious decisions in the past, there was nothing they could do about it. Other than protesting, it was still only protesting. Then what? After that, everything would remain the same. The protests did not change anything. But this time, they were the organizers of the Olympics in Beijing. As the saying goes, every dog has its day. The wheel of fortune keeps on turning. Now that it was China's turn to hold the Olympics, the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games used a world-shocking public statement to inform everyone: This is our take on things!

They could feel a sense of pride!

But at the same time, the foreign media started criticizing the actions!

The English media: "What? What is happening?"

The American media: "The Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games has made a shocking and unacceptable decision!"

The South Korean media: "Strongly protesting the organizers for siding with their own people!"

The Japanese media: "Unbelievable! This is the darkest moment in the history of the Olympics!"

The Australian media: "Banned for life? Changing the medal results?"

People across the world also reacted fiercely!

Especially those in Australia, South Korea, and several other countries!

The Australians.

"Shit cunts!"

"The Chinese are too despicable!"

"How can they handle things this way!"

"Where's the sportsmanship? Where's the Olympic spirit?"

"Unilaterally changing the regulations, an action like this is just too despicable!"

The South Koreans.

"They skipped over the referees and changed the gold medal winner?"

"How could they suspend our weightlifting referee!"

"I'm so mad about this!"

"The Chinese decision has made us furious!"

"It's a conspiracy!"

The Canadians.

"They're abusing their authority to benefit themselves!"

"This decision has an even more negative impact than the referees getting beaten up!"

"What are the Olympics organizers doing!"

"I strongly object to this!"

"This decision is a joke!"

The foreign media and citizens were scolding as well! There was no longer much attention given to the referees being injured in the Olympic venue. The focus of the public's opinion had turned to the statement issued by the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games. Everyone was now discussing and questioning the

action it took!

Many of the foreign Olympic delegations and athletes were having none of it as they protested to the International Olympic Committee. The athletes from the Australian delegation were the fiercest in leading the protest and even threatened to collectively withdraw from the Games. Perhaps due to pressure or some other motives, the International Olympic Committee also came forward to declare: "Regarding the organizer's unilateral decision, we hereby express our puzzledness and condemnation of their actions!

When many of the countries' delegations had this statement from the International Olympic Committee to back them up, their criticism became even louder!

However, the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games ignored them and did not withdraw their statement. They even held the make up medal ceremony for the Men's 62 kg weightlifting event the next day before the Olympic events began. In the presence of the media reporters from every country, the Chinese athlete, Li Jiaxi, was awarded the gold medal. Faced with all kinds of pressure from the public's opinion, the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games still went about doing things their way. The officials from the Organizing Committee also clearly indicated to the media present that their decision would remain unchanged!

Their decision was set in stone!

Everyone was left helpless by the Beijing Organizing Committee's forceful stance. As they were not the organizers, it did not matter how much they protested or cursed. The final decision on this issue was still up to the organizer at the end!

The Olympics would still continue!

The competition would still go on!

And the Australian delegation was definitely not going to back

out from the Games either!

• • •

That afternoon.

Zhang Ye was humming the song "Beijing Welcomes You" as he walked into the Olympic venue. He was here to return the work pass that he was given previously and to settle the issue of the "accident" involving the referees.

The events held in the morning had already ended while the events scheduled for the afternoon had not begun yet.

Some of the foreign athletes were warming up and practicing. When they saw Zhang Ye, many of them could recognize him!

"Look!"

"It's him!"

"Goddammit!"

"I really want to teach him a lesson!"

A large, muscular Australian swimmer angrily at Zhang Ye. He looked like he wanted to charge at him but was stopped by his teammates!

A group of foreign referees were also glowering at Zhang Ye!

It looked like they were trying to put on a show of force against Zhang Ye?

Zhang Ye ignored them as he slowly walked over.

The Australian and South Korean swim referees continued to stare at him!

Zhang Ye glanced at them and was kind of irritated by their stares. When he walked past them, he suddenly stopped in his tracks and stretched out his leg!

The foreign referees were given a huge scare as they jumped away in fright as though they had gotten their tails stepped on.

Everyone saw the video yesterday and had a deep impression of Zhang Ye's "Leg of God." When they saw him stretching out his leg again, they were just like birds getting startled by the mere twang of a bow 1! One of the Australian swim referees even tripped over his own feet and fell to the floor!

"What are you doing?"

The referees all looked infuriated!

However, Zhang Ye lowered his head and knelt down to adjust his shoelaces before getting up to walk away.

Tying his shoelaces?

The foreign referees nearly vomited blood. They knew that he did this on purpose and were furious. At the same time, they felt a little embarrassed. He was only tying his shoelaces and did not do anything to them, but they were so scared they nearly shat their pants, with one person even falling to the ground!

Fuck!

This person was too wicked!

Many athletes and referees looked at Zhang Ye and gnashed their teeth in hatred!

How could Lillian, the most beautiful woman in Britain, have performed on the same stage with such a hooligan!

Not far away off in front of him, many Chinese athletes and coaches came face to face with him. When they saw Zhang Ye, they were a little stunned!

Zhang Ye noticed them as well.

Some of them were from the swim team?

Some of them were from the diving team?

Zhang Ye did not say anything and just walked over. He had been locked in a fierce struggle with the sports world during the

scolding battle back then. As so many of the athletes and coaches were scolded by him at that time, the relationship between the two sides has always been poor. When Zhang Ye was appointed to perform in the Olympics opening ceremony, many of those from the sports world had protested against it. That was why Zhang Ye did not plan on greeting them. He just pretended not see them as he walked past.

But even though he ignored them, they said something!

A female swimmer smiled as she waved to him. "Professor Zhang."

Zhang Ye was stunned and instinctively replied, "Hey."

Beside her, a diving coach warmly nodded his head at him. "Good afternoon, Teacher Zhang."

"Ah, good afternoon," Zhang Ye said dumbfounded.

"Where are you heading?"

"The police asked me to come and settle yesterday's matter."

"Will you be alright?"

"Hur hur, I'll be fine."

Along the way, as long as a Chinese athlete or coach encountered Zhang Ye, they would greet and acknowledge him. There were even some very enthusiastic athletes who came over to make small talk with him.

Zhang Ye was really unprepared for this.

It seemed like the domestic sports world had suddenly changed their attitude towards him overnight!

## Chapter 1174: Zhang Ye's Olympic commentary!

On the fourth day of the Olympics.

After three days of scolding by all the different parties, the issue began to subside.

Zhang Ye, who was sleeping in late, finally woke up at 11 AM. After he got up, he went straight out to the living room and saw his parents watching the Olympics on TV.

"Dad, Mom, how many do we have?"

"We just got another one today."

"And in total?"

"Six gold medals."

"That's not much, is it?"

"Yeah, the performance this year is just average. We threw away our chances in several of the events."

"Hai."

"Do you want to eat something?"

"No, I'm going back to the studio to have a look."

"Oh yes, the swimming finals will be happening in a few days. Get us a few extra tickets."

"Uh, I'll try."

Noon.

At Zhang Ye's studio, everyone was busy working.

When Zhang Ye arrived, Zhang Zuo, smiling, came to him with several documents for him and discussed the work that had been done over the past few days. "Director Zhang, the issue of you tripping the referees has more or less been resolved. The police

pretty much leaned toward our side and have already settled it for us. The suspended referees have also returned home and did not make any comments regarding the incident. We were lucky the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games issued that statement this time. That diverted away all of the heat on you and subsequently lightened the impact of the incident."

Zhang Ye browsed through the documents. "Good."

Zhang Zuo pointed at it and said, "This is your popularity score curve over the past few days. Your domestic popularity score has increased by quite a bit again. Although you're still in first place on the A-list rankings, your popularity score has been rising very quickly. This chart over here shows your Asian celebrity ranking, where you've also experienced an increase in your score. We've analyzed the main reason for this to be because of a large number of people around Asia who got to know about you through that incident. Regarding your international ranking, as they only publish data for celebrities who are at least an international Clister, we can't find out more. But according to our analysis, it is definitely trending up as well. If your popularity in the country and Asia constantly keeps rising, there's no reason why there wouldn't be any changes in the international rankings. But for now, there's no indication of that. In summary, the situation for you now is pretty good overall. Not only did you not get burnt this time, you even increased your visibility on the international scene. I guess we can still consider that a blessing. The only issue is your reputation. I don't think we can really turn that around in the short term."

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Alright, I got it."

Little Wang also came over. "Director Zhang, these are invitations to collaborate on projects that we've received in the past few days."

"OK, let me have a look at them." Zhang Ye went through them.

Having a team was really very efficient. There was always going to be someone around to help him deal with things like popularity analysis and project negotiations. This saved Zhang Ye a lot of worry and greatly improved his work productivity.

Ha Qiqi came down from upstairs. "What project would you like to take on next?"

"I haven't thought of it yet." Zhang Ye smiled and said, "What do you guys suggest?"

Ha Qiqi and Zhang Zuo gave each other a look.

Ha Qiqi said, "We had a discussion about this, actually. During these two weeks the Olympics are held, anything we try to do will probably end up being insignificant. Nothing can take attention away from the Olympics, after all."

Zhang Zuo said, "Why don't we accept some advertisement campaigns related to the Olympics then? We can earn some money from that and also rub off a little on the Olympics hype."

Zhang Ye threw his hands up and said, "Have you guys been watching any TV lately? The ad campaigns have all gone to the athletes. Their contracts were probably negotiated several months in advance, so do you think that there will be anything left for me? After all, I'm not an athlete, so I'm not really going to have a chance. We should think of something else."

Wu Yi said, "How about producing a new show? That's our rice bowl, after all."

Zhang Ye asked, "What offers do we have?"

Wu Yi said, "Only a few not so popular satellite channels approached us. But after we took a look at their proposals, we didn't find them to be too ideal."

Little Wang giggled and said, "Director Zhang, how about releasing a new song? We can shoot a music video to try for the charts and help increase your popularity. I really like your songs. They're all so good!"

Produce a show?

Shoot a music video?

Hold a concert?

Take on an acting project?

Do an advertisement campaign?

Everyone was throwing out all kinds of ideas onto the table.

But Zhang Ye still did not make a decision. He always had very high standards for the kind of work he would take, so there were more considerations he had to think about. An athlete had a limited sporting lifespan, and their peak when they were in their best physical and competitive state would only last a few years. This was the same for a celebrity too. He always believed that there was a time for everything. If he waited until he was older and missed the opportunity, he wouldn't be able to do those things again even if he wanted to. For example, when he did Ghost Blows Out the Light on radio in the past, the audience were all very receptive to it and all of them only had praise for the program. But if Zhang Ye spent another one or two months doing nothing but telling supernatural ghost stories on radio nowadays, that would obviously not work out and the audience would probably not look forward to it either—this was what it meant by "a time and place for everything." So he always considered every job offer that he received very carefully as he wanted to ensure that he would be able to provide as much variety to the audience as he could give.

So what could he do during this Olympic period?

Or should he wait until the Olympic Games were over to decide?

While he was thinking about it, the doorbell suddenly rang.

Little Wang went to answer the door. "Eh, Teacher Yu?"

The visitor was Zhang Ye's old classmate, and a current host at

Central TV Sports Channel, Yu Yingyi.

"Hi." Yu Yingyi waved and smiled.

The studio staff were also very friendly toward her. All of them knew that she was Director Zhang's good friend and classmate from his university days, so they wouldn't treat her like they would treat a client.

Little Wang went to pour some tea for her.

Zhang Ye beckoned for her to take a seat. "What brings you here today?"

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "I just came to visit my old classmate. Am I not welcome?"

"How could that be? Since I have nothing much to do anyway, why don't we chat over a drink? Beer or Chardonnay? Merlot or whiskey? I have everything here," Zhang Ye said joyfully.

Yu Yingyi rolled her eyes. "Who wants to day drink with you? I'm here for business. I still have commentary to do when I get back in the afternoon. It's the Olympics period. Do you really think that I'm that free?"

Zhang Ye knew that she'd come with an agenda. "Tell me about it then, I'm listening."

Little Wang brought the tea over.

Yu Yingyi was not bothered that the tea was still hot. She brought the teacup up to her mouth and blew at it before drinking. After she put the teacup down, she looked at Zhang Ye. "Didn't you say you have nothing much to do these days?"

Zhang Ye blinked. "Yeah, why?"

Yu Yingyi smiled. "I have an offer, do you want to accept it?"

Zhang Ye chuckled. "Tell me about it first and I'll consider it."

"Look at how careful you're being." Yu Yingyi giggled. "Would I

try to harm you? It's definitely something good. Why don't you promise me first and I'll tell you more about it."

Zhang Ye curled his lips. "I can't do that."

Yu Yingyi grumbled, "If you don't promise me first, I won't tell you about it."

Zhang Ye gestured to the outside of the reception room. "Little Wang, please see our guest out."

Yu Yingyi got anxious. "Heh, are you really going to chase me out like this? Alright, alright, I'll tell you."

Zhang Ye smiled but did not say anything.

Yu Yingyi's next words stunned him!

Yu Yingyi looked at him, "Do you want to become an Olympic commentator?"

"Don't joke." Zhang Ye waved her off.

"What do you mean by joking?" Yu Yingyi said, "It's true. Central TV Sports Channel has suddenly decided to recruit an outside host and commentator. Do you want to take the role?"

Zhang Ye was startled. "Are you serious?"

"Why would I lie to you?" Yu Yingyi gave him a look.

Zhang Ye was quite happy. "This sounds like an interesting job, but why did you guys decide to approach me?"

Yu Yingyi said, "Because you're really popular at the moment."

Zhang Ye said, "But my relationship with Central TV is not good."

"I don't care about that. This time, it's Central TV Sports Channel that's inviting you to join us. Whatever fight and disagreements you have with Central TV Department 1 and the station heads have nothing to do with us, right? When you were battling against PeterGo, our department was giving you the most positive of coverage and promoting you throughout the entire event. We

don't have any enmity with you and also did not take part in the scolding battle against you with Department 1, right?" Yu Yingyi said.

Zhang Ye shrugged. "I don't remember that."

Yu Yingyi didn't know how to respond.

Zhang Ye looked at her. "Are your guys' viewership ratings doing badly?"

Yu Yingyi became very embarrassed. "How did you know?"

"If the viewership rating goals had been met, how could the Sports Channel possibly risk inviting me to join as a host? You have to know, my reputation has never been good before, and it's even worse at Central TV." Zhang Ye understood the situation very clearly. "Was it due to the gold medal tally being too low in recent days that led to the viewership ratings dropping?"

Yu Yingyi gave a bitter laugh. "Dropping? The viewership rating for our live coverage on the first day was over 40% and even reached a high of 50%. Later on, after the fuss that you kicked up, and with the statement issued by the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games, a lot of the subsidiary news had stolen away the attention from our coverage. Coupled with the decreased amount of gold medals and Team China performing below average, the viewership ratings plummeted. Do you know what the internal estimates for today's ratings are? The off-peak viewership rating went as low as 25%! And the peak estimate was only 37%!"

Zhang Ye said, "That's not too bad then. A Bite of China and The Voice only managed how much in the nationwide viewership ratings? It's at most 10% of what you guys are getting!"

"But this is the Olympics." Yu Yingyi said angrily, "It's even the Beijing Olympics, so how can you compare it with those reality shows? It would definitely be much higher rated than your shows."

She then took out a contract.

Yu Yingyi pushed it to him. "Have a look at the contract that we prepared for you."

Zhang Ye said with a laugh, "I'm too lazy to flip through all that. Just tell me, what do you guys expect from me?"

Yu Yingyi said, "Nothing much. As long as you're willing to join us, everything can be discussed. What the station wants now is for our channel to increase the ratings. During the commentary, you can freely express yourself as you like as long as it's within certain limits, just don't go beyond the boundaries. We're just about ten days away from the closing ceremony. You'll be paired as my partner, and there might also be retired athletes or coaches joining us for the commentary segments. We'll be in charge of the show every day from 1 to 4 PM. All the other time slots will be handled by the other commentary teams. We won't have to worry about those, so the actual working time isn't really that much on average."

Zhang Ye asked, "Where will we be working from?"

Yu Yingyi said, "At the live coverage studio in the Olympic grounds."

Zhang Ye asked, "When do I start?"

Yu Yingyi said, "Tomorrow."

Zhang Ye nodded. Then he looked through the glass partition and clapped his hands.

Little Wang came into the room and said, "Director Zhang?"

"Get me a pen," Zhang Ye said.

"OK." Little Wang brought one over very quickly.

Zhang Ye lowered his head and signed the contract. Then he pushed it back to Yu Yingyi with a smile. "Is that all?"

Yu Yingyi took the contract. "Aren't you at least going to read it?"

Zhang Ye said, "I trust you well enough, don't I?"

"Alright, I get it. I better hurry back and let them know about this." Yu Yingyi smiled happily and said, "Come over early tomorrow. I'll familiarize you."

Zhang Ye said feeling amused, "Do I really need to be? When I started doing live broadcasts, you hadn't even joined Central TV."

"Whoa." Yu Yingyi quipped, "This young man talks really big. Let's see what you're capable of tomorrow then."

After she left, Zhang Ye also came out of the reception room.

Little Wang had obviously let everyone else know about the contract.

Ha Qiqi quickly asked, "Director Zhang, what's going on?"

"What is that contract about?" Zhang Zuo asked in a startled manner.

Everyone crowded around him.

Zhang Ye calmly explained, "Oh, Central TV Sports Channel has invited me to take part in their live coverage for the Olympics as a host and commentator. I'll be starting work tomorrow."

Everyone screamed excitedly!

Ha Qiqi said in surprise, "What?"

Zhang Zuo said, "Such a good deal exists?"

"This is great, this is great!" Little Wang said joyfully.

Zhang Ye also laughed. "Yeah, so how can I not take this job, right?"

Earlier, he was thinking about what he wanted to do next. But there was no need to think anymore. During the Olympics, nothing would garner more attention than the Olympics itself. The live coverage of the Olympics on Central TV Sports Channel was a show that had the craziest viewership ratings compared to any other show!

He had put in so much work for The Voice, and what was its nationwide viewership ratings? At most 2% or so! At most 2% or so!

He had given so much effort for A Bite of China, and what was its nationwide viewership ratings? At most 3% or so!

But for the live coverage of the Olympics?

The nationwide viewership ratings would easily start off with at least 30% as the base ratings and it could get even higher than that. This was not even comparable to what he had achieved so far, so he definitely had to take this job. Furthermore, he would treat it very seriously and put in the effort to make sure it worked. If he could do well here, it would probably help boost his domestic popularity rankings by a very great deal. Besides, as Zhang Ye had never done any sports commentary before, he really liked the idea of having a fresh challenge. Regarding this point, the citizens were also very receptive to it. It was as though everyone really enjoyed watching Zhang Ye cross over into all the various types of professions!

## Chapter 1175: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 1 of 5)

The next day.

It was the fifth day of the Olympics.

Zhang Ye practically pulled an all-nighter by himself in the studio to research his new role for today. He had listened to commentary for an event from the last Olympics while his desk was littered with all kinds of information, such as the detailed schedules and rules of each event, the referees' judging criteria, the world records for the events, the athletes' best results, the likelihood of someone winning a medal, etc. Zhang Ye had spent the entire night going through the thick stack of information prepared for him by his staff. If one wanted to go on a live broadcast to commentate the Olympics, it wouldn't be possible without a foundation. Zhang Ye knew that he had to at least do some basic research to be ready for it. Since he accepted the job, he wouldn't go into it without making preparations.

The phone rang.

It was his mother. "You didn't come home yesterday night?"

Zhang Ye said: "Ah, I was kept busy at the office."

His mother asked: "Why didn't you call then? Are you coming back later?"

"Probably at night. I have some work to handle during the day." Zhang Ye said with a laugh: "Oh, mom, remember to watch the Olympics live coverage this afternoon at 1. Let Dad know too."

His mother wondered: "What for?"

Zhang Ye said: "Haha, you'll know after watching."

In the morning, the official Weibo of Zhang Ye's Studio also posted an announcement.

@ZhangYeStudio: "Everyone, please remember to catch the live coverage of the Olympics this afternoon at 1 PM. There will be a surprise in store."

The netizens were also unsure of what this meant.

"The Olympics live coverage?"

"What surprise?"

"I don't understand. What do they mean?"

"Are they doing a promotion for the Olympics? I heard that Central TV Sports Channel's viewership ratings these days have dropped a lot. Several key people at Central TV are panicking, and the hosts are also reminding everyone to pay more attention to the developments of the Olympic Games. After all, this is the first time our country is hosting it. It wouldn't look nice if the ratings are too low."

"Ai, that's because our performance this year isn't that good."

"Yeah, I didn't really pay much attention to it."

"I'm still watching. No matter how badly they're performing, I'll support our athletes!"

"I wonder what Zhang Ye's Studio is hinting with that announcement?"

Everyone felt rather confused.

Just before noon.

In the Olympic grounds.

Zhang Ye arrived at Central TV's live coverage studio. The morning's events had ended and there was a short break at noon. The staff were all eating box lunches, with some of them eating and reading their transcripts simultaneously as they prepared for the afternoon's events.

"Yingyi," Zhang Ye greeted.

Yu Yingyi lightly pushed aside her box lunch and looked up. "You're here? Have you eaten?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Not yet."

Yu Yingyi immediately called out, "Get Teacher Zhang some food too."

A staff member quickly brought over a box lunch for him.

"Thanks." Zhang Ye didn't say anything else and immediately pulled over a chair to sit down. Then he began eating with relish.

When a lot of the people in the studio saw Zhang Ye, they gave him several more looks as it was their first time meeting a legendary figure like him.

Yu Yingyi also gave him a look. "You're such a big shot. Why are you still eating box lunches like the rest of us?

Zhang Ye was amused and waved around the box in his hands. "Why can't I eat this? The food provided here is already quite good. Back when I was filming on location for A Bite of China, we didn't even get something like this. We were always freeloading off of the locals, and those millet pancakes were so hard to chew that we couldn't even get them down our throats with water, hur hur. If you think that this box lunch is bad, you guys would probably have starved to death if you went along with us for those shoots."

Yu Yingyi laughed. "I always thought that you led a pampered life."

"Oh, come on." Zhang Ye said with a laugh, "I've only been going through hardship all these years."

At this time, the executives of the Central TV Sports Channel arrived.

One of the executives said pleasantly and cheerfully, "Teacher Zhang, we're depending on you this time."

Zhang Ye held the box lunch in his left hand and extended his

right to shake hands with the executive.

Then they had a simple exchange regarding the later work matters.

The executive asked, "Has Little Yu briefed you yet? Are you familiar with the requirements of your role?"

Zhang Ye replied, "More or less."

Another executive said nervously, "Don't take it so lightly, Teacher Zhang. We're depending on you to help increase the viewership ratings. You've never done any sports hosting before, so you'll be lacking much of the foundation." He quickly took out a large stack of documents. "This is an overview of the events taking place this afternoon and the related information. There's a list of who the previous gold medalists were and what the best records for each event are. It's all written in here. Please take a look so that you won't get it wrong later."

Zhang Ye took the documents from him and flipped through them. Then he returned them to him and said, "There's no need for these. I've already memorized all of the information and statistics related to the Olympics."

Yu Yingyi was taken aback. "How did you memorize it?"

"I just did." Zhang Ye said, "In all the time that I've done hosting, I've never needed a script."

The people around also looked at Zhang Ye in disbelief. Everyone in Central TV knew that Zhang Ye had never depended on using scripts before, but this was not exactly like the shows he'd done in the past. This was live coverage for the Olympics, and it involved a great amount of statistics that were just too detailed to be memorized. And then, there were a whole lot of foreign names involved, so who could possibly remember all of that information? Not even a professional sports commentator like Yu Yingyi could do it!

Yu Yingyi asked in distrust, "Who is the world record holder for the Women's Hammer Throw?"

"Irina."

"And the distance?"

"81.05 meters."

"Who had the best result in the Men's Pole Vault this year?"

"Robert, with a height of 6.1 meters."

"In the Women's Balance Beam, who is ranked eleventh in the world?"

"Japanese athlete Toyama Yoko."

Someone quickly went to check in disbelief!

"Eleventh?"

"Who is it?"

"Holy shit!"

"It's really Toyama Yoko!"

Only silence could be heard.

Then, Yu Yingyi cried out, "You've really memorized everything?"

Everyone looked at Zhang Ye like they had seen a ghost. Him memorizing the world record holders or the best results of the year was acceptable. That was because those disciplines were some of the most popular and anticipated events. But how the fuck did he remember so clearly who the world number eleven was in the balance beam? How could this memory of yours be so good!

Zhang Ye simply shrugged and finished up the last bit of his lunch. "What did you think I was doing spending the entire night awake? I am a professional host, so don't doubt the foundations of my professionalism."

Yu Yingyi didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "But aren't you being way too professional like this! Does that mean that I'm just an amateur?"

Everyone here was utterly convinced!

The executive gave him a thumbs up. "Professor Zhang is indeed worthy of his reputation. He is indeed the smartest person to come along in a century. I've truly broadened my horizons today. We were still worried that you would be unfamiliar with doing live coverage for sports, but it seems like we were worried for nothing. You're truly such a great professional! Amazing!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Don't say that. I'm just performing my duty so that I can get paid. Since I've already accepted the role, I'll definitely want to do it well. Don't worry about it. If you guys have any suggestions, you can mention them to me as well."

The executive nodded and said, "We might have been covering the Olympics too traditionally, too old-fashioned, too outdated. The expectations of the audience these days are getting higher and higher, so the things they like are different from the past. We've analyzed that other than our country's delegation not performing to their potential, those factors are also part of the reason why the viewership ratings kept dropping. We've invited you this time as we also wish to make some changes and implement some new ideas to the commentary."

Zhang Ye nodded in acknowledgment. "I understand."

By appointing Zhang Ye as an Olympic commentator, the Central TV Sports Channel was taking an enormous risk. They had discussed it for an entire day during their meeting before finally making this decision! This was a very bold attempt, but what would it lead to? Nobody knew!

# Chapter 1176: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 2 of 5)

At noon.

Everything was set up and ready in the live coverage studio.

The professional athlete invited by the Central TV Sports Channel had arrived. It was the former <u>table tennis Grand Slam</u> winner—Bao Han. She had been retired for many years.

"Sister Bao." Yu Yingyi nodded at her.

Bao Han smiled and said, "Teacher Yu."

The two of them had commentated together many times and were very familiar with each other.

But when Bao Han saw that there was another person sitting in the live coverage studio, she was taken aback for a moment. She clearly knew who he was because it was just impossible not to know him. In all of China, who did not know the famous Zhang Ye? But it was obvious that Bao Han had not expected Zhang Ye to be here today. The retired athletes who appeared on the show to provide commentary were usually only participating as guests. Sometimes, it would be her, sometimes it would be other people, and there was also a chance that they would make a last-minute switch. This lineup was often not fixed, so she didn't know about the changes to the internal arrangements of Central TV Sports Channel's commentators and other affairs. It was also likely that Central TV Sports Channel had not informed her beforehand due to the awkwardness surrounding the situation. After all, the table tennis team was the cause of the battle between Zhang Ye and the sports world that had shocked the nation.

Zhang Ye nodded at her.

Yu Yingyi quickly said, "The three of us will be teaming up for today's show."

Bao Han acknowledged her and looked at Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye looked back at her.

Bao Han smiled and went forward with hand reached out. "Hello, Professor Zhang."

"Hello." Zhang Ye stood up to shake her hand. "There's still about half an hour before we go live. Shall we get to know each other a little first? That will help us work better later."

Bao Han said, "I already know you pretty well."

Zhang Ye was surprised. "Oh, are you?"

"Yes, we have argued on Weibo before," Bao Han said with a smile.

Zhang Ye said, "Ah? Did we?"

Yu Yingyi was taking a sip of water and nearly choked. "Cough, cough!"

Bao Han said helplessly, "Yes, we did. When you declared war on the sports world during the new year, a few hundred of us responded and scolded you back. But as it was, none of us could outscold you at all. That's why I said it's not our first time interacting. You don't even know how aggravated we were over that matter at the time. But we shouldn't bring that up again and just let bygones be bygones. Just for that 'Leg of God' that you 'played' on the first day of the Olympics, we'll write off all the unpleasantness from before. That trip of the referee was such a release! You've scolded us once, but also taken the blame for us once, so that makes us even." Only now that she realized they were in the studio, so she asked, "Ah, the cameras are not recording this, are they?"

The camera operator laughed and said, "No."

Bao Han wasn't good-looking, but her temperament was rather interesting.

Yu Yingyi was really afraid that the two would come to blows, but it looked like she had been worried for nothing.

"Then shall we go through the script together?"

"OK."

The two women exchanged whispers with each other.

Zhang Ye did not take part in the exchange since he did not have any lines.

• • •

It was almost time.

Zhang Ye's mother turned on the television. "It's starting."

His father said, "What did our son mean by that?"

"Who knows? He only said to watch the Olympic live coverage in the afternoon, that's all," his mother said.

His father nodded. "Then let's just watch it."

• • •

At Old Yao's house.

Yao Mi shouted, "It's starting, it's starting!"

Yao Jiancai asked, "What's on in the afternoon?"

"Ping pong. It's the women's quarterfinals match," Yao Mi said.

Old Yao's wife said, "Oh, that's not interesting. It's a guaranteed win."

"But we still have to watch it." Yao Mi said, "That's the result everyone is expecting as well. But if no one watches it, then how bad would the viewership ratings for the Beijing Olympics be?"

Yao Jiancai said in amusement, "Alright, let's watch!"

• • •

Zhang Ye's first uncle's house.

The fall semester hadn't started yet, so the three sisters had gathered here.

"Wow, it's starting."

"Time to watch the Olympics!"

"It's the table tennis event today."

. . .

Meanwhile.

A lot of others had also turned on their televisions.

Some people were watching the live coverage on their cell phones in the subway.

Some people had secretly launched their web browsers to watch the Olympics at work.

But of course, there were also many others who did not really pay attention to today's events. They did not think that would be any surprises, and since it wasn't the finals yet, there was less attention given to it.

The live coverage began!

After the introductory music played, the cameras cut to the live coverage studio.

Yu Yingyi appeared on screen. "Welcome, everyone, to the Olympics live coverage studio. I am Yu Yingyi, and the women's table tennis quarterfinals match will be starting in five minutes. The match will be between the current world number two, China's Sun Linlin, and the current world number thirteen, Japan's Kaki Aoi."

The opening commentary did not seem any different than before.

But with the following introduction, all of the viewers watching TV burst into an uproar!

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "First, let us introduce today's guest

that everyone should know, Bao Han."

The camera cut to her.

Bao Han waved. "Hello, everyone."

Then Yu Yingyi said, "Next up, we have a new guest commentator who will be joining me to cover the Olympics live from today onwards, the famous host—Zhang Ye."

The camera cut to him.

Zhang Ye's smiling face appeared. "Hello to our viewers and friends."

His mother pointed at the television dumbfounded. "Little Ye!"

His father was stunned. "It's Little Ye!"

His eldest younger sister exclaimed, "Ah!"

His third sister shouted, "It's Brother! Brother's on TV!"

Yao Jiancai said, "What?"

Yao Mi got extremely excited. "Teacher Zhang has become an Olympic commentator?"

Old Yao's wife sat down. "This will be interesting! I'll watch as well!"

Everyone on the Internet went crazy as well!

"How could this be?"

"Damn, did I see that wrong?"

"How did Zhang Ye go and become a commentator?"

"Well, he's already a host to begin with!"

"But this is sports commentary we're talking about. He has no experience in this!"

"Isn't he on very bad terms with the sports world? Why did they invite him onto the show? And he's even going to commentate on table tennis?"

"This looks like it's going to be really interesting!"

"Everyone, quickly come and watch. Zhang Ye is going to commentate for the Olympics, my God!"

"Are you serious?"

"Yeah! It's true! The live coverage is happening right now!"

"No wonder Zhang Ye's Studio sent out a Weibo post like that!"

"Teacher Zhang has a new job!"

"This is a huge job! How surprising!"

"Damn, quickly go and watch!"

"It's starting, it's starting!"

"We must watch it just because Zhang Ye's on it!"

The news spread from there like wildfire.

The media was surprised!

The netizens were surprised!

Everyone was astonished, bewildered, confounded by Zhang Ye's appearance!

A lot of people who weren't intending to watch the afternoon match were now turning on their televisions at the same time. This was the appeal that an A-list celebrity had. Without needing to say anything, just by showing themselves or having their names mentioned, it would be able to attract countless sets of eyeballs. This was one of the reasons why Central TV Sports Channel had taken the risk to invite Zhang Ye to commentate for them. An A-list celebrity like this always meant a high viewership rating! But of course, whether they could hold the viewers' interest and retain them by keeping them watching would have to depend on the ability of the commentator.

The attention that the live coverage was getting soared!

Everyone wanted to see how Zhang Ye's commentary would be

different from others'!

In fact, even the staff of the Central TV Sports Channel wanted to know. The few executives and most of the staff along with the camera operators were all eagerly paying attention to the live coverage studio.

The cameras cut to the competition venue.

Yu Yingyi said, "Alright, the match has started."

Bao Han said, "Seems like Sun Linlin's form today will be pretty good."

"Is that so?" Zhang Ye asked.

Bao Han said, "Yes, she looks very excited for today's game, and her body is quite relaxed as well."

Zhang Ye said, "Then let's wait and see."

1-0.

5-0.

7-1.

11-2.

Sun Linlin used just four minutes to take the first game!

It was too fast!

It was too easy!

Yu Yingyi said, "Great showing!"

Bao Han smiled and said, "Sun Linlin's form is in great shape."

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "This is my first time commentating and I was prepared to do this for at least an hour. But why does it look like the match will be decided in 20 minutes?"

Yu Yingyi smiled. "There are practically no opponents who are a match for the Chinese table tennis team nowadays."

But Zhang Ye said, "They definitely still have opponents."

"Eh?" Yu Yingyi was startled. "There are still opponents?"

Japan?

South Korea?

Bao Han also gave Zhang Ye a look as she wondered what he was going to say.

Zhang Ye looked at them curiously and said, "Isn't it quite obvious? The Chinese table tennis team only has one opponent, the ITTF. From the minimum height of the ball toss, to the red and black sides of a racket, then changing the size of the ball, and the change from the 21-point to 11-point scoring system, all of those were introduced to make it more difficult for the Chinese team to win. But it doesn't seem like any of those changes were effective. I wonder what the ITTF will try to pull off next."

Bao Han laughed. "Pfft!"

Yu Yingyi was tickled pink as well.

The home viewers.

"Hahaha!"

"The only opponent they have is the ITTF?"

"I'm cramping up from laughing!"

"As a comedian, this guy is too professional!"

The second game began.

Yu Yingyi said, "Sun Linlin will be serving."

"It's no good, she faulted." Bao Han said, "The quality of this service was not good."

Kaki Aoi scored a point with the return serve.

However, Zhang Ye loudly applauded. "Beautiful!"

Bao Han was floored. "Ah?"

Yu Yingyi asked in surprise, "Teacher Zhang, whose side are you

on?"

Zhang Ye said, "Of course I'm with Team China."

"Then why are you applauding and calling it beautiful when the other team scored a point?" Yu Yingyi said in a speechless manner.

Zhang Ye's reply left everyone speechless. "It's exactly because of that I'm hoping for our Chinese team to drop a few more points. That would give the other countries' athletes the illusion that they have a chance of winning against us. Otherwise, if we keep playing like this, I'll be afraid that table tennis might get removed from future Olympics!"

The camera operator cramped up in laughter!

Bao Han laughed out loud on camera!

The viewers were also roaring with laughter!

"Hahaha!"

"I've got to give it to this fella!"

"What a joker!"

"Is it alright to commentate this way?"

Before long, the match was brought to an end.

Sun Linlin was victorious and raised her racket in celebration!

Bao Han said, "Linlin looks very happy with her performance."

Zhang Ye added, "Yes, but she's actually not feeling happy about it. She's just acting like she is. Otherwise, that would make her opponent look really bad. Sun Linlin is an excellent athlete and knows how to be considerate to her opponent. I guess that's what you'd call Olympic spirit and good sportsmanship. Today, everyone should know of this athlete named Sun Linlin. This act of celebration with her racket in the air is really too touching!"

Bao Han: "..."

Yu Yingyi: "..."

She was truly happy about her performance, alright?

When did she ever mean it the way you described!

Touching? Your sister!

Where the heck are you getting that idea from!

A Grand Slam is earned by a player who wins singles crowns at the Olympic Games, World Championships, and World Cup.

International Table Tennis Federation

## Chapter 1177: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 3 of 5)

Later that afternoon.

In the table tennis stadium.

Sun Linlin was wiping off her sweat when her teammates and coaches surrounded her.

A teammate said, "Good showing!"

Sun Linlin said confidently, "I just played like I normally would."

The women's team head coach laughed and said, "Linlin, you're going viral!"

Sun Linlin said in a stunned manner, "Huh? How can that be?"

"You're really going viral!" Her teammates also laughed loudly.

"Hah? But it's just the quarterfinals, not the finals!" Sun Linlin was very confused. What did they mean by she was going viral? I've won the championship many times, but I've never gone viral all those times. Table tennis had always been a strong event for China, so winning first place was always expected. The people were so used to it that they didn't really care anymore.

"Check it out online!"

"Go and watch the replay of your match!"

In the players' lounge, Sun Linlin nearly fainted after watching her own match on her teammate's cell phone!

Her teammate said in amusement, "How was it? The viewers were totally tickled by it!"

Sun Linlin said with a wry smile, "Who could have expected that Zhang Ye would go to the live coverage studio and poke fun at me."

Her teammate burst into laughter. "Zhang Ye's commentary was

so cool. He stung the ITTF with his sarcastic remarks and praised us so much. About that 'Playing it Up' skit he performed, I've decided that I'll forgive him!" She snatched her cell phone from Sun Linlin. "Haha, I'm going to watch this again. It's so funny!"

...

Several matches featuring the Chinese team's players ended. Although China did not really do well at the World Team Table Tennis Championships, especially the men's team, their dominance in the Men's and Women's Singles was still quite obvious. They hardly needed any effort to win a match.

In the live coverage studio.

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "Well, we've come to the end of our commentary for today."

Bao Han said, "Here's to next time, viewers and friends."

Zhang Ye said calmly, "Goodbye."

After they were done, other events scheduled for later would be handled by the other commentators.

When the cameras stopped rolling, Yu Yingyi splayed her upper body out on the table, laughing with her head buried in her hands.

When Bao Han saw her laughing, she couldn't hold it in either and started laughing loudly as well. "Professor Zhang, your commentary was too far from routine. You made both me and Teacher Yu laugh on the broadcast!"

Yu Yingyi raised her head. "I did not laugh during the broadcast, alright? I held it in until the end before laughing. Aiyo, I really have to take my hat off to you. I've never heard anyone commentate a sports event like that!"

At this moment, several of the Central TV Sports Channel's executives came over.

"Professor Zhang!"

"Hey, Chief Wang."

"Well done!"

"So I may continue speaking like this in the future?"

"Yes, just do it this way! Although there were some parts that might be a little controversial, the audience responded very well to it!"

"Is that so?"

"Yes, you'll know when you check online!

They had been in the studio all this while and did not even go to the bathroom, so of course they wouldn't have checked out the online reviews.

It wasn't even a matter of the audience responding well anymore!

Other than a minority of the people calling it controversial, the entire country was praising it to the heavens!

The netizens were all Liking it!

"That was so fun to watch!"

"The match was whatever, but the commentary was wonderful!"

"Hahaha, I kept laughing as I watched!"

"Zhang Ye is hilarious!"

"I've never heard anyone commentate like that!"

"Yeah, it really caught my attention!"

"It was clearly going to be a predictable and boring match, but the coverage made it otherwise with Zhang Ye's commentary! That was amazing!"

"I've got to give a Like for this commentary!"

"Having gotten used to those traditional commentaries, this one is a breath of fresh air!"

"Zhang Ye is indeed Zhang Ye. Boring sports commentary can

even be entertaining with him around!"

"Central TV Sports Channel has really gotten the right person to do it!"

"I was wondering what the point of getting Zhang Ye to commentate for the Olympics was at first. I always thought that there were only those few ways of presenting such events. But after I watched his commentary, I've realized that I was wrong. Among all the sports hosts and commentators in the country, Zhang Ye's commentary unique to him."

"Will Zhang Ye be a permanent guest commentator for the Olympics?"

"Damn, I must definitely watch it every day then!"

"Yeah, it'll be much more interesting with him commentating!"

"Pfft, the sarcasm about the ITTF was totally on point!"

Ning Lan's Weibo: "Hahahaha, this is the first time I've laughed through an entire table tennis match!"

Xiaodong: "In genuflection of Teacher Zhang!"

Li Xiaoxian: "Teacher Zhang's commentary was really awesome!"

The table tennis national player, Sun Linlin, also posted on Weibo. "@ZhangYe Professor Zhang, I...my celebrations after winning the match were a genuine reflection of my mood. It wasn't an act."

The netizens were all laughing.

"Hahaha!"

"Sun Linlin is almost in tears!"

"Don't explain anymore."

"Linlin, just ignore that fellow. He was doing it on purpose!"

Of course, there were also some voices that disagreed. However, most of those were flooded over by the people!

"It's not good at all!"

"What would the foreigners think if they saw? They'd be scolding us again!"

"Previous poster, you're an idiot!"

"Who cares what the foreigners say!"

"Yeah, this is our domestic live coverage commentary, so of course their opinions would lean towards to the local audience! They definitely would have to side with our people and team. What do you think the other foreign countries are saying in their commentaries? An Australian friend of mine told me that their Australian commentators were all making sarcastic remarks about the Chinese team. Zhang Ye was already pretty mild about it. Did he said anything that crossed the line?"

"I agree! There was literally no fault with Zhang Ye's commentary today!"

The Chinese media also joined in the fun.

"New Commentator for Olympics!"

"Zhang Ye's debut in sports commentary!"

"A fresh style of hosting that leaves all citizens wanting for more!"

"Following The Olympics: A different kind of commentator!"

"Zhang Ye uses practical actions again to prove that he is the most irreplaceable host in the country!"

"Stringing witty lines together, Zhang Ye transforms into a comedian!"

A lot of people were laughing at the headlines.

They even described him as having transformed into a comedian?

This fellow was already a comedian to begin with!

All in all, Zhang Ye's debut commentary for the Olympics received praise from everywhere. Even Yu Yingyi and Sun Linlin managed to rub off his fame a little and increased their popularity score and fame by quite a bit.

In this world, the sports commentary scene had been stuck in the past for too long. It had always lacked the excitement and emotional ups and downs, preferring to stick to the same tried and tested methods of presentation. Whenever the audience caught game coverage, they were only interested in watching the match itself. It didn't matter who the commentator was, so that had already lost its meaning. But this time, Central TV Sports Channel made a bold attempt to change that and it had really caught the eyes of everyone. As everyone watched the match, they could also thoroughly enjoy the wit and humor of the commentator. This clearly increased the watchability the match!

On the same day.

The viewership ratings came out!

When they received the viewership ratings table, wave after wave of cheers and screams rang out from Central TV Sports Channel's office area. It really felt like they were celebrating the Chinese New Year!

The viewership ratings had blown up!

Especially for the afternoon session of the Olympic live coverage, which had received the highest viewership rating!

The data showed that the viewership rating for that time slot had reached an astonishing 44.3%. Remember, the previous day's viewership rating for the Olympics had already dropped to around 30% or so! With just one day's worth of commentary by Zhang Ye, it had pulled many viewers back in front of their televisions. This result and statistic was something that not even the Central TV Sports Channel's executives had expected. This was a result that had practically dumbfounded everyone!

And this was only the beginning!

Could it get any higher?

Could they break another record again?

They were looking forward to it, and the audience was looking forward to hearing Zhang Ye's commentary again the next day!

# Chapter 1178: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 4 of 5)

The next day.

Noon.

The Chinese delegation had won 13 gold medals so far. In the finals of the various events held yesterday night and this morning, the Chinese athletes had performed astonishingly well. Several of the gold medals were expected while a few had come as surprises. The dominance of the Olympic host was finally starting to show. The good results that suddenly started coming over the past two days also stirred up the excitement of the people around the country. Their passion and interest in following the Olympics were now becoming stronger and stronger.

At Zhang Ye's maternal grandma's house.

His grandmother said loudly, "Hurry up and switch on the television."

His grandfather said in annoyance, "It hasn't even started yet."

"It will soon, so just switch it on first. We don't want to miss anything," his grandmother said anxiously.

His mother laughed as she went over to turn the television on and switch it to the Central TV Sports Channel.

His three sisters also gathered around.

"Mengmeng, don't squeeze in here!"

"I wanna sit in front!"

"Aiya, you little rascal."

"It's time for Brother's commentary! I've been waiting a whole day for this!"

"Where are the melon seeds? I want to much on them as I watch."

It was the weekend today and a rare get-together for the family, but everyone was only interested in watching the Olympics.

At Old Yao's house.

Yao Mi got a bunch of her schoolmates from Peking University's Chinese Department to gather at her place.

"It's about to begin."

"Mimi, where's your dad? I want to get his autograph."

"He went out for a commercial appearance. Why would you want his autograph? Let's watch Teacher Zhang's commentary. Did you guys watch his commentary yesterday? Hahahaha, it was really funny!"

"I did, I did!"

"How could we have not watched it? Heehee!"

"Teacher Zhang is really awesome!"

"True, he's our teacher after all!"

"I wonder how Teacher Zhang will commentate today."

All over the country, similar scenes were playing out.

Countless Chinese citizens were waiting in full anticipation for today's events. First, because the events held were the more popular ones, and second, because of Zhang Ye's interesting commentary!

. . .

The live broadcast began!

The Olympic live coverage started!

It was the finals of the Men's 10m Platform Diving!

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "Hello, everyone. The competition will be starting soon. Let us first introduce today's guest commentator, my old classmate, Zhang Ye. We also have with us

former world champion, Li Yang, who was on the Chinese diving team."

Zhang Ye said, "Hello, everyone."

Li Yang spoke with some stiffness in his voice, "Hello, viewers and friends."

Yu Yingyi said, "In today's competition, a highlight we'll be looking forward to seeing is whether Chen Xing can defend his title. If Chen Xing can win the gold medal, he would achieve the triple crown in this event at the Olympics."

Zhang Ye said rationally, "Actually, everyone has always been too focused on the gold medals. Back when the interest in the Olympics fell, it was due to a lack of gold medal performances by our athletes. However, I feel that it shouldn't be that way. Every one of the athletes present has put in a lot of sweat, blood, and tears to get here. Every medal, every result, every wonderful moment should deserve our applause as well. This is what makes sports so beautiful in the first place."

Li Yang immediately followed with, "That's right. I feel that Professor Zhang's words were well said."

The event began.

The athletes from the various countries gradually arrived to compete for the gold medal in this event!

The Australian athlete committed a huge mistake the moment he came up. After the run-up, he didn't manage to push off the platform properly, which led to him not having enough time to execute his movements. It ended up with him belly flopping!

Sploosh!

The sound of a loud splash!

The water sprayed upwards!

Yu Yingyi said, "Oh, the Australian athlete has made a mistake!"

Li Yang frowned and said, "That shouldn't have happened. It's very rare to make such a rookie mistake in the finals of an event. The Australian athlete does not look like he's in a good form today."

The American athlete was the next to go. Incredibly, he also screwed up his dive!

At the moment of entry into the water, he got careless and sent the water splashing two meters high!

After the American athlete got out of the pool, he shook his head with a very dark expression!

Li Yang said, "What's going on today? Everyone seems like they aren't in form?"

Yu Yingyi also said in surprise, "This is a really rare occurrence that we're witnessing."

Li Yang said, "It's Chen Xing's turn. His first dive will be a standard dive."

Yu Yingyi said, "Good one, that was a perfect dive!"

"That was really good!" Li Yang said, "Chen Xing should be in first place now. His score wouldn't be bad."

Zhang Ye did not interrupt throughout the proceedings. His hosting and commentary style wasn't to just stick in a word or two every now and then. He preferred not to speak unnecessarily. But if he did, he would make sure it was good enough to amaze!

The scores were given!

Yu Yingyi was stunned. "What? Why is it so low?"

Li Yang was also surprised. "What's going on? That score is too low. It's definitely not a score that Chen Xing should get for a dive like that. What's with the judges? Oh, three of the judges have given him a low score. After dropping two of the scores given, one of the low scores were used to calculate the final score. That's why

Chen Xing's score is low for his first dive! If this is the case, that would mean Chen Xing is only in third place after the first dive? That's pretty unbelievable!"

They did not know which country those judges were from, but it was obvious that they were trying to lower the Chinese athlete's score!

The netizens started cursing.

"What the heck!"

"Again?"

"What the hell are they doing!"

"Those idiots! Are they blind?"

"It's so obvious that it should be a higher score!"

"Why isn't Teacher Zhang saying anything!"

Yu Yingyi seemingly "knew" what the netizens were thinking. She turned her head to ask, "Professor Zhang, what do you see of this?"

Zhang Ye pondered for a moment before saying, "I'm very touched."

Touched?

You're feeling touched again?

You were touched by the table tennis player's celebrations yesterday too. You're not actually feeling that emotional! Tell me just what there is to feel touched about!

Li Yang said dumbfounded, "How are you touched?"

The home viewers pricked up their ears and concentrated on listening.

Zhang Ye sighed emotionally, "These Olympics have really touched me. I am not touched by those athletes who have tried so hard but failed to win a medal. Instead, I am touched because those

judges and referees who are blind in both eyes are determined to carry out their duties!"

Yu Yingyi held her laughter in. "Pfft!"

Li Yang nearly burst out laughing!

The viewers were all startled for a moment before laughing uncontrollably!

"Hahahahaha!"

"Blind in both eyes?"

"Aiyo, fucking hell, this fellow is too sarcastic!"

"Savage! Hahahaha!"

"I'm so tickled!"

"If we're talking about who has the sharpest mouth in the world, I will have to fucking give it to Zhang Ye!"

"He doesn't even have to use any vulgarities when it comes to scolding people!"

Following that, Zhang Ye began a series of face-smacking antics. This fellow had now gotten into the groove of being a commentator. He was getting better and better at it!

Several of the foreign athletes committed mistakes again!

Meanwhile, the Chinese athlete maintained his high standard and performed a perfect execution again for his second dive. This time, the judges finally give a high score as two of the lower scores got dropped!

The third dive.

The fourth dive.

Chen Xing was leading all the way. There was no longer any suspense for the results.

For every mistake that the foreign athletes committed, Zhang Ye

let out a loud cheer!

Zhang Ye said, "Watching our Chinese athlete dive is really boring. He doesn't even make a splash when he enters the water. But look at the Australian, South Korean, and American athletes. Every time they go into the water, they're always making waves. This is just like wild pigs crossing the river. It's so fun to watch!"

The netizens.

"Making waves?"

"Wild pigs crossing the river?"

"Hahahahaha!"

"Let me laugh at this for ten minutes please!"

"This guy is too vengeful!"

"I just fucking love this eccentric style of commentary!"

On this day, Zhang Ye once again brought out the various jokes regarding the Olympics from his previous world!

## Chapter 1179: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 5 of 5)

The seventh day of the Olympics.

It was finals of the team table tennis match.

11-4.

11-3.

11-7.

Yu Yingyi called out, "Great one, we're now leading 1-0 in sets played!"

Bao Han was here today as the guest again. "As long as we can continue playing with this momentum, there shouldn't be any problems!"

Yu Yingyi said, "Our national players are still as dependable as always. Their play is so beautiful."

Zhang Ye said, "There are now many foreigners who have demonized our way of playing table tennis. Oh, look! The cameras have cut to a pair of foreigners who seem to be father and son. What do you think they're whispering about?"

Yu Yingyi instinctively replied, "What?"

Zhang Ye said, "That kid must definitely be asking, 'Dad! What kind of sport is table tennis?' To which his father would probably pat him on the head and say, 'Silly kid, table tennis isn't a sport. It's a form of Chinese sorcery."

```
Yu Yingyi: "..."
```

Bao Han: "..."

Zhang Ye said, "We always talk about how we can't find 11 players who can play soccer out of 1.3 billion Chinese people. We're really too harsh on them for that. Look at how it is overseas. Out of 6

billion people, they can't even find four people who can play table tennis."

Yu Yingyi held in her laughter. "Pfft!"

Bao Han laughed and said, "That's because our training system is pretty much perfected. All of our current national players were trained from a very young age. Every step they took to get here has been extremely arduous for them. They've been pushed beyond the type of training that normal people are able to handle. That's why they're standing at the top and have the last laugh."

The match was over!

The final score was 3-0 for an easy win!

Yu Yingyi said, "It's over."

"Congratulations to Team China, you've all done well!" Bao Han looked visibly excited.

"It's time for the press conference and the medal presentation ceremony." Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "Congratulations to Team China for standing up to the pressure to once again stand at the summit. We're really happy for them. They should finally be able to get some time off to relax for a bit after this competition."

But Zhang Ye said, "They won't be able to."

Yu Yingyi said, "Eh?"

Zhang Ye replied, "There's still an even more difficult competition that's coming up after this."

Bao Han was taken aback. "There isn't anything else. We're already done with the singles and team events."

"Yeah." Yu Yingyi said, "We've made a clean sweep of the medals at the Olympic table tennis events. What 'more difficult competition' are you talking about?"

Zhang Ye looked at them and said, "After they get back, they still have to fight for the national championship to determine who's the

number one."

Yu Yingyi: "..."

Bao Han: "..."

National champion!

So did he mean that the Olympics were just a warm-up match?

However, Zhang Ye's words made sense as well. This left Yu Yingyi and Bao Han unable to refute him!

...

The eighth day of the Olympics.

At the archery arena.

Yu Yingyi said, "What's going on? South Korea has called for an appeal!"

The guest commentator, a former female archer, said, "A reshoot?"

Yu Yingyi said, "They've misfired yet another arrow!"

The former female archer said, "What? They're appealing again?"

Zhang Ye said, "At the archery arena of this year's Olympics, a new event called 'Appeal' has been created. The South Koreans have an absolute chance of becoming the champion!"

Yu Yingyi held back her laughter. "Pfft!"

"Oh God, the Chinese team has won!"

"We won, we're the champions!"

"Unbelievable! The men's archery team has created Olympic history!"

"The team captain, Wu Yun, looks very emotional right now! Oh, he took off his top and undershirt too! He's letting out a roar!"

"The South Korean team is protesting; they've gone to appeal again? Oh, they're complaining about our Chinese team's shirt

removal gesture!"

Yu Yingyi and the former archer were speaking one after the other.

Zhang Ye bluntly said, "What's wrong with removing his shirt to celebrate? Can't he get excited? What's there to fuss over? If you guys had won, you'd have taken off your pants!"

Taking off their pants?

Yu Yingyi was floored!

• • •

On the ninth day of the Olympics.

It was the Men's 10,000m run.

"It has started."

"There's an interesting piece of trivia about this race. We can see that three of the runners on the Canadian team look exactly the same. That's because they're triplets."

Zhang Ye said, "Then we're in danger."

"Why?"

Zhang Ye said, "If the three of them ran a portion of the race each, we'd definitely have no hope of winning."

Yu Yingyi couldn't think of a good reply.

• • •

The tenth day of the Olympics.

In the stadium of the swimming finals.

Yu Yingyi said, "The cameras are now showing the rest areas. Our Chinese swimmer, Sun Qi, is currently warming up."

Zhang Ye said, "Why is he holding a thing that looks like a wheel? Oh, Sun Qi is going to wreak havoc in the seas 1 ."

Wreak havoc in the seas!

Do you think he is Nezha!

Yu Yingyi said, "Professor Zhang, that's just a warmup apparatus."

Zhang Ye said, "The cameras are now showing the inside of the stadium. Look at that person sitting there with a staff pass hanging around his neck."

Yu Yingyi asked, "Who is that?"

The other commentator said, "That's a lifeguard."

Zhang Ye said, "He looks so lonely sitting there with his chin resting on his hand. I bet he's thinking about his life. 'What's the reason for my existence?'"

Yu Yingyi held in her laughter. "Pfft!"

The race began.

"Go for it!"

"This is so intense!"

"Come on, Team China!"

"We've won!"

"It's a gold medal! A gold medal!"

"Sun Qi, you did well! Nicely done!"

Yu Yingyi and the other commentator got so excited they looked like they were going to jump up from their seats.

Ten minutes later.

The national anthem played. Soon, the medal presentation ceremony was over.

Sun Qi looked very excited as he bit his gold medal. Suddenly, he got off the podium and jogged toward another zone to hug his coach and teammates. Then, on the large screen display, he apparently took something from his teammate. It wasn't clear

what it was, but it looked like a small box or something similar. After that, he strode forward, taking long strides.

Yu Yingyi was startled. "What is Sun Qi doing?"

The swimming commentator said, "Eh, over there is?"

The next second, everyone understood what was going on!

They saw Sun Qi walking up to a woman and excitedly putting his gold medal around her neck. Then he got on his knees and took out a little box that opened to reveal a diamond ring!

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "He's proposing!"

She was the women's swim team's Li Xiaoxiao. In the previous Olympics, she was a bronze medalist in a 400-meter swim. Sun Qi and Li Xiaoxiao's relationship was no secret. Everyone knew that they were together, but no one had expected that Sun Qi would propose to his girlfriend after winning the gold medal. He was even doing this in an Olympic stadium and in the focus of many live broadcast cameras!

Li Xiaoxiao covered her mouth in surprise and started tearing up!

Yu Yingyi was feeling very happy for them. "This is such a heartwarming scene!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Li Xiaoxiao has said yes. Sun Qi is putting the ring on for her!"

"That's great, I wish them all the best!" Yu Yingyi said.

Zhang Ye suddenly said, "Their union has resolved yet another universal question for humanity."

Huh?

Yu Yingyi was taken aback. "What universal question?"

Zhang Ye said, "If his mother and fiancée fall into the sea at the same time, who would he choose to save first."

Yu Yingyi laughed on the broadcast!

The staff and camera operators in the studio also laughed out loud!

When the TV viewers heard that, they laughed until they doubled over!

• • •

Over the past few days of the Olympics, everyone had been laughed senseless due to Zhang Ye's commentary. A clearly intense competition that was supposed to stoke up the excitement of the people was constantly taken down another path with those random comments by Zhang Ye!

"This is unbearable!"

"Hahahaha!"

"Aiyo, I can't take this anymore!"

"I really have to take my hat off to that mouth of Teacher Zhang's!"

"He's such a jokester! I'm so entertained!"

"This commentary is really on a godly level!"

"I really like Teacher Zhang so much!"

"The Olympics are coming to an end and I'm starting to feel reluctant to see Zhang Ye go. Will they invite Zhang Ye to commentate for other sports and competitions in the future? If Zhang Ye is the commentator, I'll goddamn watch it even if it's for a Chinese soccer match!"

"Right, me too!"

"How awesome! This fellow is always hogging the limelight wherever he goes!"

"He now has another qualification as a sports commentator on his résumé!"

The viewership ratings for the Olympics live coverage was

constantly hitting new highs!

```
44%!
48%!
51%!
```

Finally, it even reached 54.3%!

Other than the efforts put in by the Chinese Olympic delegation, Zhang Ye would absolutely be able to claim credit for setting such a mythical and legendary viewership rating. He had played the biggest role in making this happen!

The domestic media was full of praise!

"The Chinese delegation has amassed 25 gold medals!"

"Zhang Ye's commentary wins the unanimous approval of the people!"

"Zhang Ye has added a different flavor to the Olympic Games!"

"A national comedian is born!"

"An official of the Beijing Organizing Committee for the Olympic Games expresses: For the next Olympics, I hope to see Zhang Ye take the role of a commentator again!"

"The Olympic live coverage sets a historical record in viewership!"

"Zhang Ye's domestic popularity score soars yet again!"

### Chapter 1180: Zhang Ye's first music video single?

Several days later.

The Olympics successfully came to an end.

Zhang Ye was also finished with his commentator role after completing his job successfully. On the way back, he was even stopped by several people a few times.

The first one was at a traffic junction. The moment he got there, he was stopped by a female traffic cop.

The female traffic cop kept looking at him. "Teacher Zhang."

Zhang Ye said rather nervously, "Officer, did I violate any traffic rules?"

The female traffic cop said, "Please show me your driving license."

"Here." Zhang Ye quickly took it out and added, "I didn't drink any alcohol."

The female traffic cop held him there for a long time as she spoke to him.

Zhang Ye kept trying to explain, "I really didn't run the red light. If you don't believe me, you can check the traffic cameras. I really didn't do anything wrong."

The female traffic cop was starting to feel a little embarrassed. "I know that. I just recognized your car from a distance and was hoping to get an autograph from you." To someone who managed the traffic as part of their work, Zhang Ye's license plate and car model was clearly not a secret.

Zhang Ye was both floored and amused. "Hai, you should have just said so. You gave me such a fright." Then he happily signed an

autograph for her without hesitation.

The female traffic cop was delighted. After Zhang Ye left, she started bragging about it over the police radio.

"I got an autograph from Zhang Ye!"

"Ah? Where?"

"At the junction of Zixin Road."

"Going where?"

"South."

As a result, Zhang Ye was soon stopped again, at the third junction as he went by another female traffic cop who had sped over quickly on her motorbike.

Was it another traffic violation?

Zhang Ye panicked a little as he frantically pulled to the side.

The female traffic cop got off her motorbike and knocked excitedly on the BMW's window.

Zhang Ye rolled down the car window.

The female traffic cop said, "Teacher Zhang, can I have an autograph?"

Zhang Ye was speechless.

This was the scariest way of asking him for an autograph that Zhang Ye had ever come across.

Finally, he was stopped when he arrived at Old Rao's neighborhood.

Before Zhang Ye became famous, he had lived here for some time. Later, his work studio was established here. Many of the neighbors here knew him well.

"Ah, Teacher Zhang!"

"Zhang Ye is back!"

"Little Zhang, are you done with being a commentator?"

"We watched all of the events that you commentated."

"Yeah, it was so damn funny."

"You got even more famous."

"The commentary for the closing ceremony was really good too!"

Zhang Ye gave them a fist and palm salute and said with a smile, "It was all thanks to everyone's support."

Everyone had something to say.

"Of course we'd support you."

"Who else would we support if not you?"

"You're the most well-known person to come from our neighborhood."

"Yeah, you were born as one of us, so you'll die as one of...eh, that doesn't sound right."

With that, everyone laughed happily.

• • •

Upstairs.

Rao Aimin was not home today and had probably brought Chenchen out somewhere.

Yang Shu wasn't in either and had probably gone off somewhere to distribute pamphlets to spread the name of Taiji Fist.

Thus, Zhang Ye made his way back to the studio where he received a chart depicting the growth of his popularity score both domestically and overseas during the Olympics period. He nodded approvingly as he went through the statistics.

Zhang Zuo said, "This is for the domestic market."

Zhang Ye said, "OK."

Zhang Zuo said, "These are the statistics for Asia."

Zhang Ye said, "Umm, it's quite good."

Ha Qiqi said, "And an indication chart of how well your reputation is right now. All of the statistics have shown a positive growth."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Alright, thanks for all the hard work in the past few days."

Ha Qiqi smiled and said, "We didn't do much. All of it was mainly down to your good performance as a commentator."

Zhang Zuo said, "Right, the viewers really approve of it. Even the media and officials have acknowledged your breakthrough contribution to the commentary field. With your social relations in the industry, to have so many people publicly acknowledging it is a very strong affirmation of your work. Anyway, this role of yours as an Olympic commentator has brought a large increase to your popularity. Although you're still quite a distance away from reaching the domestic S-list rankings, the difference is no longer as great as before."

Zhang Ye said in satisfaction, "Let's take it slowly then. We should always learn to walk before we run."

His goal was definitely to aim for a spot on the Chinese S-list celebrity rankings this year. However, Zhang Ye did not expect that he could surmount this obstacle by just relying on the Olympic commentary that he did. That would be wishful thinking on his part.

An Olympic theme song.

An Olympic promotional song.

An Olympic commentary role.

The few jobs he took turned out to be quite good as the results he gained from them were rather impactful. He was quite satisfied with the way things were. As for the remainder of his journey, he would have to take it step by step.

Ha Qiqi asked, "What plans do you have next?"

"What do you guys suggest?" Zhang Ye sought their opinions.

Everyone chipped in with their ideas.

Take an acting project?

Produce a television show?

Film a commercial?

Release a new song?

It was all the same old things.

Zhang Ye thought for a moment, and then said, "Why don't we release a single first? A music video single."

Little Wang clapped her hands in agreement. "Yes, yes, you've never filmed a music video or released a single before."

Zhang Ye was now more keen to try out activities that he had never done before. Doing something different often helped him increase his popularity much faster, and he had benefited from doing it many times in the past. Like for commercials, he had filmed or produced too many of those. If he were to continue doing the same thing, the results it would bring would definitely not be as good as before. This applied to other activities as well. For example, acting in a movie. If you acted well as a daughter-in-law in one, two, or three films, you would probably be more popular than anyone else for such a role and no one would be able to play it better than you. But then, you'd be typecast soon after and your popularity would eventually plateau. This was not what Zhang Ye wanted. What he needed to have was a well-rounded development that could bring him to greater heights. So it was more important for him to keep pushing out new activities that would bring greater novelty and surprise to the audience. If that happened, his popularity would rise faster.

But there weren't any big projects to take on at the moment. And

as a singer, he had not even released an album or music video single of his own, so that really did feel rather unacceptable.

Since he would have to release one sooner or later, why not do it now?

Ha Qiqi asked, "What do you need us to do?"

"Which publisher should we work with?" Wu Yi asked.

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Let's talk about that later. Having worked hard for so many days, let's all take a few days' break and get some good rest. This will also be a good time for me to think about the music video single, but there's no rush for now."

Zhang Zuo said in amusement, "Aren't you able to compose a song as and when you want? Do you even need to think about it?"

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "This will be my first single, so I definitely have to plan carefully and not be too casual about it. Let me give it some thought."

To other celebrities, all they probably wanted was a good song for themselves. They would only need to find a good production team or invite some celebrities to make a guest appearance in their music videos, and then with some packaging and publicity, get their single ready for release and make an attempt on the ranking charts. But Zhang Ye's aim was clearly higher than that. He did not lack any good songs. What he lacked was a medium to project a feeling across to the audience. Besides, a song and a music video were two entirely different concepts. A music video would require the visuals to match the song. This was even more difficult than producing just the song. Whenever he did something, Zhang Ye's character would always dictate that he do it to the best of his abilities. Otherwise, he wouldn't do it at all. At the very least, he would have to be satisfied with his efforts.

What song should he choose?

How should he sing it?

Who would they invite?

All of these had to be planned properly.

Zhang Ye swept his hand out. "Alright then, everyone. Go ahead on your few days of break."

"OK."

"We'll wait for your news then."

"Are you serious about giving us a few days' break?"

"Thank you, Director Zhang."

"I'll stay here and put in overtime then. We cannot leave the office unmanned."

"Alright, Old Wu. Thanks for the hard work."

"Heh, I'm just doing my part for everyone."

Although the studio was recently established, everyone had been old colleagues for many years. All of them had weathered the storm and fought on the same side. So the esprit de corps in the office was very good, and everyone behaved like they were friends.

Zhang Ye walked to the bar and poured himself a glass of wine as he gave some thought to the music video.

At this moment, Dong Shanshan called.

Zhang Ye picked the phone up with a smile and affected: "Hello, Teacher Shanshan."

"Hello, Teacher Zhang." Dong Shanshan laughed and said: "Are you done with your work?"

Zhang Ye said: "Yeah, now that the Olympics have ended, I have nothing left to do. What's the matter? I'm at my studio. Do you want to call Yingyi and the others over for a drink?"

Dong Shanshan said: "Why would you want to drink so early in the morning? I'm calling to check whether you'll be free the day after tomorrow." "Yes, why?" Zhang Ye asked.

Dong Shanshan smiled. "School will be reopening soon. Many of our classmates talked about wanting to go back to campus to visit the teachers and have a look at the place where we fought our battles and lived our lives."

Zhang Ye immediately said, "I agree with them. It'll be good to do that."

Dong Shanshan said: "We've graduated for several years but have not been back before this because we were too embarrassed that we hadn't found our success yet. But everyone has been working hard for the past two years and have more or less gained some achievements by now. So we came up with the idea of having this class reunion and hopefully gather the people from our class."

"Can you contact everyone?"

"I can only try, although most them have already been notified."

"Alright, I definitely don't have any problems attending the reunion."

"Then it's settled. I'll go and contact the rest now."

"Sure, I'm starting to miss everyone too."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye gulped down the entire glass of wine.

Going back to his alma mater?

Reuniting with his old classmates?

Suddenly, he was quite looking forward to it!

# Chapter 1181: Zhang Ye gets into another fight!

Saturday.

Morning.

Dong Shanshan purposely called Zhang Ye to remind him.

Dong Shanshan said: "It's time to leave your house."

Zhang Ye replied: "I know, it's the class reunion, right?"

"I was just afraid that you would forget about it. Alright then."

"I'll be right there."

"See you at the old teaching area, the place where we used to attend classes."

"Got it."

After hanging up, Zhang Ye brushed his teeth and washed his face. Then he got changed.

His mother said, "You're wearing that?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "What do you expect me to wear?"

"I've already found something for you." His mother took out a suit.

Zhang Ye sighed, "I'm only going there to visit my teachers and old classmates. It's not like I'm taking part in the school reopening ceremony, so why would I wear something that grand? Whatever, I'm leaving."

. . .

At 9 in the morning.

At the main entrance of Media College.

It was not the first day of school yet as official classes would

begin a few days later. But there were quite a number of students starting to return back to school from their hometowns. Students with their luggage could be seen all around. They would break out into chatter and jokes whenever they bumped into fellow classmates along the way.

"Where did you go for the summer holidays?"

"I went on an overseas trip, what about you?"

"I stayed at home and watched the Olympics."

"I watched it too!"

"Eh, why did they cordon off the main entrance with security tape?"

"Are we not allowed to enter?"

"There's a film crew shooting, so we have to wait."

"Eh? What are they filming?"

"I think it's a movie. I saw Ning Lan just now."

"Wow, where is she? Where is she?"

"We can't go in through the main entrance. Let's take the rear entrance."

Many of the students were stopped at the main entrance. They waited there for some time and were joined by more and more students who had just returned to school. All of them stood there glassy-eyed as they waited to be allowed back into the school. There was hardly anyone who would choose to go by the rear entrance as Media College had a pretty large campus. The main entrance and rear entrance were basically at opposite ends of the school, so getting there would take at least 25 minutes. Further, most of the students were lugging around large and small bags filled with their belongings.

On the opposite side of the road.

Yu Yingyi was walking over with a young man.

All of a sudden, a car pulled up beside them. The car window came down to reveal Zhang Ye in a pair of sunglasses. "Old Wang?"

Yu Yingyi looked over and said to Old Wang, "See, speak of the devil."

"Zhang Ye!" Old Wang pointed at him and laughed loudly.

Zhang Ye got out of the car and said, "Where have you been for the past two years?"

Old Wang smiled and said, "Just getting by and supporting my family."

Old Wang was also classmates with Zhang Ye and the others. Back then, his older looks earned him the nickname of Old Wang among their classmates. After calling him that for so many years, Zhang Ye had forgotten his real name.

Another person headed toward them.

"Yo, who's this we have here?" A rather pretty woman walked over gracefully.

Yu Yingyi said in surprise, "Aiyo, Xiaoqian."

Xiaoqian waved at them. "Yingyi, Zhang Ye, Old Wang, long time no see."

Old Wang had wooed Xiaoqian back when they were still attending university. When he saw her, his eyes immediately lit up. "Xiaoqian, you totally disappeared after our graduation. What have you been busy with?"

But Yu Yingyi, who had been in contact with her, said, "What does she have to be busy with? She's leading the <u>tai tai</u> life now. After graduation, she worked as a broadcast host for half a year before marrying into a rich family."

"What rich family?" Xiaoqian said helplessly, "Don't talk nonsense, alright? I'm now a full-time housewife taking care of my

children every day. It's driving me crazy. See, when I heard that there will be a class reunion, I agreed to it immediately." Then she gave Zhang Ye a long look before saying, "Nice, you've become handsome."

Zhang Ye chuckled and said, "But of course."

Old Wang belly laughed. "He's far more than just handsome. Our Boss Zhang is flourishing now that he's gained a place in the Asian scene."

Xiaoqian was overcome by emotion. "Yeah, who'd have thought that the fellow who was last in our class would turn the entire entertainment industry upside down in these past two years. Honestly, if you had asked me who would be able to make it amongst those of us in our class, I would have thought that it would be Shanshan, Wang He, or maybe even you, Old Wang. But as for Zhang Ye...I wouldn't have freaking believed it at all." She went over and pinched his arm and touched his face. "Just what steroids are you on?"

Having not met up in several years, everyone was teasing each other the moment they met again.

Suddenly, a barrage of scolding voices came from the school entrance!

Zhang Ye looked over, "Eh?"

Xiaoqian and Old Wang also looked over. "What's the matter?"

"They're doing some filming over there?" Yu Yingyi said.

There were two students over there who seemed to have taken some pictures with their phones. As a result, a staff member from the film crew went over and pointed at them while berating, "What are you all doing? Can't you see what's written on the sign? No photography!"

One of the female students meekly said, "We didn't take any pictures."

"Hand over your phones!" the film crew staff member said with a dark look.

A middle-aged woman from the film crew added, "Don't stand around here watching. Look away, we're filming right now."

It looked like the cameras had stopped rolling over there.

Ning Lan was seated in the break area.

The director and several of the main cast members looked like they were discussing their script.

When a few of the students saw that, they grabbed their luggage and prepared to enter the school gate.

The same person from the film crew immediately pointed at them and gave them a hard look. "What are you all doing! We're filming, can't you tell! All of you, wait there! Who allowed you to come in!"

A student said, "But didn't the cameras stop rolling?"

"Who told you that? Are you the director?" The film crew staff member was speaking very rudely.

Another student pointed at the school and said, "But the director and actors are resting. We've been waiting here for an hour."

A person from the film crew who looked to be the assistant director came over at this time. He shouted, "Go around to the rear entrance and stop crowding around here watching! Use the rear entrance!"

"But our dorms are right in the front."

"The rear entrance is too far away."

"You've stopped filming, so why can't we go in?"

"How can you be so rude?"

"We're just trying to return to school, is there anything wrong with that?"

"Yeah, we've been waiting for an hour too."

The students were all muttering now.

Some of the parents who had sent their children back to school also started pointing at them.

The assistant director said loudly, "I'll repeat this again! We're filming right now. No unauthorized personnel will be allowed in. Don't you know how to follow the rules? It's not like there's only one entrance to the school!"

The students and their parents were very unhappy about this!

At this moment, Zhang Ye and his classmates walked over!

From within the crowd, Zhang Ye's voice resounded, "Just go in this way! Let's see who tries to stop us!"

Yu Yingyi was startled!

Xiaoqian hurriedly tried to pull him back but was unsuccessful in doing so!

The Media College students were all startled and turned around to have a look!

The students' parents also looked over in shock!

The film crew's assistant director and staff member were angered. Who's that? Who's so audacious? They immediately looked around to see who shouted. Then they were stunned!

A distance away.

Ning Lan, who was seated under a sunshade, narrowed her eyes.

The male lead of the film, a B-list celebrity named Zeng Wei, frowned. "Why are they arguing over there?"

The female supporting actress looked over to the school gate. "Whose voice was that? It sounds so aggressive? How dare someone try to trespass into the filming location. Who do they think they are?"

Ning Lan blinked. "I have an ominous feeling about this."

Zeng Wei was taken aback. "Sister Ning, what's the matter?"

Ning Lan said helplessly, "That voice, why does it sound so familiar?"

### Chapter 1182: The two extremes of the entertainment industry!

At the main entrance of Media College.

Many of the students were surprised.

"Zhang Ye!"

"It's Professor Zhang!"

"Our senior is here!"

"Senior!"

"Hi, senior!"

Many of the students were referring to him affectionately as their "senior." Zhang Ye could be considered the most famous figure to have graduated from Media College. Many of the teachers would often bring him up during their lessons as an example to motivate everyone. Um, but of course, there were also times when they used him as an example of how not to behave.

That assistant director came up to him. "Teacher Zhang, what's the meaning of this?"

Zhang Ye nudged his chin out in defiance, "And what's the meaning of you blocking everyone from entering?"

"We're in the middle of filming a movie," the assistant director justified.

Zhang Ye said, "If you want to film, do it to the side! Why are you blocking the entrance!"

The assistant director pointed to the other side and said, "This scene will include a shot using this as the background, so we cannot have anyone standing around here. What if the scene gets messed up?"

Zhang Ye said loudly, "I don't care about that! You find a way to

handle it yourselves!"

The assistant director was enraged. "How can you be so unreasonable?"

Zhang Ye pointed at the students and said, "The students have just returned to school with their luggage and are standing at the school gates waiting to enter, yet you people are here stopping them from going in. So who are the ones being unreasonable here!"

The assistant director said furiously, "We're filming here and have already informed the school!"

Another person from the film crew came up saying, "We're not finished filming the scene yet, so we can't have anyone standing around over here!"

Zhang Ye said, "What's the big deal with your filming? This is Media College, a place for students to attend classes. Don't come here and disrupt the students' daily lives. You can film all you want, but how can you block the entrance and not allow the students of the school to enter? Do you think your film crew is that big a deal!? You're even trampling on the people who rightfully belong here?"

The students also started shouting!

"Right!"

"What's the big deal about your shoot?"

"Coming up to us with that arrogant tone of yours, are you people trying to bully us!"

"We're just trying to return to school, is there anything wrong with that?"

"They even wanted to take away the students' phones just now!"

"Hmph, stop acting all smug!"

That assistant director said, "If you all have anything that you're unhappy with, get the school authorities to talk to me!"

Zhang Ye said, "I am the school authority!"

Zhang Ye: Associate Professor of the School of Broadcast Hosting at Media College.

The assistant director choked on his words, but firmly got out, "Professor Zhang, this is a movie funded by Taiqi Films. We're on a tight schedule and tight on time, you..."

Taiqi Films, the largest film and television company in the country!

Just this name alone was enough to cause anyone in the entire entertainment industry to cower!

And yet, Zhang Ye pulled away the cordoning tape that the film crew had put up. "I don't fucking care whose movie this is!" Then he said to the students, "Just go in through here!"

The students and their parents rowdily entered!

"Oh!"

"Let's go!"

"We can finally go in."

Two of the film crew's staff were infuriated. They went over and tried to prevent the students from entering!

At this moment, the Leg of God appeared again!

When Zhang Ye's outstretched leg came out, the two staff members immediately staggered and fell flat onto the ground!

"Little Li!"

"Little Zhou!"

"How can you hit them?"

The film crew's staff were having none of it. Over twenty people ran over!

But Zhang Ye did not look bothered. He pointed at the gate and

yelled, "Keep coming in! Let me see who dares to block anyone from doing so!"

The school authorities had been alerted as well. Quite a number of teachers came rushing over to the entrance.

"What's this?"

"Professor Zhang, what's going on here?"

"Aiyo, why is there fighting?"

From their rest area, the film's main cast finally came over.

Ning Lan shouted, "All of you, stop!"

A person from the film crew said, "Sister Ning, he's pushing it too far!"

"How can we continue filming?" the assistant director said angrily.

Ning Lan looked at Zhang Ye speechlessly. The two of them were very familiar with each other and also on very good terms in private. "Zhang'er, give me some face, will you? We should be done after two more scenes. It won't take more than ten minutes. I'll speak to the students afterwards and apologize for inconveniencing them, alright?"

But Zhang Ye said, "Not even for a minute. Now's the peak period for students returning to school. What's the meaning of blocking the way into the school like this? Sister Ning, it's not that I'm not giving you face. But just based on those people's attitudes, I will not budge for anyone!" He pointed at the assistant director and said, "Do you guys want to leave by yourselves or would you rather that I show you all out?"

"Heh, did you wake up on the wrong side of bed?"

"Yes!"

"Why are you shouting at me?"

Several of the Media College teachers who learned about the situation complained as well. "They're blocking the way just because of their filming? They even yelled at the students?" And so, the teachers did not feel that Zhang Ye had done anything wrong this time.

A parent said, "Those people were really threatening just now!"

Another parent harrumphed, "They have no manners at all!"

The accusations were getting louder and louder as the film crew started coming under pressure!

Finally, their director said, "Let's go."

"Director!"

"This..."

"We're stopping the shoot already?"

The film crew's staff were all asking questions.

The director said with a sunken expression, "How can we continue filming with things like this?"

Giving in to the pressure, the film crew finally packed up and left. The pressure from the students and school authorities was only secondary. The main cause was actually Zhang Ye. He was known to be a really stubborn and difficult person to deal with. He did not even give any face to Ning Lan. When Zhang Ye flared up, he really did not care about who was on the other side.

When the film crew left, the students broke out into cheers!

"We can finally go in!"

"Thank you, senior!"

"Senior, thanks!"

"You were really fearsome!"

"Your voice is so domineering!"

The students had endless admiration for him. This was really a case of seeing is believing! They'd only heard stories of Zhang Ye doing amazing things. But when they finally witnessed Zhang Ye getting mad in person, the feeling they got was totally different from hearing those stories. Professor Zhang's domineering image was so satisfying to see!

Taiqi Films.

A famous director.

Ning Lan as the lead actress.

All of those names were quite famous!

Not just anyone would dare to step forward to speak up for the students like this!

Old Wang was dumbfounded!

Xiaoqian didn't know how to react. She turned to ask Yu Yingyi, "Is he always like that?"

"He's always like this." Yu Yingyi said helplessly, "It's not like you've never read about his news these past few years. He's always getting into fights with people. Today's situation is one of the better ones since they didn't actually come to blows."

Xiaoqian said, "I guess I now understand why people are so easily offended by him. I just wonder why he can do so well in the entertainment circle with that temper of his."

Yu Yingyi gave a wry smile. "I wish I knew too."

Zhang Ye had just come back to the group after handling the problem. He answered the question with the most pretentious of statements, "Because of justice!"

Old Wang rolled his eyes. "Oh, come on!"

Di di di.

Di di di.

The notifications from his chat app kept sounding.

Zhang Ye took out his cell phone and had a look. There were a lot of notifications from the Goof Group chat in which Ning Lan was chiding Zhang Ye.

Ning Lan: "This fellow is driving me to my grave!"

Ning Lan: "Disloyal friend! How can he turn on me just like that!"

Ning Lan: "@ZhangYe! Show yourself!"

Huo Dongfang sent a smiley face. "What's with the two of you?"

Xiaodong blinked. "What's the matter, Sister Ning?"

Fan Wenli: "Pass the popcorn."

Amy: "I'm just gonna sit here and watch."

Ning Lan sent a flood of messages describing Zhang Ye's "crimes" in detail.

Finally, Zhang Ye appeared. He sent a silly and adorable sticker of a kitten repeatedly blinking its eyes.

Ning Lan was somewhat amused even in her anger. "You dare show yourself? And act cute?"

Zhang Ye sent another similar sticker.

Ning Lan replied with an enraged emote.

Zhang Ye sent an innocent-looking cat sticker.

Ning Lan replied with a gif of someone getting beaten up.

The two of them started resorting to arguing with these stickers. It amused the other celebrities in the chat group when they realized that the argument between these two wasn't going to go out of hand after all.

For those who did not understand them, they might have thought that these two had really fallen out. But anyone who knew better would know that the two of them would never fall out over a small matter like this. After all, it was Zhang Ye who went by himself to rescue Ning Lan when her film crew was surrounded by a group of martial artists and stopped from leaving.

However, Zhang Ye would definitely have offended all of the others in the film crew. Hai, since this was not the first time it had happened, everyone had gotten used to it.

In the entertainment industry, there were two extremes.

The first extreme was Zhang Yuanqi's friends. She had the greatest network of friends in the entertainment circle!

The other extreme was Zhang Ye's foes. He also had the greatest number of enemies in the entertainment circle!

These two extremes would probably not be surpassed by anyone within the next ten years!

### Chapter 1183: A song called 'To Youth'

In the school.

In a garden near the old teaching area.

When Zhang Ye, Yu Yingyi and the others arrived, they saw many familiar faces around. Zhang Ye could recognize some of them immediately but was unable to recognize most of the others. A few years was not that long to speak of, but neither was it a short time. However, that was more than enough to change a person on the inside and the outside.

```
Zhang Ye greeted them from afar, "Fellas!"
"Zhang'er!"
"Aiyo, here comes our big star!"
"Yu'er is here too!"
"Xiaoqian!"
"Ah, Old Wang!"
"I've missed all of you so much!"
"Haha, He Kui!"
"Whoa, Wang He, didn't you go back to your hometown?"
"I came back long ago. I'm back to hosting again."
"Ah? Didn't you offend someone in the past?"
"Zhang Ye found someone to help me resolve that issue."
"Good, that's really great!"
"Old Zhou, how did you put on so much weight?"
"Hehe, the pressures of life did me in."
```

"You're under so much stress and still eating that much? I nearly couldn't recognize you!"

Since Wang He, Ma Xufei, He Kui, Yu Yingyi, Dong Shanshan, and Zhang Ye had often been attending parties held at Dong Shanshan's villa, there was nothing much to catch up on between them. As for the remaining old classmates they had lost contact with for "many" years and not seen for a long time, they were naturally more excited to see each other again. Everyone hugged one another the moment they met. Some of them put their arms around one another's shoulders and started chatting, while others who had misunderstandings in the past laughed when they saw each other as they thought back to those petty grudges they held when they were still in school.

Zhang Ye was also very excited. After hugging one person, he hugged another. "Liu'er, you're looking as spirited as ever!"

Liu Tie laughed heartily. "I'm not as spirited as you are. I've been reading a lot about you in the newspapers, getting into fights with people. Why are you still so hot-headed like when we were still in university?"

"I abhor evil, can't help it." Zhang Ye laughed.

Ma Xufei asked, "Oh yeah, what just happened at the main entrance?"

"Yeah, it sounded like there was a disturbance over there." Wang He asked, "Was there a fight?"

He Kui said, "I heard it too. Wasn't a film crew doing a shoot over there? Are there fight scenes in 'A Youthful Campus'? Why didn't I hear about them?"

At this moment, Dong Shanshan walked over from afar.

"Wow!"

"Goddess!"

"The school belle is here!"

"Shanshan!"

During their school days, Dong Shanshan was one of the leading figures of the school. It was the same even after their graduation.

Seeing how the guys were all rushing up to welcome her, Yu Yingyi and Xiaoqian jokingly scolded, "Bunch of rascals, all dazed at the sight of a beauty!"

Liu Tie asked, "Are they still filming at the main entrance?"

Dong Shanshan was wearing an especially eye-catching dress today. She laughed and said, "How could they still be filming? The film crew has been chased away by someone's scolding."

Wang He was startled, "Ah? Why's that?"

Dong Shanshan said, "I think it was because they were blocking the main entrance."

He Kui said in surprise, "Damn, who would dare to chase them away?"

"Ning Lan is part of that film crew, and they're headed by a big name director too." Ma Xufei said dumbfounded, "Who's crazy enough to chase them away with their scolding?"

Dong Shanshan gestured with her chin, then laughed and said, "Who else do you all think has the balls to do so?"

Yu Yingyi and Xiaoqian covered their mouths and laughed nonstop while looking at Zhang Ye.

It was only then that everyone realized!

"Holy fuck!"

"Zhang'er, you scolded them away?"

"Did you have gunpowder for breakfast before coming over?"

"Dude!"

"Hahahaha, awesome!"

"If I knew that something like this had happened, I would have gone to take a look!"

"I missed the show!"

"I've already experienced for myself Zhang'er's temper. He's still as domineering as before!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Oh, come on, stop bringing that up. I've been offending more and more people lately. I don't even know what might happen to me in the future."

Liu Tie said, "They even dared to block people from entering through the main entrance, so I don't think you were wrong in scolding them away. Ai, the students these days are really too meek. If we had been stopped from entering during our time, us bros would fought against them!"

Ma Xufei cut him off. "Stop boasting, will ya?"

Liu Tie said, "How am I boasting? When the people from the Education Commission sat in and observed our classes in our second year, they kept criticizing our class adviser for no good reason. Who was it that took water balloons from the dorms and pelted them?"

Wang He said, "Holy shit, that was you?"

Dong Shanshan laughed and said, "Oh, that unresolved case from all those years ago?"

Liu Tie coughed. "Well, about that, I only filled the balloons up with water."

"Then who threw it at them?" Everyone was getting curious. This event caused such a sensation at the time.

Liu Tie pointed his chin to the person next to him. "That would definitely have to be someone as stupidly brave as Zhang Ye. Who would dare to do that other than him?"

Zhang Ye gave a dry laugh. "Well, we were young and impulsive."

Xiaoqian rolled her eyes. "You again?"

Yu Yingyi laughed loudly. "We've finally cracked the case. You're

lucky no one found out at the time. Otherwise, you two would probably not have graduated."

The group started chatting and reminiscing.

The cool breeze felt good.

And the ground was sprinkled with fallen leaves.

"Back then, we were really happy."

"The gossip of whoever got together with whoever was enough to keep us entertained for an entire day."

"This path feels really familiar."

"How can it be unfamiliar? The last time we saw each other after taking our graduation photos and before going our separate ways was right on this path. I remember clearly that it was the evening and the sun was almost setting. The sunset that day was an especially beautiful one too."

"Yeah."

"I'll never forget that day either."

"What a pity that not all of us are here. We've only managed to gather this many of us."

Many of them fell silent.

Zhang Ye asked, "Where's Li Lian?"

Xiaoqian hesitated for a moment. "She's divorced and uncontactable."

Ma Xufei asked, "What about Orange?

Old Wang paused for a brief moment before saying, "Orange was arrested for embezzling public funds. It was a pretty large amount, so I doubt he'll be released anytime soon. When I went to visit him at the beginning of the year, half his hair had gone grey." He stopped talking.

Zhang Ye said in surprise, "How can that be!"

Old Wang said, "Shit happens."

Dong Shanshan said, "Is anyone in contact with Little Qiu?"

No one spoke.

Yu Yingyi looked at Liu Tie. "Didn't you attend high school with Sister Qiu? You two should still be in contact, right?"

Liu Tie pondered for a second. "She won't let me tell anyone."

"Just what is it?" Dong Shanshan probed.

Liu Tie finally said, "Little Qiu...she was in an accident several years ago that broke both her legs. Her husband is pretty good to her and has been taking care of her for the past two years."

Xiaoqian covered her mouth as her eyes reddened. "How can that be!"

Dong Shanshan said dumbfoundedly, "Little Qiu and I learned dancing together. She's always fond of moving around and would drag me to the field to practice our foundations. We even promised each other that we would perform together in the future on the largest stage in the country...."

Liu Tie said, "She...can't dance anymore."

Zhang Ye bent over and picked up a leaf from the ground. He brought it to his mouth and started blowing on it a few times. But he didn't create any music with it. "Sister Qiu taught me how to play music with a leaf and wanted me to play something while she danced to it. But I was really stupid at the time and couldn't do it even after practicing for a long time."

Xiaoqian wiped away her tears.

There was silence.

Suddenly, some giggles coming from around them.

A group of teenage boys and girls appeared with a number of musical instruments and placed them at the bottom of the stairs.

"Let's keep moving our stuff."

"I'm so looking forward to commencement."

"Me too, heehee."

The teens went back upstairs.

Zhang Ye clutched the leaf and somehow walked over. He placed the leaf he couldn't play onto the stone table and looked at it for a short while. Then he turned around and sat down on the steps. He took one of the acoustic guitars the teens had just put down and suddenly started strumming.

Dong Shanshan looked over.

Liu Tie looked over.

Their twenty-odd old classmates also looked at him.

Zhang Ye closed his eyes and a song drifted out.

"Perhaps we won't see it again.

"That golden sky where we bid farewell.

"Some people are destined to never meet again.

"Those once green and young faces.

"I pick up a windmill palm's frond.

"And place it on the natural slate rock.

"In memory of the youth that has passed by "And the innocent promises of which we talked."

Yu Yingyi's hands trembled. She could not control herself all of a sudden and went over to pick up a violin from a case lying on the floor while holding back her tears. Then she started playing it gently!

Wang He also went over and grabbed the wind chimes!

Xiaoqian sniffed!

"The wind now sings.

"Singing a song of the places it's been to.

"In the darkness,

"a flower blossoms for you.

"The moment you turn around,

"a smile beautiful as the sunset's crown.

"It once blossomed in the spring of our youth."

The clumsy playing of the wind chimes.

The out of tune violin playing.

The teens came running back downstairs when they heard the music. Who? Who touched our instruments? Those are meant for our performance tomorrow! But when they came downstairs in anger, they were stunned by what they saw. Or rather, they were in shock!

Dong Shanshan, wearing a red dress was moving around in the wind!

Stepping around, she held her dress with one hand and broke into a dance!

Zhang Ye's voice was full of sorrow.

"Perhaps we won't see it again.

"That golden sky where we bid farewell.

"Some people are destined to never meet again.

"Those once green and young faces.

"I pick up a windmill palm's frond.

"And place it on natural slate rock.

"In memory of the youth that has passed by "And the innocent promises of which we talked."

The red dress was swirling!

Dong Shanshan danced faster and faster!

This sorrowful beauty deeply moved the teens!

Dong Shanshan was crying as she danced. She could feel herself becoming one with the song!

"Mmmmm...

Yu Yingyi was crying!

Xiaoqian was crying!

The song " To Youth " had left them sobbing uncontrollably!

<sup>&</sup>quot;The wind now sings.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Singing a song of the places it's been to.

<sup>&</sup>quot;In the darkness,

<sup>&</sup>quot;a flower blossoms for you.

<sup>&</sup>quot;The moment you turn around,

<sup>&</sup>quot;a smile beautiful as the sunset's crown.

<sup>&</sup>quot;It once blossomed in the spring of our youth."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Mmmmm...

<sup>&</sup>quot;The youth that has passed.

<sup>&</sup>quot;The innocent promises that we made."

# Chapter 1184: Shooting the music video together!

The song came to an end.

But the melody still seemed to be reverberating through the air.

Dong Shanshan stopped dancing. "What's this song called?"

Zhang Ye said, "To Youth."

Dong Shanshan nodded. "That's a good title."

This was a song of Han Hong's, and it was written and composed by Leng Wanwan. Back in Zhang Ye's previous world, this song was very popular and sung by a lot of people. However, perhaps due to a lack of promotion, this song didn't manage to become a classic. However, Zhang Ye still liked it very much. To him, the song "To Youth" could be considered one of his few favorite songs from his previous world. And carried by today's emotions, he finally brought this song to this world.

The teens nearby were all visibly moved and finally came back to their senses.

```
"Ah!"
```

"Zhang Ye!"

"Dong Shanshan!"

"Yu Yingyi!"

They got recognized!

It was only then that Zhang Ye and the others realized there were others around.

Zhang Ye smiled as he returned the guitar to them. "Sorry about that, I was just borrowing your instrument for a bit."

Yu Yingyi also returned the violin to them and said gently,

"Thank you."

One of the girls waved it off. "Alumni, you don't have to stand on ceremony."

One of the boys said in admiration, "Just use them as you please, it's fine."

"Alum, how do you sing so well!"

"Yeah, I was crying listening to it."

"Alumna Shanshan, you danced really well!"

"This is unbelievable! Truly unbelievable!"

The sophomores were talking excitedly.

Zhang Ye said, "It's all credit to Shanshan's dancing and Yingyi playing the strings so well."

Yu Yingyi who was still immersed in the sadness of the song was a little annoyed by Zhang Ye's words. "What do you mean playing the strings? It's called a violin, alright? But I have to say that I'm no professional. I only learned it for two years in school. I'm just an amateur, so it was lucky that I didn't ruin the song."

But Zhang Ye said, "You really played great."

Yu Yingyi sighed, "I just went with the flow."

A girl admired, "All of you were amazing!"

After the students moved everything away, Wang He sighed, "This song is basically about us. I really fucking miss our buddies we might never see again!"

Liu Tie said, "Thanks, Zhang'er. You even wrote all of us a song for remembrance."

Dong Shanshan said, "How I wish Little Qiu could hear this as well."

Zhang Ye suddenly said, "She will."

Xiaoqian asked, "Are you going to release this song?"

Zhang Ye said, "Of course. Not only am I going to release it, I even want to shoot a music video for it. I've been thinking of releasing a music video for a new single for the past two days, but I couldn't come up with anything at all. But I've decided now."

Ma Xufei said, "That's great!"

Old Wang said, "You must release this!"

Xiaoqian said, "We'll be waiting to listen to the official version!"

However, Zhang Ye said, "There won't be an official version."

Wang He was taken aback. "But why?"

"The way we it sang today is more or less the official version," Zhang Ye said with a laugh. "So I will need everyone's help. Let's do this together and release that music video."

Xiaoqian asked, "You want us to be in it?"

Zhang Ye said, "Yes. Shanshan will dance, Yingyi will play the strings, Wang He will chip in with the chimes, and everyone else will have their parts as well. All of us must be in it."

Xiaoqian said, "Are you sure we'll be able to do this?"

Yu Yingyi found it both funny and embarrassing. "With my amateur playing, embarrassing myself in front of our classmates is OK. But now, you want me to play the violin in your music video too? Aren't you afraid of getting scolded by others?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "It's exactly our group that I want in the music video. If I invited a group of professionals, the song wouldn't be about our youth anymore, would it? It's exactly because this is our school and we're at this place with our group that it's going to work. I'll go back and get the team ready. Then we can shoot the music video here tomorrow. What do you guys say?"

"Hell, what do you think?"

"Come on then, let's do it!"

"Would we be afraid of you?"

"What's there to be scared of!"

"With your reputation, we might even be able to have some of your fame rub off on us and get recognized in public."

"Yeah, let's make use of your reputation to gain some fame."

Everyone agreed instantly!

Dong Shanshan said, "Then let me go and improve on the dance a little."

Zhang Ye quickly said, "No, you mustn't. Just dance like you did today."

"But I was just randomly dancing, I didn't even know how I danced." Dong Shanshan said, "I just went by feel."

Zhang Ye said, "Then just dance according to your feelings when we do the shoot. Honestly, your dance really stunned me. If the music video does not have your dancing in it, it would definitely be much less interesting." Dong Shanshan's dance was what led Zhang Ye to make the decision to shoot a music video for this song. Back in his previous world, "To Youth" did not have an accompanying music video and the song was also not famous enough that everyone knew about it. This was the reason why Zhang Ye wanted to give it a try. He wanted to know if this image that shook him would also gain the recognition of the people, and possibly allow this song to discover a different light in this world!

Xiaoqian agreed, "That's right!"

Yu Yingyi also praised, "Shanshan, you don't know how beautiful you looked just now."

Dong Shanshan threw up her hands. "Alright, since you guys don't mind it, I won't either. It's not my first time working with Zhang'er anyway."

Yu Yingyi quipped, "Yes, you two are thicker than thieves."

Xiaoqian giggled and said, "Zhang'er even wrote that 'Ms. Dong' song."

"Was that for me?" Dong Shanshan laughed.

Wang He said, "Who else would it be for?"

Yu Yingyi harrumphed, "Others might not know your birthday, but would we not know? It was the actual day of your birthday when that King of Masked Singers' episode was recorded. Zhang'er even added the phrase 'happy birthday' to the end of 'Ms. Dong,' so who else could he have written it for other than you? Ai, Zhang'er, when are you gonna write a Ms. Yu? We're such old classmates, so you better not practice favoritism, alright? You can't just write a song for Shanshan and not for us."

Xiaoqian added, "I want one too."

Ma Xufei said, "And me."

Zhang Ye said, "Whoa, please spare me."

Dong Shanshan helped him smooth things over. "Oh right, Boss Zhang. How are we going to split the profits?"

Ma Xufei asked, "Yeah, how?"

He Kui joked, "Haha, you'd have to pay us an appearance fee."

Zhang Ye did not hesitate at all. "We'll do it however you guys want to."

"Boss Zhang is really generous!" Liu Tie gave him a thumbs up. "But we're just joking with you. We're doing this together. There's no need bring up the issue of money."

Xiaoqian said, "I don't need it either."

Everyone was now saying there was no need for it.

Dong Shanshan spoke, "I have a suggestion. Excluding repaying the production and publicity budget, whatever the music video earns, let's donate all the proceedings to Little Qiu to get her legs treated."

Zhang Ye smacked his thigh and exclaimed, "Yeah! That's settled then!"

Wang He gave two thumbs ups. "That's a good suggestion. We didn't know about it before, but since we know now, we must do our part for her. I don't have much money, but I do have strength!"

"Well said!"

"Count me in!"

"Let's all chip in a part of our strength to help Sister Qiu stand on her feet again!"

Zhang Ye, seemingly wanting to take it all on, said, "Leave this to me. We'll let Liu Tie bring all the money that the music video earns to Little Qiu. If she can't get it treated in China, she can always go overseas. If she still can't get it treated overseas, then she can get prostheses. There are disabled athletes who have lost both their limbs taking part in the Special Olympics 100-meter race. All of those athletes can run faster than us, so I don't believe that Little Qiu won't be able to stand up! I don't have many friends, but it shouldn't be a problem to get a recommendation to a foreign specialist hospital for treatment. Leave this to me!"

"That's right!"

"Yeah, let's do it!"

"For Little Qiu!"

"For Sister Qiu!"

In an instant, everyone was full of fighting spirit!

For a common goal, these young adults had gathered together again and were shouting catchphrases of what they wanted. This was very nostalgic, and every one of them harbored an inexpressible emotion within their hearts.

#### Chapter 1185: A smashing release!

Several days later.

A promotional poster was put out.

A red dress made up the bulk of the poster's composition and color.

"The music video of Zhang Ye's first single to get a smashing release today!"

"Countdown: 1 hour."

The netizens kept posting on the Weibo of Zhang Ye's Studio.

"Hurry up!"

"The publicity has been going on for days already."

"Why hasn't it been released yet?"

"It's Zhang Ye's first single, I can't wait!"

"Judging by the poster, it already looks like it'll be awesome."

"Just wait a little longer, it's coming soon."

"Damn, there are this many people waiting for it to be released?"

"But of course. Teacher Zhang has never released a single in such a grand manner before, and it's even a music video. Before this, 'The King Sent Me to Patrol the Mountains' was recorded on the radio program, then 'Beijing Welcomes You' was performed with an all-star lineup, while 'You and Me' was a duet with Lillian that was edited out from the Olympics opening ceremony performance. All those can't be considered actual music videos, so now that we're finally getting a proper one, of course I have to support it. I will sacrifice everything else and wait for its release!"

"Just based on Zhang Ye's reputation, I'll watch it."

"Regardless, I'm also looking forward to it."

"I heard that he shot the music video with his classmates."

"Li Xiaoxian is also releasing her single today. I'm talking about Sunset Glow from King of Masked Singers."

"Ah? Spring Garden's Li Xiaoxian is going solo?"

"Surely not, right? She's only releasing a single. Even their group leader, Xiaodong, has done it before."

"Ah, check this out!"

"What happened?"

"Li Xiaoxian's release date for her single has changed!"

"Pfft, are you sure?"

"The date was set in stone a month ago."

"Yeah, wasn't it scheduled for today?"

The netizens suddenly discovered that the reason given for Li Xiaoxian's change in her release schedule was that they had encountered some technical difficulties at the publishing stage. That was why they had to change the release date to next week.

Then, a young C-list singer's agent also delayed their new album's release date. It wasn't delayed by long, just two days, and the reason given was that their publicity department had gotten the dates mixed up.

A music industry insider posted on Weibo: "Are they trying to avoid Zhang Ye?"

Another industry insider posted with a laugh: "Looks like no one is willing to fight it out with Zhang Ye during the same promotional period."

None of the industry insiders and netizens believed the reasons given for the delays.

"Bullshit, what mix up of dates!"

"They announced it two weeks ago and it's suddenly a mix up

now?"

"If they're avoiding Zhang Ye, just say so. Is it that difficult to admit?"

"Haha, just look at Teacher Zhang's relations with others. This single that he's releasing has really come too suddenly. It's not only us, even a lot of the music industry insiders were caught by surprise!"

"Well, they don't really have a choice but to avoid it."

"Yeah, surely they wouldn't want to go head to head with Zhang Ye, right?"

"Well, I reckon that even Chen Guang would do the same."

"Do you guys think Zhang Ye will sweep the charts this time?"

"That's almost definite, isn't it? During King of Masked Singers, which songs of his didn't make it into the charts?"

"But it's different this time. It's going to be a music video, so we'll have to see the artistic value and how well it matches with the song. Zhang Ye may be good at writing and singing songs, but making a music video..."

The scheduled time for release was nearing.

Counting down:

Five minutes.

Three minutes.

One minute.

Zhang Ye's fans went onto the exclusive online video hosting site releasing the music video for "To Youth."

More came from the industry itself to check it out. Almost everyone involved with music had come to have a look for themselves what Zhang Ye's music video single would look like. They were incredibly curious about it.

The music video was released!

A mellow scene appeared on screen.

A gentle autumn breeze blew past. The leaves on the trees were rustling. A hand appeared on screen grasping a fluttering tree leaf. Then, the hand brought the leaf up towards the mouth and the person started blowing on it. But there was no sound.

It was Zhang Ye's face.

The camera zoomed out and a lot of people started walking towards the screen from a distance. They finally gathered at the center of the shot.

A lot of viewers were taken aback.

It was a school campus?

This was Media College?

Zhang Ye's alma mater?

• • •

At a house somewhere.

Qiu Yumei was languishing in bed. There was no spirit in her eyes.

Her husband asked, "Want some more?

Qiu Yumei replied, "I'm not eating any more."

"Do you want some water?"

"I'm not thirsty."

Her husband said nothing as he covered her with a blanket. He turned around and sat down in front of the computer to put on some music for her to listen to. To his surprise, he saw Zhang Ye's music video!

He reflexively clicked on it. "Little Qiu!"

Qiu Yumei did not open her eyes. "Huh?"

He pointed at the computer in excitement and said, "It's your classmates, Zhang Ye, Liu Tie, and everyone else!"

The song played.

"Perhaps we won't see it again.

"That golden sky where we bid farewell.

"Some people are destined to never meet again.

"Those once green and young faces."

Qiu Yumei suddenly opened her eyes. She was stunned!

Zhang'er!

Shanshan!

Yingyi!

Tie-zi!

Old Wang!

You guys! You guys—

• • •

At a work site.

A young man wearing a hard hat was covered in mud. He said loudly, "Let's seize the time we have left. There are only a few days left, so let's hurry to meet the deadline. I'll request bonuses for all of us once we're done!"

However, there were a few workers who were still watching something on their phones a ways away. They were very focused on whatever it was.

What's this?

On their cell phones during work hours?

The young man strode up to them. Just as he was about to say something, he was startled!

"I pick up a windmill palm's frond.

"And place it on natural slate rock.

"In memory of the youth that has passed by "And the innocent promises of which we talked."

It was Zhang Ye?

Shanshan?

Wang He?

The young man was dumbfounded!

• • •

In a street.

At the entrance of a grocery store.

The crowd of people had stopped in their tracks and were all pointing at a woman holding a basket in her hand. That woman looked a little old, like she was in her 30s, but she was not actually that old. There was still a hint of beauty hidden beneath her gaunt and pale face!

"The wind now sings.

"Singing a song of the places it's been to.

"In the darkness,

"a flower blossoms for you."

The basket in the woman's hands dropped to the ground.

She held the cell phone playing the music video and held her head in her hands as she squatted down and started crying!

"The moment you turn around,

"a smile beautiful as the sunset's crown.

"It once blossomed in the spring of our youth."

...

The music video ended.

Several lines appeared at the end of it.

"To the youth that we will someday no longer possess!

"To the old friends we once stood side by side with!

"Where are all of you now?

"Are you...doing fine?"

The music video was pretty short, but it felt quite long.

Countless people finished watching it with a sense of shock!

The totally unprofessional sound of the violin, the totally wrong way of playing the chimes, the sorrowful voice, the long dress fluttering from the dancing, every image was just too shocking to them!

Zhang Xia posted on Weibo with a sigh: "How wonderful!"

Li Xiaoxian's Weibo: "This is what art is."

An industry insider: "Dong Shanshan's dance was the sublimation of the entire song and music video! That red dress was simply stunning!"

A big shot of the entertainment circle: "The person playing the violin is that host from the Central TV Sports Channel, right? It sounds so amateurish and she probably didn't learn the instrument for long, but why am I so touched? Perhaps this is what youth means. Perhaps being youthful means that one will never be perfect! It's a really stunning music video!"

The reviews from the industry were very good!

The comments from the netizens were even better!

"This is really awesome!"

"I cried listening to it!"

"Me too! I can't calm down!"

"Zhang Ye, you're marvelous! Dong Shanshan, you're marvelous! Yu Yingyi and everyone else, you're all marvelous!"

"If only I was born a few years earlier! It would have been nice if I were in the same class as Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and the others! I'd really like to know what their story was!"

"This song is to die for!"

"I cry every time I listen to it!"

"My classmates, where did they all go!"

"I'm starting to miss my classmates too!"

#### Chapter 1186: Earning rave reviews!

Goof Group.

Several big names of the music industry were discussing the music video for "To Youth."

Fan Wenli: "This music video will definitely succeed and do very well."

Chen Guang: "Zhang'er's undoubtedly good at what he does."

But Amy said: "This time, Shanshan helped him a lot. Without Shanshan's tearful dance, this music video wouldn't have gotten as much attention as it did. Just look at the reactions on the Internet. The comments blew up and everyone is saying how captivated they were by Dong Shanshan's dance. I watched it five times and felt shocked every single time!"

Fan Wenli said: "In the past, everyone always referred to Dong Shanshan as just a vase. They always said that she could only depend on her figure and looks to make it in the industry, but this music video has shut many of them up. Dong Shanshan will definitely be a big name in the future as well."

Xiaodong said with a laugh: "Luckily I got Xiaoxian to delay the release of her single."

Li Xiaoxian was a little annoyed at that. "I was hoping that I could compete against Teacher Zhang."

Amy sent a sulking emote. "Oh, come on, how could you compete against him? It's Zhang Ye's song. Anyone who goes head to head against it would just die. There's no one who could go against him and win, unless it's Sister Zhang."

Suddenly, Zhang Ye appeared.

Zhang Ye: "@everyone"

"Wow, the star himself is finally here."

"What?"

"What's with the @everyone?"

"You're getting arrogant, aren't ya!"

"Zhang'er, the music video was really good. Congratulations!"

After Zhang Ye thanked them, he said: "Does anyone here know a good orthopedic institution overseas?"

"What's the matter?"

"An overseas hospital?"

"A hot-blooded youth like you asking about this, did the sun rise from the west today?"

Zhang Ye said: "I'm asking for a friend. She got in an accident two years ago and can't stand anymore."

When they read this, no one made any more jokes.

"No, I don't know any."

"I do know a medical practitioner overseas, but they don't specialize in orthopedics."

"Does anyone know someone? Help link Zhang Ye up if you do."

At this moment, Zhang Yuanqi appeared.

Zhang Yuanqi: "Send me some information about your friend's general condition."

Zhang Ye was taken aback, then immediately said: "Alright, thanks."

Soon after, she said: "I've spoken to my assistant. Get your friend to contact her and she'll help arrange everything for you. This is her number, 136XXXXXXXXX."

Zhang Ye: "Much thanks!"

Zhang Yuanqi: "It's nothing."

• • •

In the studio.

A group of people were looking very happy.

"Director Zhang, it was a great success!"

"It's on fire! Our first attempt at a music video and it's already sweeping the charts!"

"Just look at it, these are a few of the biggest billboard charts in the country!"

"Haha, is there anyone else? I want to know if there's anyone who wants to challenge us!"

"This is only our first music video single and its performance is already defying all common sense!"

"How can it not? I was crying after Teacher Shanshan finished dancing in the video! Just look at Weibo. That dance has gone viral! So many people are saying they want to learn it as well!"

Zhang Ye chuckled. "Who are they going to learn it from? That dance will look different every time Shanshan performs it. She's expressing her emotions through dance."

Zhang Zuo said, "That's why it's so touching!"

Zhang Ye asked, "How much has it earned?"

Zhang Zuo said, "Based on the current calculations, around 1.2 million RMB. Actually, it's not much money at all. The music video was released for free and the only way it could earn money was through copyright fees and hosting fees from the platforms. There's also a few cents earned each time the song is sung in karaoke, but that amount of money will only be recouped much later on." He thought that Zhang Ye was only concerned with making money from the music video, so he said, "If you're thinking about raising the profitability of the studio, this won't earn you more than you could earn by appearing in a commercial. A music video is just for getting your name out there."

"I know that." Zhang Ye naturally knew that this was so.

The business model of the entertainment industry had changed long ago.

Releasing an album to earn money?

Holding a concert to sell tickets?

Such ways of earning money were things of the past.

The model now was to release things for free. You'd still have to cut an album and hold concerts, but those were not done because it would earn you money. They were only a tool to get more popular and gain a reputation. When your fame went up, you'd automatically be worth much more. Afterwards, you could take on projects like commercial appearances, advertisements, movies, TV dramas, variety shows. They would all bring much greater profits since your name was already out there.

Zhang Ye thought about it for a bit, then said, "About that, if anyone asks, just tell them that the music video earned 2 million RMB."

Ha Qiqi was taken aback. "Ah? But we didn't earn that much from it."

"I know, but do it anyway," Zhang Ye instructed.

"OK."

"Understood."

Everyone knew Zhang Ye must have a reason for doing so.

Then Zhang Ye went to check his bank account. Together with the money earned from the music video, he wouldn't have a problem raising 2 million RMB. Since he didn't do commercial appearances, he didn't really have that much money either. But gathering a few million yuan was definitely not an issue. And so, he got his assistant, Little Wang to register a debit card and checking account in which he deposited 2 million RMB.

Then he called Dong Shanshan.

"Shanshan."

"Yes."

"The money is in."

"OK."

...

That same night.

At Qiu Yumei's house.

The doorbell rang.

"Ai, coming, coming." Little Qiu's husband went to get the door. When he saw who was outside, he immediately welcomed the person in after a moment of shock. "Tie-zi, you're here?"

"Is Sister Qiu home?"

"Yes, she's in."

Liu Tie was alone.

From the living room, Qiu Yumei's voice drifted out. "Tie-zi, come in quickly."

Liu Tie entered the room with a smile. "Sister Qiu, how are you feeling? I haven't visited you in quite a while."

Qiu Yumei said excitedly, "You guys appeared in Zhang'er's music video! I saw everyone! It's good, it's really good! Everyone's still the same! Shanshan is still as beautiful as ever, Yingyi has now become a sports host, everything is going really well for everyone!"

Liu Tie said, "Everyone misses you. They all wanted to come and visit you."

Little Qiu fell silent, then said bitterly, "I'm like this, so how can I face the others? Did you tell them about me? That mouth of yours! I won't tell you anything anymore."

Liu Tie said, "Even if I didn't tell them, they would have found out sooner or later."

Little Qiu repeatedly said, "You mustn't bring them here. I won't see any of them."

Liu Tie said, "I know, I didn't ask them to come."

Little Qiu heaved a sigh of relief. She really didn't want to face everyone.

"By the way, this is the money we earned from the music video." Liu Tie smiled and took out a debit card and placed it on the table. "There's 2 million RMB in it."

Her husband was stunned. "2 million RMB?!"

Qiu Yumei immediately said, "What's the meaning of this?"

Liu Tie said solemnly, "It was not my idea alone. Every one of us wanted to do this for you. Although we're saying that this money was earned through the music video, it was Zhang'er who made the biggest contribution. We were just doing our best to support him, not for anything else, but just for you to be able to stand on your two feet again." Then he took out a piece of paper. "Keep his telephone number safe and contact her today. Zhang'er found someone and has already contacted the best hospital in America. He already made some inquiries and found out from them that your kind of injuries are pretty difficult to recover from. But there's still a way to treat it as they have done something similar before. The only issue was that the previous case had dragged on for too long, so it affected the treatment."

He looked at Qiu Yumei's husband and said, "So go over there and have a look. If there's anything that you two need later, contact us again."

Her husband said emotionally, "This...how can we accept this?"

Liu Tie pushed the number into his hand. "If you need manpower, come to me. All I have is strength with no place to use

it. If you need money, go to Zhang Ye. He's so poor that all he has left is money. So don't drag this on. We're all doing this so that Little Qiu can get treated. If there's anything you want to protest, do it after you've recovered."

Qiu Yumei bit her bottom lip and said, "I can still stand?"

"Definitely!" Liu Tie said without hesitation.

All of a sudden, Qiu Yumei looked at the window. "Did they come?"

Liu Tie smiled and said, "No, it's only me. Zhang'er said he doesn't want to see you now. He wants to see that bubbly and active you from back then, not the whiny you who keeps staying in bed—those were his exact words, not mine. So take it up with him if you're offended, hahaha."

Qiu Yumei also laughed. "Is he still as hot-tempered as before?"

"Yes." Liu Tie said amused. "He's still as short-tempered as ever."

Qiu Yumei went silent for a moment. Then she sat up from her bed and smiled. "Go back and tell Zhang'er this. If I were to suddenly stand up in front of him someday, he better not have the living daylights scared out of him!"

Her husband said in a stunned manner, "Little Qiu."

Qiu Yumei said determinedly, "Make the call. I'm going to get my legs treated."

Her husband wept with joy. "I'll call, I'll make the call immediately!"

"Thanks to my old classmates, we can go and have a taste of American food!" Qiu Yumei's eyes shined with a glimmer of hope and she looked much more spirited!

Liu Tie felt very happy!

The exultant Sister Qiu from those years ago looked like she was back again!

# Chapter 1187: An invitation to the Welcoming Ceremony!

Downstairs, below Little Qiu's house.

A group of people were whispering among themselves.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye, Old Wang, and Old Zhou stood a little further away to smoke.

At this moment, footsteps came from the apartment corridor. Liu Tie appeared after coming down from upstairs.

"How was it?" Xiaoqian quickly asked.

Liu Tie hushed them. "Let's talk when we get out of the neighborhood."

Dong Shanshan said anxiously, "Did Little Qiu agree?"

"Will she go and get her legs treated?" Wang He asked him in concern.

Once they were out of the neighborhood, Liu Tie smiled and said, "She finally accepted the money after much persuasion. Sister Qiu's husband is already contacting Zhang'er's friend. I can tell that Sister Qiu's attitude this time is different. She really wants to get her legs treated so that she can spryly stand up in front of us!"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "We're all waiting for her!"

Ma Xufei slapped his thigh. "That's great!"

He Kui said excitedly, "We were afraid that she wouldn't agree to it and refuse to accept our money. Since Sister Qiu accepted it, everything can be discussed!"

Yu Yingyi asked, "Zhang'er, is the hospital you recommended good?"

Zhang Ye said, "It was recommended by Zhang Yuanqi, so it shouldn't be a problem."

Recently, their group of classmates had been gathering every day to discuss this matter. They genuinely cared about Qiu Yumei, so they were very happy about how this had turned out.

Hope filled their hearts.

Would she be able to stand again soon under her own strength?

Dong Shanshan gestured with her hand and said, "Come, let's head to my house. I'll treat everyone."

"Alright!"

"Is the school belle going to cook?"

"Me? Cook? I'm only afraid that you guys wouldn't eat my cooking!"

"Haha, I won't mind even if I'm poisoned to death!"

"I'm so happy today. Let's drink too!"

"Oh, come on, we better not drink."

"Why not, Shanshan?"

"The last time Zhang Ye, Yingyi, and the others came over to my house, we drank too much. As a result, Zhang'er and I nearly caused a delay at the Spring Festival Gala's rehearsal the next day. Everyone at Beijing TV was waiting just for the two of us."

"Hahahaha!"

"There was such a shameful incident?"

"Tell us about it along the way!"

Several cars started driving off and headed toward Dong Shanshan's villa at Yizhuang.

On the way, Zhang Ye received a call. It was from their former class advisor at Media College, Su Hongyan. He quickly answered: "Yo, Teacher Su."

Su Hongyan said happily: "I saw your music video. It was really

good."

Zhang Ye said to his classmates in the car, "Haha, Teacher Su just praised us."

Yu Yingyi giggled as she stretched her neck and said: "Teacher Su, did I play the violin well?"

"Yes, it was good." Su Hongyan said: "Are you all together?"

Zhang Ye switched the call to speakerphone. "Everyone is here. We're holding a party right now."

Su Hongyan said: "Heh, how convenient. College is reopening tomorrow and I have something urgent that I need to ask of you all. For tomorrow night's Welcoming Ceremony for the new students, the school has plans to make it even grander and livelier this year. They wanted me to contact you to come up with a program for us, and the rest of the kids from our class that year can also join in on the fun. It'll be fine if you guys just perform a song or something. Just do as you guys think will be suitable for the ceremony."

Zhang Ye exclaimed: "It's only a day away, why didn't you tell us earlier?"

Su Hongyan said: "You wrote 'To Youth' on the spot, don't you think I know well enough? Isn't one day more than enough for you? Little Zhang, I'm telling you, you better not decline this. You're an associate professor at our Media College, but now? You haven't even given a day's worth of lessons or participated in any of the school's activities. Surely you can't do things this way, right? You would have to prepare a lesson and perform a song for the school. Otherwise, if we bring up the fact that you composed that poem for Peking University, there would be no end to it."

Zhang Ye didn't know whether to laugh or cry: "Alright, you just want us to come up with a program, right? We'll come up with something then!"

"That's the right way." Su Hongyan laughed and said: "You have to prepare the lesson well and impart some of your experiences to this year's incoming students."

Zhang Ye said: "Sure."

Yu Yingyi stretched her neck and said: "We guarantee that we'll do a good job!"

Xiaoqian giggled and said: "Teacher Su, just you wait and see."

Su Hongyan said in satisfaction: "Alright, I'll be waiting to see what you guys come up with."

The car was parked.

They arrived at the villa.

Upon getting out from the car, Zhang Ye said, "Our class advisor has instructed, that as the alumni representatives, all of us are to perform a song together at the Welcoming Ceremony tomorrow. What do you guys say to that?"

"Sure!"

"Since Teacher Su has spoken, we definitely have to do it!"

"But my singing is terrible."

"No worries, Zhang Ye will be the lead singer anyway."

"I know how to play the drums a little."

"I've taken some bass lessons, but I'm not good at it."

"If you need piano accompaniment, look to me. This sis didn't take seven years of lessons for nothing when I was young."

The students who could pass the Media College entrance exam were mostly multitalented. Although they could not be compared to professionals, they had an assorted range of skills to some degree.

Zhang Ye said, "Alright then, I'll compose the song so we can quickly rehearse!"

Dong Shanshan smiled and said, "Then I'll go and borrow some instruments?"

"Can you get those?" Zhang Ye asked, "Where are you going to borrow them from?"

Dong Shanshan pointed at the surrounding villas. "Two of my neighbors are music teachers and have instruments at home."

Wang He volunteered. "I'll help you carry them over."

"School belle, just leave the menial work to us."

"And me too!"

"Wow, you're all so thoughtful!"

Everyone laughed.

It looked like they had been brought back to the times when they were still students. Dong Shanshan stood out from the rest as a group of male classmates was surrounding her. Meanwhile, Yu Yingyi, Xiaoqian, and other girls provided the comic relief with their impromptu remarks and gestures.

Zhang Ye started writing the song.

What should he use?

What should they sing for the students this time?

All of a sudden, Wang He, who just came back from carrying the instruments, received a call. Then he grew excited. "Da Hui! You rascal!" Then he switched the call to speakerphone and shouted to the others, "Come over quickly, Da Hui has contacted us!"

Zhang Ye was very happy.

Everyone came over and tried to get a word in.

Wang He said: "You rascal, where did you disappear to?"

Yu Yingyi said: "You even changed your phone number. Did you die?"

Xiaoqian said: "You're really too heartless!"

Old Wang said: "Yeah, no one could get in contact with you at all!"

At the other end of the line, Da Hui laughed and said: "Are the bros all there? I was working in Beijing all this while but haven't been doing well, so I was too embarrassed to face you."

Zhang Ye asked: "Where are you working?"

"At a construction site."

Zhang Ye laughed and said: "You're moving bricks?"

Da Hui answered: "Bah, I would have to be able to move them first to do that. I'm a supervisor at the work site, so you can consider me a junior manager of sorts."

Yu Yingyi exclaimed: "Can the jump in your profession be any larger than this!"

Zhang Ye said: "Da Hui, get over here quickly! We're going to perform a group song at our alma mater's Welcoming Ceremony tomorrow. You're the cultural backbone of our class and we're just missing you!"

Da Hui replied: "Alright, I'll head over right away!"

Liu Tie shouted: "Hurry up, bastard! Everyone here misses you a lot!"

Da Hui sounded like he was suppressing his excitement. "Alright!"

Half an hour later, another classmate who had lost contact with them finally managed to get in touch again. "You guys are awesome! Too awesome! I saw the music video you guys shot! I was so fucking touched that I cried all over the place! Where are you guys? I miss all of you...What? There's going to be a performance?...Me? I'll go! Of course I'll go! Send me the address!"

They thought they would not see each other again after all this

time. But many of their long-lost classmates reached out to each other again because of the "To Youth" music video. Zhang Ye and the others were all very excited!

Everyone was back!

Their old friends were all back!

# Chapter 1188: Starting a gang fight (First Half)

Throughout the night.

It got rather boisterous at Dong Shanshan's villa.

"Da Hui, have a taste of my kick!"

"Damn, enough of that crap already. We have to start rehearsing the song!"

"You deserve it for disappearing for so long!"

"Haha, Old Zhou. You're talking like you didn't disappear off to somewhere yourself!"

"Hey, hey, hey, can you guys be a little more focused?"

"Rehearse the song properly or Boss Zhang will bug us later. His songs are all classics, so we better not spoil it on our watch. Otherwise, he'll definitely cry his heart out."

"I don't care whether he cries or not. He put his smelly socks under my pillow when we were still in uni. That son of a gun! I've yet to take revenge on him after our graduation! Even though that guy's now an A-list celebrity, this bro isn't afraid of him. I'll expose this incident to the media later and shame him in public!"

"Don't, bro! I'm a teacher now and that wouldn't look good on me, man!"

"Hahahaha!"

"Keep it down. The neighbors have already complained to me three times."

There were sounds of them fooling around, playing instruments and rehearing their song.

With more than twenty of them gathered together, the entire villa was extremely noisy.

After fooling around and rehearsing for an entire night, everyone decided to stay over at Dong Shanshan's place. The girls took two of the bedrooms while the guys squeezed into another bedroom. Some of them even slept on the sofa or went into the guest bedroom to rest for the night. As they had some drinks earlier, they just laid down and fell asleep in the most disorganized of ways.

The next day.

It was the day of the commencement.

When everyone woke up, it was afternoon.

"Hey, wake up!"

"Look at the time! We better not delay today's important matters."

"We need to reach the gala venue before 6 PM."

"Are we going to practice more?"

"We've practiced quite a lot, so it shouldn't be a problem."

"Let's have something to eat before we leave for the Welcoming Ceremony."

Everyone got up and went to wash up. But as there were so many of them, they had to take turns and line up.

Dong Shanshan ordered takeouts for everyone while Yu Yingyi, Xiaoqian and the other girls tidied up the rooms.

Zhang Ye was the busiest of them all. This group of laypeople were free to mess around and do as they wish, but Zhang Ye could not do so. Adopting an attitude of rigorous teaching, he picked out a few of those who did not sing well last night and taught them how to do it properly. For example, he showed them how to control their breathing during certain parts of the song, and so on and so forth. When it came to work, he would never be sloppy.

Just when everyone got busy with their own parts, an

unexpected call came in.

Curious, Xiaoqian took a call from an unknown person. "Hello? Who is it?"

Then she heard a girl crying on the other end of the line.

"Who's this?"

"Xiaoqian."

"Ah! You're...Hu Feifei!"

Hu Feifei?

Everyone was stunned.

They were very familiar with this name. She was a gorgeous girl who was also their old classmate. But Hu Feifei was a very proud person and rather materialistic as well. Although she did not have any conflicts with anyone, their relationship with her could not be considered close. At most, she got along slightly better with Xiaoqian as Xiaoqian was also the type of person who liked buying brand-name goods. However, it was later rumored that Xiaoqian and Hu Feifei had a quarrel that led to them falling out.

Flustered, Xiaoqian said: "Don't cry anymore, don't cry...Tell me, what on earth happened? We're all here....Yes, we are all over here. Let's talk about it when you get here!"

After hanging up, everyone started questioning her.

Zhang Ye asked, "What happened?"

Dong Shanshan said, "Did something happen to Hu Feifei?"

Xiaoqian quickly said, "I don't know either. I haven't talked to her much since our senior year. She just started crying over the phone, so I asked her to come over here straight away!"

Wang He analyzed, "She never liked being outdone by others. Back in our uni days, she worked part-time for two months just to buy a bag that cost several thousand yuan. She cared a lot about

face and wouldn't cry in front of us over a trifling matter like she just did."

Yu Yingyi said, "That's not right. Hu Feifei met a rich boss even before she graduated from school. I heard that she was enjoying the good life, and there were even quite a few people who were extremely envious of her."

After about half an hour.

The doorbell rang. But when the door opened, everyone was stunned!

Zhang Ye said in a startled tone, "Hu Feifei?"

Xiaoqian's jaw dropped. "You...you..."

Their first impression of her was that she looked like an old auntie. She looked like she had aged a lot, and she did not even bother to dress up properly. To any outsiders, this woman looked around seven years older than the group of people in the house. But they could still recognize her. This was Hu Feifei, their old classmate!

Ma Xufei shouted, "How did you end up like this!"

Why did the class belle from back then become so haggard?

How many years had it been? How many years had it been since they graduated?

Back then, some people in the house who disliked Hu Feifei's character. But when they saw her in such a state, they did not say anything. There was no gloating. Instead, their hearts ached for her.

When Hu Feifei saw these familiar faces, she stood there in a trance. She looked at them one by one. "Liu Tie, He Kui, Shanshan, Zhang Ye..."

Dong Shanshan hurriedly said, "What happened, Feifei?"

Hu Feifei bit her lip as she shook her head. "It's nothing, it's

nothing. It's just that I really missed you guys. I saw your music video yesterday when I went to the grocery store. Then, I started crying because I really missed all of you. Actually, I've wanted to contact everyone these past few years. I've really missed you guys so much. I'm really fine." Tears started falling from her eyes as she spoke.

Xiaoqian said anxiously, "Impossible! Something must've happened to you!"

Dong Shanshan pulled Hu Feifei in. "Come, let's talk in the house."

Dong Shanshan, Xiaoqian, and a few of the girls pulled Hu Feifei into a room and closed the door.

Wang He sighed. "I really can't believe this."

He Kui said, "Hu Feifei was such a beautiful and proud person in the past. How did she..."

Zhang Ye said with a sunken expression, "Let's see what Shanshan and the others can find out from her."

"There's definitely something more to this," Liu Tie said.

About ten minutes later, they heard Xiaoqian and Yu Yingyi's furious scolding from the room. Then the door opened. The girls walked out angrily!

Xiaoqian cursed, "Son of a bitch!"

Yu Yingyi raged, "What a bastard! How could he bully you like that!"

The guys asked, "What's the matter? Hurry up and tell us!"

Xiaoqian's heart ached as she hugged Hu Feifei. "Her husband's not even human. He's been hitting her every day." She grabbed the cuff of Hu Feifei's sleeve. "Look at this!"

Hu Feifei did not want her to show them. "No!"

But her sleeve got pulled up. Bruises covered her arms!

Xiaoqian said, "This was inflicted just an hour ago!"

Yu Yingyi clenched her teeth and said, "There's even more on her body! We saw them just now; she's totally covered in bruises. This is simply..." Her eyes reddened!

Zhang Ye's eyes turned cold!

Wang He clenched his fists. "Goddamn!"

Liu Tie said in a rage, "Fuck! Is he even human?"

Dong Shanshan told them about how Hu Feifei glamorously married a tycoon after their graduation. But alas, her happiness was short-lived. Her husband soon found another woman. As Hu Feifei was a very proud woman, how could she possibly accept that? So she argued with him. But in the end, she got beaten up by him. After it happened once, it continued without end for the next three years.

Xiaoqian cried as she hugged Hu Feifei. "How did you endure it all this time?"

Hu Feifei started crying.

Yu Yingyi asked, "Why didn't you come to us?"

Hu Feifei sobbed, "Back then, I looked down on everyone and my relationship with you guys was only so-so. Everyone knew that I was doing very well and even got married to a rich guy, so h-how was I supposed to bring it up!"

Da Hui said, "Does your family know about this?"

Hu Feifei said somewhat afraid, "I didn't dare tell anyone, I didn't dare tell anyone at all!" She looked at everyone as she cried. "I regret this, I regret this so much. Zhang Ye, Shanshan, Yingyi, Wang He, I've been watching your shows every day all these years. Ever since the first day that you guys debuted, I've been watching all of your shows. I'm so envious of you. Back then, if I had...if I

had..."

Xiaoqian hugged her. "Don't say anymore, shhh."

Hu Feifei cried for a while before suddenly looking at her watch. "I have to go now. I told him that I went out to buy groceries. If he doesn't see me by the time he comes home, he'll..."

Wang He flew into a rage. "You still want to go back there?"

Zhang Ye said in a low and serious voice, "Where is he now?"

Hu Feifei said, "He's out drinking with his friends at the restaurant."

Dong Shanshan raised her head and looked at them. "Fellas, how should we handle this?"

Yu Yingyi also said, "Everyone, let's get to talking!"

Everyone kept exchanging glances.

Suddenly, Zhang Ye roared, "What's there to talk about! He's bullying her to such an extent! Is there still a fucking need to talk?"

Liu Tie shouted, "Fuck his ancestors!"

Wang He said, "Let's fight him!"

"Fuck him!"

"He's a blight on the earth!"

"I'll fucking destroy him today!"

"Brothers, let's go!"

"Yeah!"

The angry shouts were so loud that it was deafening!

# Chapter 1189: Starting a gang fight (Second half)

In the evening.

Night had not yet fallen though the sun had begun to set.

Outside a restaurant situated in a remote but beautiful location, five cars sped over and stopped a short distance away. When the car doors opened, more than 20 people got out from them!

Zhang Ye said in a cold voice, "Is it here?"

Hu Feifei tugged at him and said, "Don't go, don't go!"

Dong Shanshan stared at her. "Do you want to continue getting beaten up by him for the rest of your life?"

"I want a divorce. I-I'll try to think of a way to get it," Hu Feifei said.

Wang He said, "You should have divorced him long ago."

Hu Feifei said, "Don't worry about me. Especially Zhang Ye, Shanshan, and Yingyi. You three are celebrities now. I'll resolve this matter by myself. If the reporters hear of this, you'll be finished!"

Zhang Ye sneered. "It's not like I have never done something like this before. When did it all come tumbling down for me?"

Wang He said, "Right, let's just follow Zhang'er's lead. He's very experienced with this sort of situation!"

Hu Feifei said, "But there's a lot of them in there!"

Zhang Ye asked, "How many?"

Hu Feifei said, "A lot. I don't know exactly."

Dong Shanshan said firmly, "Don't worry, just leave it to us!"

Xiaoqian announced, "We have to help Feifei stand up to the

suffering she's been through!"

Hu Feifei was still trying to stop them as she was not willing to implicate everyone due to her personal problems. In the past, she was never considered to be close to them. But now that everyone was so infuriated over what had happened to her, she felt truly touched. Still, no matter what, she really did not wish to drag them down. This was especially true for Zhang Ye and Dong Shanshan. What was their status now? A university professor, a world-class mathematician, and a famous author with countless other honors. If they really got into a fight here...

However, Zhang Ye looked at Hu Feifei. "Hu Feifei, if you still have any pride left from back then, you should stop trying to convince us! You should be standing with us at this time in solidarity! The you that I knew was never like this! The Hu Feifei that I knew was always walking around with her nose up in the air! That's who my classmate was!"

Nose up in the air?

Could she go back to being her previous self?

Hu Feifei's eyes reddened!

Suddenly, there was some movement at the entrance of the restaurant.

"Boss He, thank you for treating us."

"Had your fill?"

"Of course."

"Boss He, Sister-in-law, then we'll be going now?"

"Hur hur, what are you talking about? I'm no sister-in-law."

"Isn't it just a matter of time?"

The group was led by a middle-aged fat man who was holding hands with a very beautiful young woman. He was chatting and laughing in the group. There were about 18 of them in total.

Yu Yingyi kept her eyes on the group. "Is it that fatass?"

Hu Feifei clenched her teeth as she nodded in affirmation!

Xiaoqian shouted, "Gentlemen, it is time to make our move!"

Yu Yingyi pointed at them and said, "Don't any of you back out! If anyone here gets taken down, I'll forever look down on them!"

Liu Tie said with a fierce look, "Cut the crap, let's fight them!"

Old Wang said impatiently, "It's not like I've fucking never gotten involved in a gang fight before!"

Old Wang then looked around and picked out a thin wooden stick from the bushes.

When Zhang Ye saw that, he said, "What are you doing?"

Old Wang exclaimed, "Getting ready to fight of course."

Everyone looked at Zhang Ye, unsure about what he was driving at. But when they thought about it, they realized he was right. They were all people of status, so if they injured others badly with a stick, it would be hard to explain. Zhang Ye was right to remind them.

Old Wang threw the stick away.

But the next second, Zhang Ye also walked over to the bushes and searched around. He fished out two bricks and threw one of them to Old Wang. "Have you really been in a fight before? Who can you beat up with that thin wooden stick of yours! Use this instead! Smash it into their fucking faces! Brothers! Move out!"

Everyone was dumbfounded!

"Holy shit!"

"Zhang'er is still the most ruthless one amongst us!"

"Well done!"

"I'll find a brick as well!"

The people at the restaurant's entrance discovered their presence as their group was too large!

Hu Feifei's husband looked over in bewilderment and was startled. Then his expression darkened. His friends and his company's staff were also stunned when they saw them.

"Sister-in-law?"

"Isn't that person Boss He's..."

"What's going on?"

"Who are those people?"

"Ah, is-isn't that Dong Shanshan?"

"Zhang Ye! I see Zhang Ye!"

The mistress blanched!

Boss He cursed angrily, "Bitch, you—"

But before he could finish, Zhang Ye rushed him. "Motherfucker!"

He swung the brick and smashed it straight into the chest of Hu Feifei's husband. The massive force sent the 100-kg fatass tumbling to the ground!

Boss He cried out in pain, "Ahhhhhh!"

He Kui shouted, "Good one!"

Wang He yelled, "Kill them!"

With that confrontation, a fight broke out!

Zhang Ye did not care about the others as he lunged at the fatass and kicked him!

Only then did Boss He's friends who were standing beside him manage to react. They charged forward in a rage, wanting to beat Zhang Ye up!

Wang He kicked one of Zhang Ye's attacker's leg!

Old Wang screamed as he swung his brick around randomly!

Liu Tie was the most capable at fighting. He grabbed someone who was planning to sneak up on Zhang Ye and punched the person several times!

Da Hui got punched once and became furious. He picked up whatever was next to him and smashed it into someone regardless of the consequences!

Meanwhile, Zhang Ye repeatedly kicked Boss He. "I'll fuck your grandpa! You wanna act mighty? Go ahead! How dare you hit our classmate? You must be fucking crazy!"

Boss He shouted with a bruised and swollen face, "Call for help! Go and call for help!"

Xiaoqian cheered, "Yeah! Beat him up good!"

Dong Shanshan did not idle around either. "Old Wang, behind you! He Kui! Get that person beside you!"

With slightly more than a dozen people up against over twenty of them, the fight was very one-sided. Without much resistance, more than half of that fatass's followers fell to the ground!

Boss He's mistress yelled, "Call the police! They're beating up people! That bitch has gathered reinforcements!"

Hu Feifei erupted. She rushed forward and slapped the mistress. "Fuck you! You're the one who's the bitch!" Smack smack smack! She gave her a few more slaps!

The mistress fought back by grabbing Hu Feifei's hair!

As Xiaoqian was standing closest to her, she held the mistress tightly and kept her under control!

Yu Yingyi let out a curse and rushed over to help as well!

The three women started hitting one woman, each of them looking fiercer than the others!

A short minute later, the fatass and his followers had all been beaten to the ground!

Zhang Ye grabbed him by his collar and punched him a few more times. "You fucking bastard!"

Wang He ran over in anger and kicked Hu Feifei's husband in the stomach. "Bastard!"

With vicious eyes, Liu Tie said, "You should have checked out who her classmates were before you hit her! From now on, I'll fucking give you a beating whenever I see you on the streets!"

The fatass was so badly beaten that he couldn't say a word!

His followers were lying on the ground and rolling around as they wailed in pain!

As for the onlookers nearby, they were all so dumbfounded that they even forgot to take out their cell phones to take pictures or record videos of the fight. The entire time, they looked shocked and astonished!

Zhang Ye?

Dong Shanshan?

Yu Yingyi?

What are they doing?

Are they...taking part in a gang fight?

No, no, they must definitely be shooting a movie. How could they as people of status possibly be involved in a gang fight? Right, they must be shooting a movie! Eh, but where are the cameras?

All of a sudden, police sirens wailed!

Ma Xufei shouted, "The police are here!"

Zhang Ye bellowed, "Get in the cars! Run!"

Yu Yingyi said, "Fellas, it's time to retreat!"

Everyone scattered at the command and drove off immediately after hopping into the cars!

Only then did the onlookers realize what had just happened!

This was not a movie shoot!

This was really happening!

# Chapter 1190: Let us finish singing this last song!

The police cars came to a sudden stop.

As someone had reported a gang fight, three police cars were dispatched to handle the case.

When one of the police officers got out of his car and saw a group of people wailing on the ground, he looked up and saw several familiar faces running off into a car. He didn't know what to think.

Eh?

Teacher Dong Shanshan?

Teacher Zhang Ye?

And there was even Central TV's Yu Yingyi?

A gang fight? Surely this was just a filming session, right? Did Zhang Ye finally cross over into the movie industry?

The policeman was speechless. "Who called the police? Is this a prank call!"

"Ambulance! Call an ambulance!" The fat man clutched his stomach and groaned.

That policeman gave him a look. "Alright, quit groaning already. Which film crew are you all from?"

The fat man: "..."

The crowd: "..."

That policeman said, "Get up, your director has left, so why are you all still acting? Do you have to put in so much effort? You seem pretty good at acting. Which institute did you guys graduate from? Central Academy of Drama or Shanghai Theater Academy?"

The group of people who had just been beaten up grew helplessly

angry!

Pff! Someone spat a broken tooth out onto the ground!

That policeman was startled.

The nearby crowd was also taken aback!

"Holy shit!"

"They're not doing a shoot!"

"Chase after them!"

"Get in the car and give chase, quick!"

Up ahead.

Zhang Ye was speeding like crazy!

Dong Shanshan was driving another car in front and was going at an even faster speed than him!

Liu Tie was screaming, "They're catching up!"

Yu Yingyi exclaimed, "Go faster!"

Zhang Ye asked as he drove, "When does the Welcoming Ceremony start?"

"It's already started!" Xiaoqian said.

Yu Yingyi added, "Our performance is going to be the finale, we can still make it!"

Zhang Ye laughed loudly. "Alright then, sit tight!"

Hu Feifei was almost in tears. "Zhang'er, how can you still laugh? We're in big trouble this time, really big trouble." Looking at the police cars appearing in the rearview mirror, her heart was in pieces. She said remorsefully, "It's all my fault. I'm to blame for getting all of you into such trouble. If I had known this would happen, I wouldn't have come to you guys! What are we going to do now?"

Wang He was also in the same car as them.

Wang He also got a little worried after the impulsiveness of his actions. He said, "I'm only a small-time host, so it doesn't matter much for me. At most, I'd get detained for a few days. What can they do to me? But it's different for Zhang Ye, Shanshan, and Yingyi!"

Yu Yingyi smiled and said, "At most, I'll just quit my job and start over!"

Zhang Ye laughed. "Well said, we can always start over!"

Hu Feifei said anxiously, "But you guys—"

"Hu Feifei, let me ask you this," Zhang Ye interrupted. "Did you get a kick out of beating them up?"

"...I did!" Hu Feifei said through her teeth.

Zhang Ye asked another question. "Did it help you blow off steam?"

Hu Feifei revealed a smile. "Yes!"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Haha, then that settles it! That matters more than anything! What's the point of worrying? Whatever happens, happens! Feifei, your smile is very nice. You've shown this bro that haughtiness of yours again. Good, keep it up! The condescending Hu Feifei from that time was never one to get bullied!"

Hu Feifei didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "Stop ridiculing me already. Listen to the words you're using to describe me. Don't you have anything better to say about me?"

Yu Yingyi said with a giggle, "His tongue has always been this sharp!"

Xiaoqian hugged her over her shoulders. "Feifei, divorce him immediately when you get back!"

Yu Yingyi said, "Yeah, you have our support! We've got your back!"

Hu Feifei summoned up the courage and nodded furiously. "OK!"

She looked at Yu Yingyi, then at Xiaoqian, then at Zhang Ye. Without realizing it, Hu Feifei closed her mouth tightly as her eyes reddened.

Today was the happiest day since her graduation!

It was still her classmates who were the best!

It was still these long-time friends who were the best!

Thank you, everyone, thank you!

Zhang Ye warned, "Sit tight, I'm going faster!"

Wang He said, "Drive!"

Yu Yingyi shouted, "Gogogo!"

All of a sudden in this tense moment, Xiaoqian sang loudly in a rather good mood, "Run forward! / Despite the side eyes and insults..."

There were a few cars ahead of them who were also making their escape!

Old Wang said in a panic, "What're we gonna do! What're we gonna do!"

Ma Xufei asked, "Eh? Where's Zhang'er's car?"

Dong Shanshan looked into the rearview mirror. "They must have gone to draw the police away. Let's go faster, we'll meet up at the school. We must finish performing that song!"

He Kui said in an unaffected manner, "Shanshan, you didn't beat them up anyway, so don't follow us when we reach the school. Just run. Let the police arrest us!"

Dong Shanshan said, "Why are you saying that! All of us were in it together, so we must take responsibility for it together as well!"

"Great!"

"We'll take responsibility together!"

"All for one, and one for all!"

Up ahead.

They had reached Media College.

The cars were furiously honking as they went straight in through the gates.

The security guard was dumbfounded by the sight and did not know what was happening!

As Zhang Ye was leading the police on a wild chase, he was the last one to enter the school premises. His car window was already down as he slammed on his brakes at the main gate. He shouted to the security guard there, "There are some police cars behind us. Help us hold them off for a bit. Thanks, man!"

When the guard saw it was Zhang Ye, he immediately said, "Professor Zhang? Alright! I understand!"

Police?

Why was there the police?

He did not probe further and immediately closed the main gate!

Zhang Ye was a graduate of Media College and also an associate professor at the school. Needless to say, he was definitely going to side with one of their own!

Another guard suddenly appeared. "What's going on? Why did you close the gate?"

That old guard said, "Don't ask. Let's go and pretend we're not around!"

The young guard said dumbfounded, "Pretend we're not around?"

The old guard replied, "We'll just hang around in the bathroom and not open the gate for anyone. Professor Zhang must have stirred up some big trouble again, so let's help him delay things for a bit!"

The young guard said, "What? Zhang Ye? Understood!"

At the entrance of the Grand Auditorium.

Dong Shanshan and the others were waiting anxiously!

"Where are they?"

"Why are they not here yet?"

"Give Zhang'er a call!"

"Did he get caught?"

"Hurry up, the ceremony is ending soon!"

Over a dozen of them were pacing around anxiously!

A car engine rumbled closer!

"He's here!"

"It's Zhang'er's car!"

"This is great!"

The BMW came to a stop!

Zhang Ye, Yu Yingyi, Hu Feifei, and the others got out!

Dong Shanshan yelled, "Zhang'er!"

Zhang Ye shouted, "Let's run inside!"

Wang He said, "Let's go! Hurry, hurry, hurry!"

With that shout, Zhang Ye led the pack into the auditorium!

Dong Shanshan and Hu Feifei smiled at each other as over twenty people followed behind them and ran inside!

There were students all around.

There were also some teachers.

Watching this happen, everyone was stunned. What's happening? What are they doing? The ceremony has already

started; why are they only here now?

The twenty-plus group of them were running like crazy!

All of them knew they were in trouble. They knew today's incident was absolutely not a small matter at all. However, none of them stopped in their tracks. Instead, they ran even faster as the adrenaline rush made them even more hyper. Almost all of them felt like they had gone back to their student days where they had not a care in the world, a time where laughter and anger filled their days. At that time, they were also rowdy like now, chasing and running without stop!

They were there!

They were almost there!

There was only one song left!

Let us finish singing this last song!

## Chapter 1191: Uncompromising through the years!

In the auditorium.

The atmosphere at the Welcoming Ceremony was extremely passionate.

"It's almost ending."

"We're already into the final program."

"I heard that Zhang Ye and Dong Shanshan will be performing!"

"Yeah, our seniors are all back!"

"I'm so looking forward to it!"

"Right, I like them sooo much!"

"I heard that they'll be singing, and it's going to be an original too!"

"I applied for Media College this year just because of Zhang Ye!"

"Me too, and we're going to get to see them immediately too!"

The freshmen were all waiting in anticipation. Quite a few of the sophomores and juniors also came to attend today's ceremony. They were also waiting to watch Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and the other seniors' show!

But unknown to them, the backstage had plunged into chaos!

The staff members kept making calls until their cell phones died.

"No one's answering!"

"Where are they?"

"Why aren't they here yet?"

Ever since the ceremony began, they hadn't seen a trace of them!

Su Hongyan was getting very anxious and pacing back and forth.

Suddenly, heavy footfalls sounded. She looked up immediately. "Aiyo! My little ancestors, where have you all been?"

Wang He panted, "We're here!"

Su Hongyan was taken aback. "Hu Feifei's here too?

Hu Feifei felt extremely agitated. "T-Teacher Su!"

Su Hongyan took her hand. "Where did you disappear to for so long? And the rest of you, why did you arrive in such a..."

Old Wang huffed and puffed. "Teacher, it's difficult to explain!"

Yu Yingyi asked, "Is it our turn yet?"

"It's your turn right now!" Su Hongyan said, "Quickly get ready!"

A distance away, a school official said, "What's there to get ready for? There's no time, just get onstage!"

Zhang Ye said, "Alright, let's go!"

The group of them shouted in unison, "Let's go!"

The stage went dark and the curtains were drawn.

An atmosphere of excitement was building up in the auditorium as everyone knew that the finale was coming up.

"Alumni!"

"Alumni!"

"Alumni!"

"Alumni!"

A lot of people in the audience started shouting!

There were no empty seats in the thousand-person auditorium!

Behind the curtains, Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and the others were on their instruments. The microphones were also in place.

Xiaoqian smiled and said, "Fellas, how long has it been since we performed on stage together? Do you guys remember?"

"Four years," Hu Feifei said with a smile.

Dong Shanshan's reminiscing could be seen on her features. "Yeah, it's been four years. The last time was during prom in our junior year. Our class sang a song that shocked the entire school as we performed it too terribly. We even got singled out to be criticized!"

Da Hui belly laughed and said, "Then let's shock them again!"

Zhang Ye said, "Fellas, let's tell this story of ours to the underclassmen!"

Hu Feifei put out her hand. "Youth never dies!"

Zhang Ye placed his hand on hers. "Youth never dies!"

Dong Shanshan shouted, "Youth never dies!"

Everyone's hands came together!

"Let's do it!"

"Gooo!"

The curtains lifted!

Su Hongyan and many of the other teachers were sitting in the audience.

The many students of Media College started screaming crazily!

Zhang Ye carried a semi-acoustic guitar and walked to the lead singer's position. Yu Yingyi raised a violin, Da Hui took the drummer's position, and everyone else got into their positions!

Zhang Ye nodded to Da Hui.

Da Hui snapped his fingers for the countdown and played a beat! Once.

Twice.

Thrice.

The piano played as well.

The strumming of the guitar followed!

Zhang Ye closed his eyes and stepped up to the microphone. He opened the <u>song</u> with a very high note, his voice stunning the entire audience of teachers and students. He sang loudly, "Just where is that world overflowing with flowers? / If it's a real place, then I will find a way to get there."

The second lead vocalist, Wang He, laughed, "I want to tower on the highest peak in that place, / ignoring if there are steep cliffs all around."

While smiling, Dong Shanshan sang, "By living fast and loving hard, death is nothing to fear. / Not living for the sake of others but to be proud of myself here."

Da Hui continued drumming and stuck his head close to the microphone. "I have never chosen to give up on my dreams, / even on days that are broken at the seams."

Old Wang raised a hand. "Perhaps I have no talent!"

Ma Xufei sang, "But I have the simplicity of a dream!"

He Kui had a smile on his face. "I will demonstrate it with all of my being."

Hu Feifei sang emotionally, "Perhaps my mouth is clumsier than my feet!"

Xiaoqian embraced her. "But I'll never stop searching."

Yu Yingyi shouted, "I will give all of my youth without regret!"

All of a sudden, a roar of voices exploded!

The music and rhythm soared!

Everyone who was standing onstage gave a look to the person beside them. Zhang Ye looked at Wang He; Dong Shanshan looked at Yu Yingyi; Xiaoqian looked at Hu Feifei. Then, all of them raised their hands in unison!

They roared together!

There were mad grins on their faces!

"Run forward!

"Despite the side eyes and insults!

"How can you experience all life has to offer without suffering!"

They put down their hands and then pounded their chests.

"Destiny can't make us kneel and beg for mercy!

"Even if!

"Our arms are soaked in blood!

"Keep running!

"With the pride of a pure heart!

"How can you see the beauty of life if you don't stick it out!

"Instead of clinging to life, live passionately, burn brightly!

"Someday it will sprout again!"

Su Hongyan looked totally stunned!

All of the students in the audience also looked very shocked!

The imagery of a "me against the world spirit" and "youthful passion," the story of Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, Hu Feifei, and the others, everyone could seemingly see all of it in this moment!

All of them stood up!

In this very moment, the entire audience was moved!

The auditorium doors had been opened at some point in time, and there were eight or nine police officers who had entered the building. However, they did not go to arrest anyone. They just stood there stunned as they watched the people onstage in shock. Similar to those in the audience, an image was conjured up in their minds as they felt the full effects of the song as well!

Zhang Ye?

Dong Shanshan?

Yu Yingyi?

Wang He?

Just what kinds of people were in this group?

Everyone saw the illusion of a brilliant light flashing before their eyes!

Zhang Ye, Wang He, and Da Hui raised their fists. "Run forward!"

Ma Xufei, Old Wang, and He Kui roared, "Despite the side eyes and insults!"

Dong Shanshan, Yu Yingyi, and Xiaoqian shoutsang in a high register, "How can you experience all life has to offer without suffering!"

Hu Feifei's tears were flowing down her cheeks as she howled while crying, "Destiny can't make us kneel and beg for mercy! / Even if! Our arms are soaked in blood!"

The people onstage were moving closer and closer to each other!

Then they hugged each other by putting their hands over each other's shoulders and screamed as crazily as they could.

"Keep running!

"With the pride of a pure heart!

"How can you see the beauty of life if you don't stick it out!

"Instead of clinging to life, live passionately, burn brightly!"

All of them looked at one another!

Zhang Ye started them off by raising his middle finger and pointing it angrily at the sky!

Dong Shanshan looked up and raised her middle finger!

Hu Feifei put up her hand and raised her middle finger!

All of them raised their middle fingers!

Fuck giving up!

Fuck cowardice!

Fuck reality!

All of them pointed angrily at the heavens and looked up at it.

"For our beautiful dreams!

"Uncompromising through the years!"

Su Hongyan was wiping away her tears!

Many of the students could feel their blood surging!

These were their alumni!

These were their alumnae!

Wonderful! Your story...is just wonderful!

## Chapter 1192: Zhang Ye gets arrested again!

Cheers!

Screams!

Applause!

Yells!

The entire auditorium was turned upside down!

"Chasing Dreams with a Pure Heart" was from Zhang Ye's previous world and GALA's most famous song. It was an extremely difficult song to sing as its high notes were almost unreachable by most singers. It was even hard for GALA 1 's own lead vocalist. Other than Zhang Ye, everyone else's singing was appalling. They sang from their throats, with some of them even cracking or getting hoarse. There was even someone who sang the lyrics wrong. And yet, somehow, no one listening felt that their singing was bad. Instead, they were so shocked they felt it was even more touching than listening to those who sang with great technique. It was an indescribable feeling!

Some songs were probably not meant to be sung with a good voice!

They depended more on emotions and heart.

A pure heart?

"How awesome!"

"'Destiny can't make us kneel and beg for mercy?' The lyrics are really great!"

"Uncompromising through the years!"

"Alum!"

"Alumna!"

"Ahhhh!"

"This is the best live performance I've ever heard!"

"Why are our alumnae crying too!"

Hu Feifei, Xiaoqian, and a few other girls were bawling on stage. In these few years since their graduation, they had been through too much. Treated with indifference? Setbacks? Hardship? Derision? They did not know how they made it through to where they were now. They never thought that they would be able to gather here again one day and do something so crazy, and also perform such an amazing song!

Several teachers in the audience were sighing.

A former teacher of theirs said, "These children have all grown up."

But another teacher said, "They've not grown up at all."

Su Hongyan smiled and said, "Yes, they're still the same as they were back then. I've never in my life advised a class of students that gave me a headache as bad as they did!"

A female teacher laughed and said, "It's now other people's turn to have a headache over them!"

The performance was over!

The Welcoming Ceremony also came to an end!

Zhang Ye and the others headed backstage.

Wang He said, "That was so cool!"

Da Hui laughed heartily. "I feel like my throat has been split open!"

"That was fun!" Old Wang shouted. "Exciting!"

Ma Xufei said, "We haven't let ourselves loose in so many years!"

Hu Feifei gave a wry smile and said, "For that bit I sang, Xiaoqian had to teach me for so long while we were in the car. But I still couldn't remember all the lyrics and even sang a line wrong, didn't

"Perhaps my hands are clumsier than my feet."

That line was sung as "Perhaps my mouth is clumsier than my feet."

Zhang Ye said happily, "It's fine. That line suited you more, so it's pretty good."

Yu Yingyi rejoiced, "I had such a kickass time singing today!"

Zhang Ye whistled to get everyone's attention and said, "We've finished singing. So let's not keep those people waiting anymore. Let's move out, fellas!"

"Let's go."

"Yeah, let's go!"

"Haha!"

"Time to depart!"

"Whoa, what do you mean by time to depart? That sounds so pessimistic!"

"Then what should I call it?"

"We're just surrendering ourselves."

"That sounds even worse!"

"We should say that we're martyring ourselves instead!"

"Man, you guys are going off on a tangent."

There was no hesitation from everyone as they walked outside in laughter.

A group of police officers were standing outside, not knowing what to do.

A policeman asked, "Brother Li, do we go inside to arrest them?"

The old policeman rolled his eyes. "If we do that at this time, the students will definitely prevent us from leaving."

"Then what do we do?"

"What if they escape? We can't—"

"Yeah, we can't wait around anymore!"

While they were discussing, the police officers suddenly turned their heads in surprise when they saw Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, Hu Feifei, and the others walking towards them in laughter. The police officers couldn't react to this sight. What was going on?

Zhang Ye said, "Sorry about that, officers."

Yu Yingyi said, "We'll be going with you now."

Liu Tie put out his hands. "Do we need to be cuffed?"

Old Wang blinked and said, "Does this count as turning ourselves in?"

The police officers looked at one another. "Aren't you guys going to run?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "We've finished singing and done what we needed to do, so why do we need to run?" Then he looked at two of the police officers and said in surprise, "Why do you two look a little familiar?"

The two of them didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "Because we've arrested you before."

Hu Feifei laughed, "Pfft!"

Dong Shanshan and everyone else were also giggling.

"Ah? When?" Zhang Ye was taken aback.

The police officers said, "A few years ago, you beat up someone at Beijing TV. That case was handled by our police station. Even now, the little dark room has that poem you wrote while you were in there."

Zhang Ye said endearingly, "Oh, my old friends."

The police officers gave bitter smiles. Who are your old friends?

Can't you give us less trouble to deal with? They really did not want to arrest Zhang Ye, not to mention Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi this time as well. Thinking back to when Zhang Ye was not as famous as he was now, he alone had almost single-handedly turned the police station upside down. There were so many reporters and citizens who nearly flattened their police station to the ground. Just that memory alone made them fearful.

But they still had to handle the case.

One of the police officers sighed. "Get in the car then."

Zhang Ye nodded. "Let's go."

The group of them rowdily followed.

Driving back, the police still felt worried that this group of people would try to escape. They were on full alert to prevent that from happening. After all, Zhang Ye had once created trouble for them at their station. But by the time their police cars arrived back at the station, there were no tricks from Zhang Ye and the others. They did not even kick up a fuss or complain about anything. Instead, they were all very calm and cooperative.

But unbeknownst to them, Zhang Ye had already accepted this outcome.

The last time he was arrested, it was because he had been a good samaritan. It was Beijing Television's Wang Shuixin's son who tried to hit others first that made Zhang Ye hit him in retaliation. He didn't find that to be wrong, so of course he wasn't happy about getting arrested. He definitely had to reason with them as he was not at fault and just did it in self-defense. However, Zhang Ye and the others knew that they were definitely in the wrong this time. It was definitely an offense to beat up other people, so they did not argue against it!

When it was time to admit that he was in the wrong, he would do so!

When he had to answer to his responsibilities, he would never run away!

• • •

Online.

A video of the Welcoming Ceremony at Media College was uploaded to the internet!

"Chasing Dreams with a Pure Heart" went viral!

"It's great!"

"The lyrics are awesome!"

"Who wrote this song?"

"Idiot, it was definitely Zhang Ye!"

"They sang great!"

"Shanshan also knows how to sing? I have a crush on her!"

"Haha, Yu Yingyi was there too!"

"All of Zhang Ye's classmates were there?"

"Their friendship is really admirable."

"So that was what their youth was like! To keep running forward!"

"I could feel my blood race when I listened to the song! It's so intense!"

Not long after, breaking news struck!

It came with nearly no warning or anticipation!

"Newsflash: Zhang Ye Arrested!"

"Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi were taken away to the police station on suspicion of taking part in a gang fight!"

"Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and others involved in a gang fight!"

This news came like a crash of thunder. It exploded across China,

and anyone who heard of it very nearly vomited blood the moment they found out!

They had been arrested?

A gang fight?

Countless people fainted on the spot!

If it were just Zhang Ye involved in the gang fight, we'd believe it. Just at the recent Olympics, he beat up those foreign referees. This fellow would always stir up some trouble every now and then, so we've gotten used to it!

But what are you guys saying now?

Dong Shanshan?

Yu Yingyi?

Those two were involved in a gang fight?

Fuck that! Did you get it wrong?

They are our goddesses, come on!

On Weibo.

"My titanium dog eyes are blinded!"

"Mine too! Oh, my goddess Shanshan!"

"What the fuck, what gang fight?"

"Is this fake news?"

"It's definitely not fake news, but what really happened?"

"Yeah, why did it happen?"

"Zhang Ye is used to getting into fights, but how could Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi have fought as well? Something must've happened, and it must have been a major issue!"

"Zhang Ye, your sister!"

"Bringing our goddesses to a gang fight? Only you would do

something like that!"

"Our goddesses have been led astray by you!"

## Chapter 1193: A pure heart!

At the police station.

The bureau chief arrived in a hurry.

Zhang Ye acted friendly and said while waving, "Chief, long time no see."

The bureau said helplessly, "Teacher Zhang, what are you doing here again? I was just going to Tianjin on a business trip when I heard and had to rush back. Spare us, will you? The last incident you stirred up caused chaos at our police station. We were put on the radar of the city's Public Security Department and investigated until I nearly lost my job. It's not that I'm curious, but how have I offended you this time? Why do you keep coming back to haunt me? Can you do that to someone else? Go to another police station? I'll thank you for that, Teacher Zhang!"

Zhang Ye gave a dry laugh and said, "It's not like I know which district you're in charge of."

The bureau chief looked listless. "So what is it this time?"

Ma Xufei said, "It was a misunderstanding, just a misunderstanding!"

Da Hui blinked and said, "Chief, since we're so familiar with each other, can you please let this go?"

The bureau chief rolled his eyes, thinking who they all were trying to act familiar with him. "How am I supposed to let this go? Someone has reported you guys for beating up people in a gang fight out on the public streets. You even hurt quite a few people."

Yu Yingyi asked, "Are their injuries serious?"

The bureau chief looked at the old policeman nearby.

The old policeman gave a bitter laugh. "It's not exactly serious, and they should only be external injuries. But a few of them are

insisting on remaining in the hospital. They want to stay the night and get thoroughly examined, so they're definitely not going to let this go."

The bureau chief banged on the table and said, "This matter is very severe."

Hu Feifei stood forward. "It was all because of me; I was the one who led them, so arrest me!"

Zhang Ye said, "Oh come on, you need to be believable when you make such a claim. I was the one who led them."

The bureau chief said, "We already know part of the story from the victims themselves. Now tell me your side of it. We need to take your statements as well."

The old policeman said, "You guys are schoolmates, right?"

Wang He corrected, "Classmates."

Zhang Ye immediately pointed at Hu Feifei. "Our classmate was beaten by that fatass He. It's a case of domestic violence that has happened for two to three years."

Dong Shanshan said, "Feifei, show them!"

Hu Feifei pulled up her sleeves.

A policewoman went over to have a look, then looked at Feifei's neck and took a deep breath before saying angrily, "The blows are this ruthless?" She turned back around and said, "Chief, this is really too much!" A woman would feel for a woman, especially on matters of domestic violence.

Hu Feifei did not say a word.

Zhang Ye pointed at her and said, "Tell me, do you think we can tolerate this? We had to do something!"

The bureau chief smacked his lips. "You still can't beat people up on the streets."

Zhang Ye said, "Then next time, we can beat them up secretly?"

"Of course not!" The bureau chief was floored. "You guys have broken the law."

Zhang Ye nodded and said, "Alright, then let me take responsibility for this alone. Let the rest go."

"Zhang'er!"

"What are you saying?"

"That's pointless!"

"Everyone had a part in it!"

"Right, we'll bear responsibility for it together!"

"Isn't it just getting detained? We'll take it!"

The bureau chief looked at the group of hot-blooded youths helplessly. "You're all pretty loyal." After a pause, he continued asking them about the details of what happened in the evening. Then he gestured to a few of the police officers and asked them to leave the room before saying to Zhang Ye and the others, "We handle several such cases a day, and they're considered neither major nor minor matters. From a moral viewpoint, Little Hu is definitely the victim and the judgment should be biased against you guys. But the way that you guys chose to handle this was very inappropriate. Couldn't you have reported it to the police? Couldn't you have contacted a lawyer to sue him? Why did you have to resort to violence? That's right, Teacher Zhang, aren't you a lawyer yourself?"

Zhang Ye said, "I haven't gotten my license to practice yet."

The bureau chief sighed. "The one who attacks first is the most disadvantaged. Besides, they reported it to the police and have evidence and eyewitnesses as well. Even if I want to help you guys, there's a limit to what I can do. So unless the other party decides not to pursue this, the case won't be dropped. We'll have to go by

procedure and detain whoever needs to be detained."

There was a knock on the door.

The bureau chief said, "Come in."

A policewoman said, "Chief, you have a call."

The bureau chief looked over. "Who is it?"

The policewoman looked at Zhang Ye. "It's Zhang Ye's agent, Rao Aimin."

Then another person came in. "Chief, the PR rep of Zhang Ye's Studio, Ha Qiqi, is here."

Soon after, another policeman ran in and said, "Chief, a director at the Ministry of Public Security called to plead for Teacher Zhang."

Ministry of Public Security?

The police officers' eyes twitched.

Zhang Ye blinked several times. He knew who it was. Rao Aimin's junior martial brother must have found someone to speak up for him since he worked at the Ministry of Public Security.

"Chief!"

"The media has arrived!"

"There are more than 30 reporters blocking the main entrance!"

"Chief, there are people from Beijing TV here as well. It's Teacher Dong Shanshan's boss!"

"Central TV Sports Channel's deputy director is here too! They want to bail Teacher Yu out."

They could hear an uproar happening outside.

Especially that loud voice of Ha Qiqi's. It was extremely piercing. "And what are you all arresting him for? Based on what charges! The lawyer is already on the way here! I want to see Director

Zhang right now!"

The bureau chief wiped his sweat away and said, "Go and handle it."

The door closed.

Feeling a headache coming on, the bureau chief said, "People from all kinds of places are starting to arrive here. Just look at this, what's going to happen now? Do you think it's easy for me to be a police chief here?"

Zhang Ye said, "I'm sorry about that. Blame it on me, I've really troubled you guys this time."

The bureau chief did not expect to hear such words from Zhang Ye, so he said, "Teacher Zhang, we've crossed paths before. I know what kind of person you are and that you would not hit others for no reason. If I were in your shoes and knew that my good friend was getting abused, I would've done the same even if it meant getting detained! But the problem is that you're too well-known. Everyone in China knows you, and you have so many enemies as well. Now that this matter has blown up on the Internet, we cannot downplay this case even if we wanted to."

Zhang Ye said, "I understand, but as for my classmates—"

"How about this?" interrupted the bureau chief, "You and a few of the leaders of the group can't leave today. As for the rest, I'll give you some face and allow them to leave."

Zhang Ye asked, "What about Hu Feifei?"

The bureau chief thought about it. "She can go back as well."

Zhang Ye immediately said, "Thank you so much!"

"No, that won't do!"

"Right, we won't leave!"

"If we are to leave, we'll leave together!"

Everyone shouted in agreement.

But Zhang Ye said, "That's enough. Is this such a good situation that you guys want to be part of it? Feifei, Xiaoqian, Yingyi, Shanshan, all of you go back first. And the rest of you who can leave, just leave. I'll stay behind here, so don't worry."

Dong Shanshan looked at him. "Are you going to be fine?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "What do you think? It's not like this is the first time I'm here, so just lead them out. By the way, don't let Hu Feifei go back home. Let her stay with you for now."

Dong Shanshan nodded. "Alright, I'll think of a way to get you out of here when I get out."

"OK," Zhang Ye said.

Then Dong Shanshan pulled Hu Feifei and Yu Yingyi away, saying, "Let's go. It'll be hard to get things settled if all of us stay here. Let's go outside and ask around to see how we can get them out."

Wang He waved his hands. "Just hurry up and go."

Da Hui said with a laugh, "Us men aren't afraid of staying here."

Yu Yingyi said firmly, "Wait for us!"

Hu Feifei said through her teeth, "I'll think of something!"

Zhang Ye smiled. "It's fine. At most, we get locked up for seven or eight days."

Hu Feifei said, "I'll definitely get you guys out!"

Zhang Ye waved them off, "Just go."

The female classmates all left.

The remaining people were then sent to the "little dark room."

When he went inside, Zhang Ye started reminiscing. A few years ago, he had written a poem on the wall that plunged the police station into chaos.

The poem was still there!

The faint writing could still be seen on the wall!

Wang He stared at the writing. "Shut are the doors for humans."

Da Hui continued, "Open is the entrance of a dog cage, a high pitched sound is heard—Crawl out and freedom will be granted....Pfft, Zhang'er, you wrote this!"

Everyone was amused!

He Kui suddenly said, "Why not write another one now?"

Several of the police officers who sent them into the room were scared out of their wits when they heard that!

A young policeman shouted, "Don't! Don't write another!"

A policewoman said, "Teacher Zhang, calm down! Calm down!"

Zhang Ye said, "Don't worry, I'm not writing anything this time."

The police officers heaved sighs of relief and walked off with a lingering sense of fear.

Zhang Ye sat down on the floor. "Come on, bros. Take a seat."

Wang He made himself at home and said, "There's nothing to do anyway, so why don't we talk?"

Ma Xufei lay on the floor. "Ah, how comfortable."

Zhang Ye said with a laugh, "Then Old Ma can stay a few more days."

"Forget that." Ma Xufei rolled his eyes and said, "If I can get out of here, I'll definitely go. Who wants to stay in a place like this?"

Zhang Ye said, "So you guys now know how I felt a few years back?"

He Kui said, "Ai, I wonder how many days we'll be in here. We might even get transferred over to the prison?"

Old Zhou whistled and said, "I suppose we're getting badly

scolded all over the Internet."

Zhang Ye chuckled. "I bet they're all insulting me."

But this time, Zhang Ye was really wrong about that.

• • •

On Weibo.

By now, the details of this case had been uncovered layer by layer!

It was true that a lot of people were criticizing Zhang Ye. There were even people of status who were well-respected, consisting of experts and academics who were mainly Zhang Ye's past foes. There were also some people who criticized Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi. However, there were even more people who did not criticize them. On this matter, the people's evaluation of Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and the others was instead very fair.

"Beating up people is wrong, but it's understandable in this case!"

"Domestic violence should not be tolerated!"

"It was Zhang Ye and Dong Shanshan's old classmate who got abused first. You couldn't see something like this without taking action! Damn, if it were me, I would've beaten up that person too!"

"That He guy indeed went overboard. We can't blame Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi for this incident. Instead, I see them in a different light. They are truly goddesses! They have guts and principles!"

"Right!"

"I'm Shanshan's fan from now on!"

"Think of those celebrities who only care about themselves and act dumb or divert the topic whenever something happens. They only know how to think about themselves first when their friends are in trouble and try not to get implicated. Is there any meaning in being someone like that? I prefer people like Zhang Ye and Dong

Shanshan who dare to shout and fight for their beliefs! They were willing to step in and do something based on their friendship with an old classmate. Even if they did wrong, it's understandable why they did it! Don't just come online to criticize others after you hear about a fight!"

"Just on this issue, I have to pay respect to Zhang Ye and Dong Shanshan!"

"For big shot Zhang Ye, and well-known hosts Dong Shanshan and Yu Yingyi, they were willing to put their reputations at stake. It must have really been difficult for them!"

"That He guy deserves it!"

"Zhang Ye should be let off with a slap on the wrist!"

"Right, cut him some slack!"

"What a pity. I had just finished listening to that shocking 'Chasing Dreams with a Pure Heart' and didn't expect that they would really handle things like how they had sung. Thank you, thank you to all of you. You've let us witness many beautiful sights. Zhang Ye, Shanshan, Yingyi, please keep running, forever with the pride of a pure heart!"

## Chapter 1194: Released!

The next day.

Some time in the morning.

Ma Xufei woke up groaning, "Aiyo, my waist, it hurts so bad!"

This groaning voice woke up everyone else in the room. All of them saw Ma Xufei, who was lying on the floor, get up while clutching his waist as he moved about stiffly.

Wang He yawned. "What time is it?"

Zhang Ye, who was lying on the table, also woke up. "It's light out?"

Suddenly, the door to the "little dark room" opened.

The bureau chief came in with a smile. "Alright, pack it up, you guys are free to go."

Zhang Ye was taken aback. "Huh?"

Wang He was also surprised. "We can go?"

Ma Xufei was stunned. "Aren't we getting detained?"

He Kui rubbed his eyes in a daze. "What? Have we been sleeping for seven days and seven nights?"

Old Wang said, "Pfft, are you a pig? Sleeping for seven straight days!"

The bureau chief looked relaxed. He said, "That He guy you all beat up has dropped the suit. He said that you guys were just fooling around, and the hospital has also cleared them of any serious injuries and said that they'd be fine." He looked at them and said, "Don't ask me why; I don't know the reason either. In any case, you can go now. Your cell phones and personal effects have all been brought over, so come and claim whatever belongs to you."

Zhang Ye laughed. "So we can really leave?"

The bureau chief rolled his eyes. "What's the matter? Don't tell me you've grown fond of staying here? I have to say this, Teacher Zhang. Please don't stir up any more trouble in future. And if you decide to fight someone again, please don't do so in my jurisdiction, alright? For all of last night, our police station was the focus of the nation's attention. It was so stressful that I even considered an early retirement! Please give us a break and stop bringing trouble to our police station!"

They continued talking as they made their way out.

In the police station's yard, quite a few people were waiting!

"Old Zhou!"

"What are you doing here, honey?"

"You jerk! You've been locked up, how can I not come?"

"He Kui!"

"Ah, Dad."

"How old are you? Why are you still getting into fights?"

"Hehe, I got a little impulsive."

Their family members were here to pick them up.

Zhang Ye also knew quite a few of them. "Auntie Sun, Uncle Zhou."

Several of the parents looked at him. "Little Ye, I have to lecture you. You're the most successful one of them all and should be leading by example, so how can you lead them to do something like this?"

Zhang Ye quickly said, "It was my fault, my fault."

But of course, Zhang Ye had the most people coming to pick him up!

Ha Qiqi eyes turned red. "Director Zhang! You made all of us so

worried!"

Zhang Ye smiled. "I'm sorry, I'm sorry."

His parents were also here and they lashed out at him!

Zhang Ye did not talk back and just listened to them as they scolded him.

Little Wang and the others also hurried over. There were three or four people who came from the studio.

"Director Zhang."

"Have a change of clothes."

"Are you hungry? I brought some food over for you."

"Director Zhang, do you want a drink? It's still warm, quickly drink some!"

"Did you sleep well in there?"

His junior martial sister drove here to wait for him as well. "Senior Bro, I got your car from Media College and drove it here. Master Rao is outside handling the reporters."

A group of people busily waited on Zhang Ye, with some of them giving him something to eat and some of them giving him something to drink. When he choked, someone would instantly pass him a napkin!

His group of classmates were speechless as they watched. Wasn't this treatment far too different from theirs?

He had someone who drove here to pick him up.

He had someone to bring him tea.

He had someone to pour it for him.

When can we reach the point that we can get this treatment too!

They became incredibly jealous as they watched Zhang Ye!

All of a sudden, more people came in from outside. They were Hu

Feifei, Dong Shanshan, Yu Yingyi, and a few other female classmates of theirs.

So Zhang Ye said, "Dad, Mom, why don't you two go home first."

His mother stared at him. "I'll pick it back up with you when you get home."

"Alright, alright." Zhang Ye signaled to Yang Shu. "Yang Shu, send my parents home."

"OK." Yang Shu led Zhang Ye's parents away to send them back.

Only then did Zhang Ye ask Hu Feifei, "So what happened?"

Wang He, Ma Xufei, and the others also came over.

"That's right!"

"How did we get released so quickly?"

"Who'd you guys go to?"

"Did that He guy suddenly come to his senses?"

Hu Feifei smiled and said, "The public's siding w. He's under too much pressure and couldn't bear it, so he decided to just let this go as he doesn't want trouble for himself. Who hasn't heard of Zhang'er's reputation? Zhang'er is one of the biggest names in the country, so I'm sure that he's also kinda afraid of him."

Wang He speculated, "That's impossible!"

Ma Xufei said, "Yeah, how could it be that simple?"

The public was on their side this time. The majority of people felt they had their reasons for doing what they did. Although some people criticized them for their wrongdoing, they did not outright express their support for Hu Feifei's husband either. Those who criticized Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and the others were also scolding Hu Feifei's husband without exception. In fact, they were even more critical of him. Some people dug up He's family background and company situation; even his home address had

been exposed. If they were to say that he was under pressure, he definitely was. But that still wouldn't amount to him doing a 180, would it?

Hu Feifei changed the subject and said with a laugh, "Oh yes, I have some very good news to announce. I'm getting divorced! Please congratulate me, everyone!"

"Congratulations!"

"Yeah, congrats!"

"That's a good thing!"

"You should have done this a long time ago!"

But Zhang Ye did not let it go. He needed to clear this up. "So what really happened? Hu Feifei, tell me the truth. Do you really think we're so easily fooled?"

Hu Feifei smiled and said, "But that's really how it was, he couldn't bear all that pressure."

Zhang Ye looked at her. "Are you going to tell me or not?"

Xiaoqian couldn't hold it in any longer. "I'll tell!"

Hu Feifei glared. "Xiaoqian!"

Xiaoqian ignored her and said, "Hu Feifei has already signed the divorce papers. But she won't be seeking any settlement on the condition that He must step back from taking any action on you guys and drop the suit!"

Da Hui was startled. "What?"

Wang He said, "Hu Feifei, aren't you being silly like that?"

Ma Xufei said angrily, "What are you thinking! You should have asked for a settlement! He's abused you for so many years, how can you not get something from him? Why did you do that! However long we're detained, so be it. It's no big deal!"

Hu Feifei smiled. "Well, he doesn't have much money left

anyway. His company has been going downhill in recent years and is almost an empty shell now. He even sold off a car and a property recently to pay off his debts. He's in dire straits, and besides, I've also thought it through. I don't want any of his lousy money. I just want to get back to being a host and earn myself a living. Ai, but I think I'm too far behind everyone now. I don't even know if I can make up for the time I've lost over the past few years." She sounded a little hesitant. "Do you guys think that I can still get on a stage?"

Wang He said, "Definitely!"

Yu Yingyi said, "Right! You can definitely do it!"

Zhang Ye praised, "It's good that you've thought it out. You're right, what need do you have for that lousy money of his."

Xiaoqian gave him a look. "Zhang'er, you had better help Feifei find a good job. We're counting on you."

"Don't worry." Zhang Ye, taking it all on, said, "I'll help Hu Feifei contact some people later."

Dong Shanshan also said with a laugh, "Feifei, stay at my place for now. It's boring living by myself anyway."

Hu Feifei did not turn her down. "Sure, I have nowhere to go, so I guess I'll have to disturb you for a few days until I find a place to move to."

"Let's go!"

"We're going back home!"

"Hahaha!"

The police officers at the station got quite moved from watching this.

All of them were willing to get detained just because they wanted to get justice for their classmate!

While one of them was willing to leave a marriage with nothing

to her name in order to save her classmates!

Classmates?

What a beautiful term it was!

• • •

Outside, the reporters had clogged the entrance!

When Zhang Ye, Dong Shanshan, and the others came out, the reporters rushed up to them!

Zhang Ye gave Ha Qiqi and the others a look that they immediately understood. The studio's staff immediately went up to block the reporters.

"Fellas, run!" Zhang Ye shouted. Hu Feifei and the others instantly widened their strides and ran away from the reporters. Someone started singing, to which Zhang Ye and everyone else loudly sang along with!

"Instead of clinging to life, live passionately, burn brightly!

"For our beautiful dreams!

"Uncompromising through the years!"

## Chapter 1195: The prospective daughter-inlaw comes to visit!

Later that afternoon.

Slightly before 2 PM.

In the courtyard of the Wu residence.

The courtyard house door was unlocked, and Zhang Ye pushed it open to get in. "Auntie, Uncle, is anyone home?"

Li Qinqin came out from the northern house looking rather surprised. "Little Ye? When did you get released?"

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "I was let out this morning. Auntie, I bought you some fruit. I'll just place it out here in the courtyard." He left them on the stone table.

Wu Changhe also stepped out from the house. "What are you doing here, kid?"

Li Qinqin said, "Quick, let's go inside."

Zhang Ye said helplessly, "I came here to escape from the commotion at home. My parents will nag me if I go back. They've been nagging me the entire morning, and the studio is packed with reporters. If I go back there, wouldn't I just get bombarded with questions? So I can only make my way here to your place to lay low for a while. I've called Old Wu. She said that she'll be coming over in a while too."

Just as he finished speaking.

Wu Zeqing arrived.

"Whoa, that was fast!" Zhang Ye turned around.

Wu Zeqing smiled. "I saw you driving over here. I was right behind you."

Li Qinqin complained to Zhang Ye, "You really made us worried

about you."

Zhang Ye chuckled and said, "Hai, Auntie, I'm fine."

Wu Zeqing made him go into the house. "My mom had to go around yesterday asking so many people to find out about your circumstances. She was really hoping that someone could help get you released. You don't even know how worried she was."

Zhang Ye was extremely touched. "Aiyo, Auntie, I'm terribly sorry about making you worry."

Wu Changhe said nonchalantly, "If you know how to be sorry, you shouldn't have taken part in a gang fight."

Li Qinqin gave her husband a small nudge. "Didn't you also check with many people regarding Little Ye's case? You even pushed for me to call up an old classmate who was working at a police station!"

Wu Changhe grunted, "I did that for my daughter."

Wu Zeqing laughed and said, "See how well my parents treat you."

"Thank you, Uncle. Thank you, Auntie." Zhang Ye thanked them sincerely.

Li Qinqin gave her daughter a sharp look. "Only you weren't worried."

Wu Zeqing said gently, "He can handle it himself. Why would I need to worry?"

Li Qinqin said unhappily, "What if something had happened?"

Wu Zeqing laughed. "He knows what he's doing."

"What does he know?" Wu Changhe said in a speechless manner, "Which A-list celebrity out there goes around taking part in gang fights? I've never even heard of that happening before!"

Li Qinqin added, "Right, don't be so impulsive next time!"

Zhang Ye did not know how to answer them.

Instead, it was Wu Zeqing who answered for him. "Since he handled it that way, he must have his reasons for doing so. Alright, let's not talk about this anymore." Then she looked at Zhang Ye. "Shall I make you something to eat?"

Zhang Ye put his hand on his belly. "Yeah, I didn't really eat lunch."

"Alright, give me a bit then." Wu Zeqing headed to the kitchen and busied herself.

Wu Changhe and Li Qinqin both rolled their eyes. Their daughter was really spoiling her boyfriend. After such a big incident, she didn't even direct a word of blame at him. Instead, she even spoke up for him? What was this! They were speaking in such harmony. If it went on like this, wouldn't there be bigger trouble in the future? And they weren't even married yet! If they really got wouldn't these the entire married. two turn Chinese entertainment industry on its head? A showbiz celebrity who loved making trouble, and a woman in a position of power who was coincidentally the authority of the entertainment industry, who could stop them in the future?

After lunch.

Wu Changhe went to power on the computer to play Go.

Wu Zeqing brought Zhang Ye to her bedroom in the west wing. Old Wu didn't live here usually but she would stay over sometimes when it rained after visiting her parents.

The decor in the room was middling, but it was quite clean and tidy.

The moment Zhang Ye stepped inside, he flopped onto the bed. "I'm exhausted."

Wu Zeqing sat next to the bed. "You didn't sleep well while you were in jail? Then get some rest while you're here. You can take off

your shoes and put my slippers on."

Zhang Ye blinked several times and turned sideways. He hugged her waist and placed his hands on her leg. Through her black suit pants, he could feel the softness of her leg. "I've been too busy these days, commentating for the Olympics, releasing a music video single, and even getting arrested. I haven't seen you in such a long time. How is everything at work? Have you been busy?"

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "It's the same as usual. You know, you really should take things a little easier in the future. Don't worry my parents anymore."

"I understand." Zhang Ye said, "Haha, I'll lie low for a while and work on my character. Your parents are really quite good to me. I really hadn't expected that."

Suddenly, the thud of footfalls approached.

It was Li Qinqin. "Zeqing?"

Wu Zeqing turned around. "Mom, come in."

Zhang Ye immediately pulled his hands back and sat up on the bed.

Li Qinqin came into the bedroom and said with a smile, "Is Little Ye tired?"

"No, I feel awake." Zhang Ye smiled.

Li Qinqin nodded and sat down as well. "Zeqing, I had a discussion with your dad just now. The relationship between you and Little Ye is more or less confirmed. I've been thinking of having a meal with Little Ye's parents someday to discuss you two and your wedding. How should it be held? Should it be a grand one or a simple one? Which day should we hold it on? All of that needs to be discussed. When I brought this up last time, the two of you didn't seem anxious about it, so I'm here to hurry you two along."

Zhang Ye grew spirited. "I'm anxious, Auntie, I'm anxious."

Li Qinqin was happy to hear that. "I'm anxious too."

Wu Zeqing smiled. "I still have to pay them a visit, don't I?"

Li Qinqin followed with, "Then when will you go over to Little Ye's place?"

Wu Zeqing thought about it for a moment before saying, "I have to check with my secretary first and see what my schedule's like, and when Little Ye and I can both get a day off to go visit them. Besides, I still have to buy a gift for them when I go over."

Li Qinqin smacked her lips. "Why does it have to be some other day? Aren't you two free today? There's no time like the present, so why don't you do it today? You don't have to worry about bringing a gift. I'll go and do it for you this afternoon. Each of you is busier than the other; do you think it'll be that easy for the two of you to find another free day together? Just do it today!"

Wu Zeqing smiled and looked at Zhang Ye.

Zhang Ye immediately understood that she was asking if he agreed. So he said with much anticipation, "I have no problem with that. My parents are both at home. I just need to call them to tell them."

Wu Zeqing nodded. "Alright then."

Li Qinqin said happily, "Great! Zeqing, when you go over, remember to speak nicely. This is your first time paying them a visit, so you have to pay attention and be considerate of everything. Don't forget your manners, understand?"

Wu Zeqing said, "Hur hur, would I not know that?"

Li Qinqin said, "Sure, you know everything!"

Wu Zeqing said, "I'll go and get ready then. I need to change."

Zhang Ye snapped his fingers. "I'll go and make the call!"

It was a rather big affair, but it was settled just like that.

Zhang Ye was getting very excited. Having a girlfriend and bringing her home to meet the parents were two very different things. So he went out to the courtyard and called home.

His father answered the phone.

The moment he heard Zhang Ye's voice, he said, "Where'd you go? You ran away just because we lectured you a little? Hurry up and come back. Your mother is still angry with you."

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Dad, I'll be back in the evening. Tell Mom to tidy up the house a little. I'll be bringing someone home."

His father was taken aback. "Who are you bringing over?"

Zhang Ye said confidently, "My girlfriend."

His father was stunned. "You have a girlfriend?"

When his mother heard, she exclaimed as well. "What?"

Zhang Ye said, "I do. Didn't I tell the two of you a long time ago?"

His father immediately said, "OK, OK, we'll get ready. What time will you two get here?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Around 5 PM or so."

<sup>&</sup>quot;OK, I'll let your mom know!"

## Chapter 1196: Good kid, beautifully done!

At home.

His parents were currently tidying up the house.

"Why was it so sudden?" his mother muttered.

His father shook his head. "Who knows! He just said that he'll be bringing his girlfriend back and told us to tidy up the house a little."

His mother was sweeping the floor with a broom. "He didn't mention who it was? What's her job?"

His father said, "I don't know. Is Little Ye really in a relationship?"

"It seems like it." His mother said, "I've heard him mention it before, but I thought he was just humoring me. Who would have thought that he was serious about it."

His father quickened his tidying. "Let's hurry up then. We don't want her coming over and seeing our house in such a mess. We have to give her a good first impression."

His mother worried, "Old Zhang, what would you say if we don't approve of the girl who Little Ye brings home? I'm really afraid that he'll bring home someone shady. I'm telling you beforehand, you had better present a united front with me and be on the same side. If it so happens that we find the girl unsuitable, we must firmly oppose their relationship. We can't let our son see a glimmer of hope in convincing us. We must deny him outright since this is marriage we're talking about!"

His father felt a little hesitant. "Let's see who it is first."

His mother said while sweeping the floor, "Alright, I'll go out to buy some groceries then."

"Buy more than usual," his father instructed.

They busied themselves around the house the entire afternoon.

After his mother came home from grocery shopping, she did not pluck or wash the vegetables. Instead, she put everything into the fridge and left some handmade noodles on the cutting board.

His father wondered, "What are you doing? Aren't you going to prepare some food ahead of time?"

His mother said in a petty manner, "I have to hold back a little first."

"Why did you buy the handmade noodles?" His father was puzzled.

His mother whispered, "In case we're not happy with the woman Little Ye brings home, we'll make the noodles for them to eat and just get this meeting over and done with. It'll also be a way to express our attitudes for her."

His father said in a speechless manner, "You're going to serve her noodles on her first visit to our place?"

His mother said, "Well, I have to be prepared for both situations. Whatever, just follow my lead later."

His father looked at his watch. "It's almost time, right?"

"They should be here soon." His mother was finally done prepping. She went over to sit down on the sofa and turned on the television. However, she saw that her son was still being talked about on the news. "Why are they still talking about this? What kind of girl do you think will suit our son the best with that temper of his? He doesn't know how to take care of people and always loves getting into trouble. Would any of the nicer girls want to settle for a guy like him? They would only get scolded every day if they choose to be with him, don't you think?"

His father said, "Little Ye has many good points too."

"Good points like what?"

```
"He's quite filial."
```

"He's always getting into trouble and making us worried—that itself is unfilial!"

Ding dong, ding dong.

The doorbell suddenly rang!

His father's eyes lit up. "Coming!"

His mother hurriedly got up. "Go, open the door."

The two of them were starting to feel a little nervous. They didn't know what kind of girl to expect behind the door. His mother hesitated for a moment before she pulled open the door.

When it was halfway open, they saw a beautiful, gorgeous face!

His mother was stunned!

His father was also stunned!

Wu Zeqing smiled. "Auntie, Uncle."

His mother quickly said, "Aiyo, isn't this Little Wu? Why's an important chief like you so free to come over today?" They had met at the King of Masked Singers concert and even sat together. His mother had also invited Wu Zeqing to visit them, but who could have guessed that she would come over today?

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "I came to visit you."

His mother gave a wry smile and said, "Aiya, what a coincidence. My son just called to say that he would be bringing his girlfriend over today. This is really too coincidental. Why don't you come in and take a seat?"

His father hurriedly said, "You came at the right time. Let's have dinner together. Little Wu has been a great help to our son all this time and should not be considered a stranger."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Heh, cut the crap."

<sup>&</sup>quot;What?"

Wu Zeqing smiled.

Zhang Ye's speechless face was finally revealed behind the halfopened door. "Dad, Mom, what are you two talking about? Hurry up and let us into the house. I'm carrying a bunch of stuff and waiting out here!"

His mother said in surprise, "You scared me!"

His father said startled, "Why did you come with Little Wu?"

Wu Zeqing entered the house.

Zhang Ye, who was carrying large and small boxes, dropped everything the moment he got into the house. "Didn't I say that I was bringing someone home?" He pointed at Wu Zeqing. "I was referring to her!"

His mother exclaimed, "Ah?"

His father was stunned. "Don't be ridiculous!"

Wu Zeqing said, "Auntie, Uncle, I've been in a relationship with Little Ye for about a year, but we haven't told you two all this while. I'm really sorry."

His parents were so shocked they couldn't get a word out. Who could have ever thought that his son's girlfriend would turn out to be Wu Zeqing, the Deputy Chief of SARFT!

This...

This...

His father quickly said, "Little Wu, take a seat. Come inside and take a seat."

His mother grabbed him and whispered excitedly, "Is this true?"

Zhang Ye smiled proudly. "Of course it's true."

His mother said uneasily, "You better not have gotten her to pretend to be your girlfriend to trick us!"

Zhang Ye was floored. "You've watched too many soap dramas,

haven't you? You and Dad haven't pushed me to get married or given me any pressure at all, so why would I suddenly bring someone back to trick you two? Have I got nothing better to do?"

His mother smacked her thigh. "Good kid!"

His father was steeping tea for Wu Zeqing. "Have some water."

Wu Zeqing took the cup from him. "Thank you, Uncle. I'll help myself."

Then his mother quickly went over and sat beside Wu Zeqing. She held her hand and said excitedly, "Little Wu, you two have kept this secret so well! You really have good taste, you know? This son of mine, put simply, is just the best. He knows how to take care of people and is considerate as well. Most importantly, he's filial! He's especially filial! He knows how to take care of his own problems and never makes us worried!"

His father was taken aback.

What?

This was not what you said earlier!

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "Little Ye is pretty good, I know."

His mother bragged, "He's not just pretty good but really good, you know? Although society holds some prejudices against my son, it's because they don't understand him. My son really has a lot of good points!"

Zhang Ye blushed. He changed the subject by saying, "Dad, what are we having for dinner?"

His father said, "Ah, dinner? What are we having for dinner?" He looked at his wife.

Zhang Ye went to the kitchen to have a look. "Eh, why are there only noodles?"

His father said, "Your mother bought that for tonight..."

His mother glared at her husband and said, "What noodles? I bought that for myself to eat tomorrow. It's Little Wu's first time coming to our place, so how can we serve her noodles? Why are you so funny?" She walked to the kitchen and opened the fridge. "Ignore your father, the food's all in here!"

His father was tongue-tied

Didn't you say to prepare for both situations?

What do you mean "ignore me"?

And you're even calling me funny?

His mother said, "I'm going to make dinner!"

Wu Zeqing said, "Auntie, let me do it."

"No, no, no, don't you trouble yourself. Just sit and wait!" Then she shouted, "Old Zhang, come and help me. What are you doing?"

His father walked helplessly into the kitchen.

His mother immediately made eyes at him and whispered, "What do you think of Little Wu?"

His father said, "She's quite good. It's not like we don't know her."

"She's more than just quite good!" His mother beamed. "We must have been blessed by our ancestors! Are you dumb? Why'd you mention the noodles?"

His father said in a speechless manner, "You said to follow your lead!"

Zhang Ye did not understand. "What lead?"

His mother laughed it off and said, "Nothing, it's nothing."

His father said, "It's just that she's much older than Little Ye."

"It's good that she's older!" His mother said, "She can control him that way!"

His father asked him, "What does Little Wu like about you?"

"My charms, of course," Zhang Ye boasted.

His father worried, "Would her parents agree to your relationship?"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "They've long since agreed. Her dad is Wu Changhe, don't you know? I've been to their place a few times and they're both pretty good to me."

His mother asked, "They don't object to you?"

Zhang Ye shrugged. "What's there to object to?"

His mother slapped his shoulders hard. "Rascal, you've done something good for once!"

Zhang Ye said happily, "Weren't you lecturing me this morning? You're not angry anymore? You don't mind that I got into a fight?"

His mother laughed hard. "If you can get someone as good as Little Wu to become your wife, I won't care even if you get into fights every day! Good kid, beautifully done!"

## Chapter 1197: Zhang Ye gives his first lesson at his alma mater!

On this day.

Early in the morning.

After several days had passed, calm returned to the entertainment industry. There was no news that could be talked about forever. Even an incident of celebrities taking part in a gang fight would blow over after some time. Other things were always happening that would catch the attention of the media and citizens as they moved on to whatever was more interesting. This was what the entertainment industry was all about.

After the news had quieted.

It was peaceful once more online.

However, it was not as quiet in Zhang Ye's house. More accurately, Zhang Ye's mother had been so excited in the past two days she couldn't calm down at all.

His mother kept pacing around the house and would often bring something up out of the blue. Recently, her behavior had been incomprehensible. "Old Zhang, are there any beauty salons nearby?"

His father asked, "Why?"

His mother said, "I want to get a makeover and some beauty care, of course. When the day comes for our son to get married, I don't want to look old and haggard. It wouldn't look good at all, so I have to start preparing now."

His father said, "You look good just the way you are."

Zhang Ye had already gotten out of bed. He said annoyed, "Mom, you've been fussing over this for two days already."

"But I'm really excited!" His mother still couldn't shake off the excitement she was experiencing. "I have to say, an important executive like Little Wu taking a fancy to you, you must really be blessed, you lucky fool. By the way, what time does she get off work today? Would she like to come over for dinner? Try to ask her over again. You really have to work on solidifying your relationship with her so that she won't slip away from you, understand? Little Wu is so beautiful and gentle. She's willing to cook for you and is an important executive as well. You mustn't let her get away!"

His father rolled his eyes. "You've invited her to our place eight times over the past few days, so can't you give her a break for a day or two? You ask her to come over for lunch and dinner every day; do you really think she has nothing better to do? Aren't you being too enthusiastic? You might just end up causing issues if you scare Little Wu away."

His mother stared at him. "I'm just happy to have Little Wu around. What can you do about it!"

Ever since Zhang Ye brought Old Wu home, his mother had felt really happy about everything. She was obviously overjoyed and approved of her prospective daughter-in-law.

"This won't do! I have to make a call!"

"To who, Mom?"

"To the neighbors."

"Aiya, didn't I tell you to keep it a secret?"

"Then I'll give your grandma a call."

"Just don't say anything, alright? If you do, everyone will find out."

"Then just let them find out."

"Old Wu has a special status and I'm from the entertainment

circle, so let's wait until we're married before announcing it."

So his mother continued to pace around the house. Every now and then, she would look at her phone or sit down and stomp her feet. "Aiyo, keeping this a secret is killing me!"

Zhang Ye and his father gave each other a look and laughed helplessly. His mother had no other fault other than being a loudmouth and braggart. Now that she was not allowed to speak about his relationship, she had a horrible time trying to hide it.

Then, Zhang Ye's cell phone rang.

Media College was calling.

Su Hongyan said: "Little Zhang, have you left your house yet?"

Zhang Ye said: "I'll be leaving soon."

"Don't forget about today's lesson. We're all waiting for you."

"Don't worry, Teacher Su, I won't forget." Zhang Ye hung up and told his parents, "Mom, keep keeping it secret. Dad, I'm off to give a lesson at school."

• • •

Later that morning.

Media College.

There was still an hour to go, but the lecture hall was already packed to the brim. A distance away, a lot of people were still making their way over here in a hurry!

"Fuck, the class is full?"

"Look at the time."

"What'd you expect? Don't forget that Zhang Ye will be giving this lesson!"

"And I thought that I got here early. There aren't any seats left."

"Just find a random spot. I'll attend this class even if I have to

stand!"

"Yeah, we can't miss out on our alum giving a lesson!"

"Fangzi, over here! I've reserved a seat for you!"

"Ah, Qiqi, you're great! I love you so much!"

"Just buy me a meal after this! Fucking hell, I've been here since 6 AM to get these seats for us!"

"Damn! You really gave it your all!"

Strictly speaking, it was still not the official start of the school semester. The freshmen were still going through orientation and would only complete it by this afternoon, so the quickest that they could start their lessons proper would be tomorrow. However, the school had specially arranged for Zhang Ye to give this class a talk as they had a deeper intent. Looking at this turnout, other than the freshmen students, even the sophomore and junior broadcasting majors were trying to squeeze into the lecture hall for the class. Further, there were also many students from other departments who came to take part in the ruckus.

This was where Zhang Ye stood out from the other teachers.

He was extremely popular.

He had huge appeal.

And everyone liked him very much.

Outside, Zhang Ye arrived and was humming a little ditty.

Su Hongyan, who had spotted him from a distance away, said with a smile, "Feeling good?"

Zhang Ye said happily, "Haha! Good morning, Teacher Su."

Now that Old Wu had officially been introduced to his parents and having gained their approval of her, their wedding was imminent. So how could he not be happy? He was bursting with joy. The dean of the Broadcasting Department smiled and said, "Professor Zhang, you have an important mission on your hands today."

Zhang Ye nodded. "I understand."

The dean said, "I suppose it isn't necessary for me to mention how important the freshmen's first class is. The school made many considerations before handing this class to you, so we're sure that you would be up to the task. Basically, this is just going to be an initiation class, so there's no need to cover any professional knowledge or topics like that. You just need to help usher the freshmen into university life and spark their interest in our Broadcasting Department, so it would be great if the lesson is a little more fun. You don't have to give a long talk or speech since students these days have a different way of thinking. They no longer fall for the traditional methods."

Zhang Ye said, "Alright."

The dean patted him. "Then I'll leave this to you."

Su Hongyan reminded Zhang Ye, "Hur hur, do well, we'll be listening to your lecture as well."

Zhang Ye said, "Whoa, that's a lot of pressure on me."

One of the department's associate professors laughed. "Motivation comes from pressure."

After chatting for a bit and getting to know many of the other teachers and professors of the Broadcasting Department, Zhang Ye looked at his watch before striding into the lecture hall.

The dean smiled and said, "Come, let's go in and listen together."

Su Hongyan and the others proceeded in behind him.

Many sets of eyes were now focused on the lectern!

"Alum!"

"Teacher Zhang!"

"Professor Zhang!"

"Wow, he's so handsome!"

"I couldn't see him clearly at the Welcoming Ceremony because I was sitting too far away. I can finally have a closer look this time!"

"Who says that Teacher Zhang is only average looking? I think he's handsome!"

"Right! But more importantly, he's got a really good stage presence!"

Applause thundered!

Many of the freshmen were screaming!

Zhang Ye stood on the podium calmly and adjusted the microphone. Then he smiled. "Hello, everyone. I'm your teacher for your first class of the semester and my name is Zhang Ye."

Applause sounded again!

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "First of all, I would like to congratulate all of you for standing out amongst so many candidates in the National College Entrance Exam and getting accepted into the top department for broadcasting in the country. I would also like to thank everyone here for choosing to come here, for choosing to attend Media College. Around eight years ago, I was sitting here like all of you right now, watching as my teacher gave me my first lesson in university. I could never have expected that, eight years later, I would have the honor of standing here and doing the same." He spread his hands. "In fact, I did not prepare any lecture material for today. I don't have any notes with me, as you can all see. For this first lesson, I just hope to have a good talk with all of you. So there's no need to address me as 'Teacher Zhang' or 'Professor Zhang.' Just call me 'Alum' or 'Old Zhang;' I'm fine with either of those."

All of the freshmen laughed.

"Sure, Old Zhang!"

"Hahaha!"

Zhang Ye looked below and said, "I would first like to ask a question. Why did you all choose to enter the broadcasting major?"

Immediately, countless hands shot up.

Zhang Ye pointed at a girl. "You there, tell me."

The girl stood up excitedly. "Alum, I chose to study broadcasting because of you. My dream is to become an outstanding host like you in the future!"

Zhang Ye laughed and said, "Your answer doesn't sound like you mean it. I think that even if someone else were standing here, you would say the same thing."

Everyone laughed!

The girl was tickled as well!

Zhang Ye picked another person.

A male freshman stood up. "The reason why I chose to study broadcasting is that I like the profession. I think it's really cool."

Zhang Ye asked a few more people and all of them had similar answers. They just liked it.

Zhang Ye asked again, "Then what do you guys think is the most important aspect required for one to do well in the field of broadcasting?"

"Adaptability?"

"I think it's being a good talker!"

"Good looks?"

"Wit has to be the most important thing!"

The answers they gave were slightly more varied this time.

Zhang Ye looked over them. "Every one of you gave different

answers to that question, but my opinion is rather different from yours. I feel that the most important aspect in broadcasting is something that all of you have neglected to mention, language. Not just any foreign language, but our very own Chinese language!"

The students in the audience were taken aback!

The Chinese language?

Mandarin? But who wouldn't have a grasp of that?

Su Hongyan looked at the stage curiously.

Zhang Ye smile and pointed into the crowd. "I can see doubt on many of your faces. Everyone here knows how to speak, and by that, I mean that they know how to speak in Mandarin, of course. Otherwise, you wouldn't have passed the Media College Entrance Exam and be sitting here right now. My guess is that all of you are thinking about how to improve your English and pass the CET-4 so that you can all graduate from university. That must be the most important thing on everyone's minds, right?"

Quite a few people nodded.

Zhang Ye said, "Actually, I've never been in favor of English being taught as a core subject, and disagree even more about how we have to gain a Band-4 accreditation to be able to graduate from university. As a broadcasting professional, this is simply a penny wise, pound foolish mindset. It is downright misleading!"

The audience burst into an uproar!

Misleading?

Only Zhang Ye would dare to make that claim!

Su Hongyan gave a wry smile. "Dean."

The dean smiled and said, "I knew that he wouldn't give the lesson by the books. It's fine, let's hear what he has to say first."

Zhang Ye added, "Of course, I'm not simply saying this because my English is bad."

Everyone laughed again!

Zhang Ye explained calmly, "Chinese culture is extremely deep, and all knowledge of it is contained within our language. Starting from today, all of you will be introduced to a series of subjects like vocal lessons, speed reading, extemporaneous speeches, and literature and cultural classes. All of them are based on the Chinese language, yet this most important and basic language has been neglected by everyone. Instead, the English language started getting pushed onto the teaching agenda. In overseas markets, only their homegrown hosts would be competent enough to host their own shows. Likewise, only a Chinese host would be able to do well for our shows in China. Why is that? It's all down to language itself! In the career of broadcasting, language is the divisive point and also the greatest limitation that one can encounter! Even if we were to learn English great, we still couldn't speak it better than native speakers. By the same logic, even if foreigners learned Mandarin well and work in broadcasting in China, they couldn't match up to us! Language is the greatest competitive edge for a host, but look at what we're doing. Rather than valuing the Chinese language, we're placing more emphasis on the English language and minority languages? And use CET-4 and CET-6 to determine whether the students can graduate or not? What's the meaning of this?"

Quite a few freshmen fell into thought.

Zhang Ye asked, "Have you ever seen any overseas broadcasting majors who are required to reach a certain proficiency in the Chinese language? Have you ever come across any international students who aren't allowed to graduate just because they hadn't reached a certain level in Mandarin? None, right?"

Everyone started shaking their heads.

Of course not!

Why would they have to be tested in Mandarin!

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "If they're required to be tested on their proficiency of the Chinese language, then I'll be the first to fight for the right to be the question setter. Let me make it difficult for them. If I can write the HSK-4 and HSK-6 questions for them, I guarantee that no matter how proficient they are, they won't be able to graduate. Do you guys believe me?"

The freshmen laughed to kingdom come!

"I don't believe you!"

"What kinds of questions will you write?"

"Yeah, tell us!"

"HSK-4 and HSK-6?"

"If foreigners can learn it well, it wouldn't be difficult."

"Yeah, I've even come across foreigners who have great Chinese."

Zhang Ye said, "So no one believes me?"

Everyone cried out, "No, we don't believe it!"

Zhang Ye said with a smile, "Then let me give you guys a few questions to listen to, and let you think about how profound and deep the Chinese language is."

The freshmen were suddenly anticipating it!

The broadcasting major sophomores and juniors who sneaked in also pricked up their ears. They really did not believe that Zhang Ye would be able to make up questions that would befuddle all foreigners!

Zhang Ye said, "The following are HSK-4 test questions. Please listen to the first one."

With a straight face, Zhang Ye said, "A bird shat on the windowsill. Xiaoming's teacher called to him, 'Xiaoming, go clean the bird poop off.'" Taking a pause, he then mimicked a voice of someone surprised and said, "Xiaoming said, 'Off I go!'"

It fell silent!

The entire lecture hall fell silent!

Su Hongyan: "..."

The dean: "..."

The entire group of freshmen: "..."

Zhang Ye asked in seriousness, "The question is, did Xiaoming do any cleaning or just go off?"

Instantly, the entire audience laughed!

"Hahahaha!"

"Off I go?"

"Fuck that 'off I go'!"

"I'll go off on your off I go!"

"Aiyo, I'm dying of laughter!"

Zhang Ye immediately followed up with, "Now for the second question. As the floor was very dirty, the teacher told Xiaoming, 'Xiaoming, scrub the floor clean!'" Pausing, he then widened his eyes and said, "Xiaoming said, 'Scrub that!'"

Su Hongyan burst into laughter!

The dean nearly spat out a glob of saliva!

Zhang Ye said, "The question is, did Xiaoming scrub the floor or not?"

The students were all rolling on the floor laughing!

"Hahahaha!"

"Your sister, what kinds of questions are these!"

"These kinds of questions would never be understood by foreigners!"

"Aiyo, I can't take this anymore!"

"Scrub that!"

Some of them were laughing so hard that tears rolled down their cheeks!

Zhang Ye calmly continued, "Please listen to the third question. Xiaohong asked Xiaoming, 'Do we have to bring pens for today's class?' Xiaoming said—" Zhang Ye mimicked, "—' <u>Dip pens</u> [Depends]!'" He looked over the audience and asked, "The question is, do they need to bring pens for today's class? If they do, what kind of pen do they need to bring?"

"Hahaha!"

"Dip pens!"

"These questions are way too tricky!"

The people in the audience were in stitches. Many of them were cheering and applauding!

Zhang Ye surveyed the crowd and said, "That was only a HSK-4 test question. Now let's listen to a HSK-6 question. This will be a listening multiple choice question."

Everyone was listening with rapt attention.

Zhang Ye said, "Xiaofang said, 'Your sister! Yo momma's Aunt Flo has yet to visit this month. Dis big sis is so worried! This is cheating the Allfather!'"

"Hahaha!"

"Hahahahaha!"

Zhang Ye asked, "The question is, who in this passage would be panicking the most?"

Panicking?

If one's Aunt Flo did not arrive, who would be panicking the most?

Pfft! Does that mean she's pregnant?

```
Everyone laughed loudly again!
Zhang Ye put up a finger. "A: Xiaofang's little sister."
"Pfft!"
"Hahaha!"
Zhang Ye said, "B: Xiaofang's mother."
"Aiyo!"
"I'm tearing up from laughing!"
"C: Xiaofang's big sister."
"Haha!"
"D: Xiaofang's father."
"I'm laughing my ass off!"
"Yes, her father must be panicking the most!"
"E: Xiaofang's Aunt Flo."
"Hahahaha!"
"Hahahahaha!"
Zhang Ye: "F: Xiaofang herself."
"Hahahaha!"
Zhang Ye blinked and said, "And the last option, Xiaofang's
```

boyfriend...Xiaoming!"

When they heard the last option, many of the freshmen and seniors instantly clutched their stomachs as they let out great big laughs. They were finally convinced. If the HSK questions were written by Zhang Ye, all the foreigners taking it would definitely die. These sorts of questions were simply too wicked. Other than the Chinese, who else could understand them!

Applause erupted!

Everyone was clapping with all their might!

Zhang Ye smiled and said to everyone, "See? Isn't the Chinese language extremely profound and deep?"

Everyone nodded their heads furiously!

"Right!"

"It's so extremely deep!"

"I laughed myself dizzy!"

"Why are you so funny, Teacher Zhang!"

"Aiyo, let me keep laughing!"

Zhang Ye said, "Instead of focusing and placing importance on a language that has brought together several thousand years of Chinese history, we have switched our emphasis to something else. That in itself is already a reckless waste. A host depends on their mouth, which is just a channel to bring across a language. In the following four years of your university life, please make sure you put in the effort to learn Mandarin well, because it's the most important skill that you can have as a host, and a skill that dictates where you stand in the industry!" Then, he looked at his watch before smiling and saying, "Alright, that's all for today's lesson. Class is dismissed."

He turned around and stepped off the podium.

All of the students immediately gave an unending standing ovation!

Su Hongyan chuckled, then stood up as well to clap!

The dean and the other professors of the Broadcasting Department did the same!

How wonderful!

It was truly wonderful!

This initiation lecture was really one of a kind. Whether it was from a professional standpoint or the suitability and interest of the

subject, all was impeccable. Although the dean felt that there were some controversial points in there, everyone had their own views on things. They could still find common ground in the lesson, but more importantly, the students' interest was piqued right from the start of the lecture until the very end. There was no point during the lecture where anyone's concentration had lapsed. This was what made the lesson even more impressive!

Having Zhang Ye come and give the first lesson was indeed the correct decision!

From the expressions on the students' faces, it looked like they were looking more and more forward to the official start of their classes. All of them seemed to have a very positive attitude in welcoming the start of the new semester!

After the class ended.

The students walked off in groups.

"That was so cool!"

"Yeah, so this is what it means to attend university."

"Everyone says that all the classes in college are so boring and dry, but it doesn't seem like it!"

"I think so too. That was such a wonderful lesson that I don't understand why the upperclassmen would want to skip their classes."

Nearby, when some of the sophomores and juniors heard this, they couldn't help but smile wryly. Just you guys wait until school has officially started. Then you'll see the reality. In all of Media College, only Zhang Ye would dare and be able to lecture this way! None of the other teachers are like this at all!

## Chapter 1198: Officially engaged!

On the campus.

The students dispersed.

Su Hongyan went to look for Zhang Ye. "Zhang'er."

Zhang Ye turned around and said with a smile, "Yo, Teacher Su."

"Are you leaving already?" Su Hongyan asked.

Zhang Ye shrugged and said, "Yeah, class has ended, and I have no other business here."

Su Hongyan looked into his eyes and giggled. "You're a natural at teaching. Do come back again when you're free to give the kids a lecture."

Zhang Ye said in surrender, "Oh, spare me, Teacher Su. Shouldn't you know me by now? I might be good at other things, but I'm no good at giving a serious lecture. It's fine if I just come back occasionally to teach, but if you're thinking about getting me to hold classes every day for the students, I won't be able to do that. Besides, I still have a lot of work to handle on my end, so I'll be too busy for such things."

Su Hongyan glanced at him. "There's some good talent in my class; how about taking them under your wing?"

Zhang Ye quickly said, "Are you trying to bring harm upon them?"

Su Hongyan said in a half-threatening manner, "Will you take them or not?"

"Aiya, I will if there's an opportunity, alright?" Zhang Ye said helplessly.

Su Hongyan smiled and said, "OK, you said it yourself. I'll be sure remember it."

Around them, some students passing by spotted them.

"Ah!"

"Professor Zhang!"

"Alum!"

"Alum!"

"Please give me an autograph!"

"Me too!"

"Alum, I have a question to ask you about your line of work."

"I also have something I'd like to consult you about!"

More and more students were gathering around. Su Hongyan walked off with a smile on her face, leaving Zhang Ye to get surrounded by the group of students. He stood there for a long

The video of Zhang Ye's lecture was uploaded onto the school's intranet.

time, signing autographs for them and answering their questions.

Many of the students who did not get into the lecture hall or missed the lesson hurriedly clicked on it to watch. They ended up laughing for the entirety of the video!

"Hahaha!"

"Zhang Ye's lesson is so interesting!"

"It's so damn funny!"

"Chinese is still entertaining to learn!"

"Right, let's study it well!"

"Our alum is so cool!"

Quite a few celebrity teachers had been hired by Media College, and many famous hosts who held honorary teaching roles in the college. However, Zhang Ye was the only associate professor in the entire college whose popularity was one of the highest in the country. Zhang Ye was a singer and a poet as well, so not all of his popularity came from him being a host. But he was a true blue broadcasting graduate, and hosting was his main profession. Since he had won both the Silver and Golden Microphone Awards as a host, even if he could not be considered a spiritual leader of the hosting world, he would still be one of the top hosts around. Not many people would disagree with that.

Naturally, the students were in awe of him.

Because the man they were facing was not just an associate professor or some celebrity, he was the tallest peak in the Chinese world of hosting.

Ring ring ring. His cell phone rang.

As there were too many people around, Zhang Ye did not hear it. It was a female student close to him who alerted him instead. "Alum, is that your phone ringing?"

"Oh, it's really mine." Zhang Ye took it out and saw Wu Zeqing's name on the caller ID. He excused himself from the enthusiastic students and quickly went away to answer the call. "Hello, Old Wu. I just finished lecturing, what's the matter?"

Wu Zeqing said: "I'm at home now. My mother was just asking me about meeting your parents. Hur hur, she's quite anxious about it, so when is a good time?"

They had already talked about the two families meeting with each other, but the exact date was not set yet.

```
"Any time is fine."
```

<sup>&</sup>quot;Are you done with your work?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;Yes."

<sup>&</sup>quot;What about your parents?"

<sup>&</sup>quot;They're just idling at home."

<sup>&</sup>quot;Then why don't we let them meet today? You can check with

them first."

"No need, it shouldn't be a problem."

"Where should we meet?"

"We definitely cannot go out and have dinner. Everyone would recognize me wherever I went, and your status is special too. Uh, why don't we have it at your parents' place?"

"Sure, just check with your parents if they're busy today. We can always arrange for them to meet in a few days."

"What could they be busy with? My mom has been urging me for the past two days as well. Let's just go ahead with this arrangement. I'll give them a call and let you know after I've confirmed it with them."

Zhang Ye made the call on his drive back home.

"Mom, do you want to meet Old Wu's parents today?"

"What time?"

"How about tonight?"

"Great, that's really great. Your dad and I are free anytime!"

"Alright then, I'll come home to pick you two up. Get ready, alright?"

"Alright, alright, I got it."

When he reached home, his parents were changed and ready.

His father had dug up a tunic suit from somewhere that resembled something from 800 years ago. But wearing it, he looked rather spirited, and it did not look outdated on him at all. His mother was checking herself out in front of the mirror.

His father asked, "How did the lecture go?"

Zhang Ye said happily, "So good that there was critical acclaim."

His mother stood up. "Alright, let's go."

"Eh? You want to go now? We arranged the meeting for dinner tonight, so we can leave later in the afternoon," Zhang Ye said.

His mother grinned and said, "What do you know? We have to go out to buy some gifts first, and I have to get my hair done. This is our first time meeting them, so we mustn't be too casual about it, understand?"

His father, who rarely shared the same opinion as her, agreed, "I need to do my hair too. It's been such a long time since I've dyed it. All my grey hairs are starting to reappear."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "Alright then, let's go."

Buying things.

Dyeing their hair.

Doing makeup.

After going around all day, they finally finished at 4 in the afternoon.

• • •

At Old Wu's residence.

In the courtyard house.

Li Qinqin kept asking, "Are they here yet? Where are they?"

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "They should be arriving soon."

Wu Changhe worried, "There's no space left in the yard to park the car. Get Little Ye to drive it to the east entrance and park there."

"He knows." Right as Wu Zeqing finished speaking, there was a knock on the courtyard door.

"They're here! They've arrived." Li Qinqin went outside happily to welcome them.

When the door opened, Zhang Ye and his family stepped into the courtyard.

Zhang Ye immediately introduced everyone, "Auntie, Uncle, these are my parents."

Li Qinqin said very passionately, "Brother, Sister, come in quickly."

Wu Changhe did not have his usual stern look and was all smiles. "Come into the house and have a seat. We're probably older than you two by just a few years, so don't mind if we just address you two as brother and sister."

His father smiled and said, "Big Brother, there's no need to be so courteous to us. I've always liked watching you play Go, and now I've finally gotten the chance to meet you in person."

Wu Changhe's eyes lit up. "Bro, you like to play Go too?"

Zhang Ye's mother smiled and said, "He really liked Go in his younger days and was adamant that Little Ye sign up for extracurricular Go classes during elementary school."

"Then let's play two games later," Wu Changhe said happily.

His father quickly waved it off. "I can't, I'm terrible at Go."

Li Qinqin laughed and said, "Changhe will play anyone he can find. Our neighbors used to like visiting our home, but no one comes around these days."

Zhang Ye volunteered himself. "It's alright, I'll play Uncle."

Wu Changhe rolled his eyes and said, "I'm not playing you."

Zhang Ye laughed.

Next to Zhang Ye's parents, Wu Zeqing chuckled and said, "My dad can't beat Little Ye—that's why he's not willing to play him."

Everyone laughed.

In the house, after tea was served, everyone sat down and chatted up a storm.

"Little Wu is such a nice child."

"Little Ye is very nice too, I like him very much."

"It looks like the two of them have been dating for quite some time."

"Yeah, we only found out about it recently as well."

"Say, why did they have to keep it from us?"

"Hur hur, we wouldn't understand what the children these days are thinking."

Their meeting was arranged with the approval of both sides in regards to the relationship between Zhang Ye and Wu Zeqing. So there were no unnecessary issues brought up during the meeting. His parents liked Wu Zeqing, while Li Qinqin and Wu Changhe had also acknowledged Zhang Ye as their future son-in-law. As for buying a house? The betrothal gifts? None of them mattered since neither family lacked money, so there were no obstacles in their talks. With this common understanding, it was naturally going to be much easier to handle.

It was time for dinner.

Wu Zeqing and Zhang Ye were in charge of cooking today. Of course, the latter's contribution was as good as negligible. Other than messing around in the kitchen, this fellow was basically no help to Old Wu. He even secretly took a few bites of the dishes before serving them.

At the dining table.

Zhang Ye's mother said, "Big Bro, Big Sis, our children's relationship has progressed this far and we didn't know about it. Regarding their engagement, we wonder if you two have any traditions or practices that you might be particular about?"

Li Qinqin immediately waved her hand and said, "Oh, we're not fussy about that."

His father said, "That won't do. We'll do it according to your

traditions; we can't ignore them."

Wu Changhe laughed and said, "We aren't particular about it. When I got married to Zeqing's mom, we didn't even have any betrothal gifts. It was just a meal between two families and the wedding was considered complete."

Li Qinqin asked, "Do you have any traditions that need to be observed?"

His father immediately said, "We're not fussy either. We always meant to do it according to your traditions."

Li Qinqin smiled. "We only intended to have our two families meet for a simple meal to confirm the engagement. That's how we did it back then too."

Zhang Ye exclaimed, "Then does it mean that we're engaged as of today?"

Li Qinqin looked at her husband. "I think it counts?"

Wu Changhe nodded and said, "It does!"

His mother exclaimed, "But we haven't prepared anything. The sweets, alcohol, betrothal gifts..."

Li Qinqin smiled and said, "Those are just a formality, so let's not be too particular about them. We'll talk about the formalities again when it's time to hold their wedding."

His mother said excitedly, "Alrighty then, let's make today the day of our children's engagement!"

Wu Changhe said, "We're one big family now."

Li Qinqin asked, "As for their wedding, do you intend to make it a grand one or a simple one?"

"It has to be a grand wedding!" his mother said.

His father nodded. "Right, we'll hold a grand wedding for them."

Li Qinqin was thinking the same. "Then we'll leave it to you. If

there's anything you need our help with, feel free to let us know. We can help out too."

His mother was smiling from ear to ear. "Don't worry, we'll handle everything. I'll check the almanac for an auspicious day when I get home, then we'll set a wedding date for them."

Li Qinqin said, "Alright."

Wu Changhe raised his glass and said, "Brother, a toast."

"Cheers." His father clinked glasses with Wu Changhe.

Wu Zeqing stood up with a smile. "Uncle, Auntie, I can't hold my liquor well, so I'll use this cup of tea in place of wine to toast you two."

Zhang Ye hurriedly raised his glass and said to Old Wu's parents, "Uncle, Auntie, let me toast you two too. In the future, you can summon me anytime you need a hand at home. Just order me around like I'm your own son."

Li Qinqin was all smiles. "Sure, sure."

This was meant to be a meeting over dinner between the two families. But they never expected that this meal would end up as their official engagement party. Zhang Ye was so happy that he drank a lot more glasses of wine!

## Chapter 1199: 'When You Are Old'!

At night.

It was past 8 PM.

Zhang Ye's dad and Wu Changhe were having a game of Go in the room. His mother and Li Qinqin were both chatting happily as they discussed how the wedding should be held. Meanwhile, Zhang Ye and Wu Zeqing were spending time together in the west wing.

In the bedroom.

Zhang Ye was finally getting buzzed from drinking too much. He was starting to mumble a lot as he hugged Old Wu's waist.

Wu Zeqing gently massaged his temples for him. "If you can't drink, don't drink that much."

"Hai, I was just really happy today," Zhang Ye said exuberantly.

Old Wu chuckled. "For something that was set in stone long ago, why are you only feeling happy today?"

Zhang Ye laughed, "Haha, that's different. How can we compare setting it in stone with actually being engaged? Today, everything has been officially decided, so I'm finally feeling relieved."

Wu Zeqing smiled. "Were you afraid that I would run off with someone else?"

Zhang Ye was amused. "That's not it. I doubt you'd find anyone as good as me anyway."

Wu Zeqing squeezed his temples. "Hur hur, that's true."

There was no joking around.

There was no teasing either.

Just a simple and assuring "that's true."

Zhang Ye smiled and said, "If there's anything I am afraid of, there's just one thing."

Wu Zeqing asked, "Tell me."

Zhang Ye smacked his lips and said, "I'm afraid that all of this is just a dream. And when I open my eyes tomorrow, I'll wake up from it just like that."

The meaning behind these words would not be understood by anyone but Zhang Ye. To open one's eyes and see the world totally changed, to come to a place where one was a total stranger, he couldn't finish talking about it even if he had three days and three nights to do so. His experience so far was nothing short of mythical. Even if he were to tell it to anyone, no one would believe him. Sometimes, Zhang Ye really was scared he would wake up one day to find Old Wu no longer around and that everything else would disappear as well.

Old Wu replied, "There are times I feel afraid too."

Zhang Ye looked at her and asked, "What are you afraid of?"

Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "I'm afraid that I'll wake up one day and see that you're still young while I have become old."

Zhang Ye rolled his eyes. "You're so good at taking care of yourself, so how could that happen? C'mon, even if it was about getting old, I would be the one to age first. You're only a few years older than me, so I'd definitely age much faster."

Old Wu suddenly said, "If one day, I were to really grow old, would you—"

Footfalls interrupted her as they approached and the door opened.

Li Qinqin, Wu Changhe, and his parents had all come over.

Li Qinqin overheard the last part of their conversation, so she asked, "What about growing old?"

Wu Zeqing said gently, "It's nothing."

Wu Changhe said, "Your auntie and uncle said that they're

leaving soon."

"It's getting quite late, so we'd better get going," his mother said with a smile.

Zhang Ye stood up. "Alright then, Auntie and Uncle, we'll be going."

Li Qinqin smiled and said, "Come over when you're free. There's no need to call, just come as you please."

Zhang Ye grinned and said, "Don't worry, I'll treat this place like my own home and won't stand on ceremony. Oh yes, about that rosewood chair Uncle has, it looks really nice. Can I bring it home?"

Wu Changhe rolled his eyes. "How dare you!"

His mother whacked him on the back. "You're really not standing on ceremony, huh!"

Li Qinqin giggled, "Hahahaha."

Everyone laughed.

At the entrance of the courtyard, Old Wu's family were seeing Zhang Ye's family off.

When they returned back into the house, Li Qinqin casually asked, "Zeqing, what were you and Little Ye talking about earlier?"

Wu Changhe said, "Why are you poking your nose into the lovebirds' affairs for?"

"I'm just asking out of concern." Li Qinqin rolled her eyes at him and said, "Why do you keep involving yourself with everything. Just go and play Go and leave us mother and daughter be."

Wu Changhe harrumphed at them and returned to his room to switch on the computer.

A moment later, Wu Changhe exclaimed from inside his room, "Eh, my daughter, come over quick. Little Ye has just updated his

Weibo a moment ago!"

Li Qinqin rushed over as well. "Didn't he just get in the car?"

Wu Changhe said, "He probably updated it from his phone."

Wu Zeqing also went closer and lowered her head to see.

" When You Are Old 1 "

When you are old and grey and full of sleep, And nodding by the fire, take down this book, And slowly read, and dream of the soft look Your eyes had once, and of their shadows deep; How many loved your moments of glad grace, And loved your beauty with love false or true, But one man loved the pilgrim soul in you, And loved the sorrows of your changing face; And bending down beside the glowing bars,

Murmur, a little sadly, how Love fled

And paced upon the mountains overhead

And hid his face amid a crowd of stars.

- -Written on September 9th.
- —I, Lord Zhang, got engaged!

Li Qinqin smiled. "Oh, that Little Ye."

Wu Changhe pointed at the poem on the screen and said dismissively, "Look at this, how hackneyed can he get? When you're old? When you're old and grey? What day and age is it? Do people still fall for sweet nothings like that?"

Beside, Wu Zeqing smiled and said, "I do."

Wu Changhe was speechless.

Li Qinqin said, "You're just jealous of Little Ye's literary talent. Dearest daughter, you just don't know how your dad wooed me back then. He wrote letters to me and would always start them off with 'My dear comrade Qinqin.' Ooh, it gave me such goosebumps back then."

Wu Changhe was furious. "Li Qinqin, are you looking for a fight?"

Li Qinqin pouted and said, "See, he's panicking now that I've mentioned it."

Wu Zeqing stood there smiling, but her eyes fell back to the poem. In just a short span, she read it many, many times.

• • •

Meanwhile.

It blew up on Weibo!

When that poem was released, heroes from all over the place flocked to it. Zhang Ye's followers on Weibo had reached more than 10 million people a long time ago. On top of that, he did not usually post on Weibo. And when his Weibo was updated, it was rarely about his current status, pictures, or minor details of his life. It was always either used for writing poems or scolding people. In any case, it would always lead to major events, so the citizens and media personnel always paid close attention to it in case it got updated.

It was the same today.

The moment everyone saw the post, all of them were dumbfounded!

"Holy shit!"

"Teacher Zhang's gotten engaged?"

"What? That's impossible!"

"Someone is willing to marry such an immoral guy? Who would be so bold!"

"Hahaha, could it be that girl who is like a lilac in one of his poems?"

"I guess it should be her! Who could she be?"

"A celebrity? Or could it be just an ordinary girl?"

"Dunno, there's no news at all!"

"Those paparazzi suck at their jobs. Lord Zhang has gotten engaged, but they don't even know who the woman is? We need to give them negative reviews!"

"What a beautiful poem!"

"Zhang Ye's love poems are always different from other people's!"

"It's obvious he's been spoiled happy today. He even called himself 'Lord Zhang'! How shameless can he get! Haha!"

"No matter what, we ought to congratulate Zhang Ye first!"

"Show us her picture!"

"@ZhangYe! Which girl are you marrying?"

"They must have been secretly dating for a long time. Otherwise, they wouldn't have announced the engagement like this. Our media is behind the times, Zhang Ye has kept it too well-hidden!"

"I thought that with Teacher Zhang's temper, he would never find a partner in his lifetime."

"Pfft, I thought so too!"

"I just wonder who Mrs. Zhang is going to be!"

"Come on out, Mrs. Zhang!"

"Summoning Mrs. Zhang, please show yourself immediately!"

The netizens were stirring up a commotion!

Zhang Ye's looks had always been his disadvantage, but there were times when it turned into an advantage for him.

Although his appearance was not remarkable, it was a bit above average. So he clearly could not take the journey of an idol. He could only work harder and put in more effort than the other idols to be able to make a name for himself in the entertainment

industry. Every step of his had been extremely difficult. But likewise, now that he had climbed to his current position, it did not really have much of an effect on his popularity even when he announced that he was getting engaged. There was no need for him to hide or keep it a secret. He could openly make the announcement by posting it onto Weibo.

Others would not dare to do so!

Like Dong Shanshan.

Like Huo Dongfang.

Like Ning Lan.

Like Zhang Yuangi.

Some celebrities would have a clause in their contracts with their talent agencies to not get into a relationship for a certain number of years. All of this was done to prevent them from losing popularity, since some fans were pragmatic and would go to similar celebrities and become their fans if they knew their idol had gotten married. Countless cases happened in which many celebrities lost a great deal of their popularity after announcing their marriage. Of course, there were some who managed to maintain their fan bases, but no one really dared to take such a gamble.

However, Zhang Ye was not afraid of this. He really was not afraid.

That was why he could behave so much more freely than any of the other celebrities.

## Chapter 1200: The top few spots of the entertainment industry!

After returning home.

Before they even opened the door, they heard the phone in the living room ringing.

His mother picked up her pace to answer the call. It was from Zhang Ye's third uncle.

"Sis, Little Ye has gotten engaged?"

"Haha, yes."

"Aiyo, why didn't we know anything about this!"

"No one knew."

"Whose family's kid is it?"

"Little Ye won't allow me to say it. He wants to keep it a secret."

"We're all one family. Why's there a need to keep it a secret?"

"Hehe, because my daughter-in-law is someone special."

The calls kept coming one after another. There were calls from his maternal grandma, his uncles and aunties. When they found out about the news, all of them called over in surprise and tried their hardest to find out who his fiancée was. His mother wanted, of course, to say who it was. She had been forcing herself so hard to keep her lips sealed in recent days. But due to the fact that the engagement was very important and of great public concern, coupled with the fact that Wu Zeqing was no ordinary woman, she prevented herself from revealing the secret for the time being.

Zhang Ye was also busy taking calls on his cell phone.

Or, to be exact, he took the initiative to call every one of his friends. He did not wait for them to ask. Instead, he called them to let them know about the good news, happy as a clam!

First, he made a call to Yao Jiancai, his old partner he was on the best terms with.

"Old Yao, I've gotten engaged."

"Don't joke."

"Damn, I really did!"

"You don't even have a girlfriend, so who are you getting engaged to?"

"Heh, who says that I don't have a girlfriend?"

"Kid, are you telling the truth?"

"It's so true that it can't get any more true. Hurry up and congratulate me."

"Congratulations! Ai, which family's daughter was unlucky enough to get picked by you?"

"Your sister!"

Then he called Beijing Television's Hu Fei.

"Brother Hu."

"I saw your Weibo, what's up with that?"

"Haha, I just got engaged."

"This came too suddenly, but it's still good news! Congratulations!"

"Thank you."

"When's the wedding?"

"It should be soon."

"Great, let us know when the date is set. We'll definitely be there!"

"That's a must!"

Over a dozen calls were made, and Zhang Ye informed all those

he could inform. When he finally checked his cell phone, the Celebrity Goof Group was also exploding with messages. Everyone in there was trying to guess who Zhang Ye's fiancée was.

Ning Lan: "Haha, who do you guys think is so unlucky?"

Fan Wenli: "lol"

Chen Guang: "Boss Zhang has kept the secret amazingly well. Even I did not know a thing about it!"

Huo Dongfang: "Anyway, congratulations!"

Xiaodong: "Ahhhh, could Boss Zhang just be joking around?"

Chen Guang: "That might be the case too. Hardly anything honest ever spews out of his mouth."

At this moment, Zhang Ye appeared. "It's not a joke, I'm serious."

Amy sent a voice message that said: "You've finally shown yourself! Everyone here is guessing whether she's also in our industry. So then, who is it? I'm so curious!"

Everyone kept flooding the chat group with messages and were constantly asking who it was!

Many of the big name celebrities lurking in the group also came out to observe the ruckus.

Zhang Ye answered: "She's both in and not in showbiz."

Ning Lan: "Do we know her?"

Zhang Ye thought for a moment, then typed up a response with a smile on his face. "You've all probably heard of her, but I'm not sure if you know her personally. I'll keep it a secret for now and announce it when we're getting married."

Director Li Ke: "Are you trying to suffocate us with suspense?"

Fan Wenli: "When will the wedding reception be held?"

Zhang Ye: "Hai, it's not set yet."

Li Xiaoxian laughed. "But I must admit, Teacher Zhang's way of dealing with this is so cool. He can announce such news as he wishes, or get married if he decides to, unlike the rest of us. We even have to keep a low profile when we're meeting up with a male friend as we're afraid that it will lead to gossip and cause our popularity to drop, much less talk about marriage. I really envy Teacher Zhang for that."

Amy sighed. "That's right. Lord Zhang's fanbase is far more dependable than ours. Now that he's reached where he is, he doesn't have to worry about anything else. But for us, we're still unable to get past the issue of marriage. I wonder how many people can get past it."

Ning Lan: "Amy, you're dating?"

Amy: "Would I dare?"

Xiaodong: "Heehee, Amy's thinking of earning more money first before getting married when she no longer has anything to worry about. By then, she'll have officially bid farewell from the entertainment industry."

Everyone started discussing how "celebrities could get married without losing fans" and engaged in deep discussion. Using Zhang Ye as an example, and highlighting many other cases of celebrities in the entertainment industry, they did some analysis before finally arriving at a surprising conclusion—how can a celebrity get married without losing fans?

Hur hur!

Only God would know something like that!

On the very same night, the media was also having a grand ol' time.

"Zhang Ye announces his engagement!"

"The great reveal of Zhang Ye's fiancée!"

"Breaking news! Zhang Ye secretly obtains certificate of marriage!"

"According to eyewitnesses, Zhang Ye often has late night meetings with Dong Shanshan!"

"The exclusive reveal of Zhang Ye's fiancée: university classmate Yu Yingyi!"

There were all kinds of rumors, many of them sounding very official and true. All kinds of expertly photoshopped pictures started appearing as well, but were in fact just random people trying to ride the wave. In the end, they even bamboozled some of the official media outlets who started blindly analyzing things without verifying sources. A lot of people swore they figured out who it was.

Without even looking at it, Zhang Ye knew they had gotten it all wrong. If anyone really knew who his fiancée was, they would never release the news just like that.

. . .

At night.

After the commotion died down, everyone got on with their own things again.

Zhang Ye browsed the updated Chinese Celebrity Rankings Index and checked on his current ranking. He was still in first place in the A-list rankings and his popularity score had grown by quite a bit again. But looking at the few people in the S-list rankings who were standing at the top of the entertainment industry, he was still not closing in on their popularity score by much. Of those top few people, someone had just played the main lead of a movie that grossed over 300 million RMB in the box office, while another's new TV drama set the country ablaze. There was also someone whose new song had jumped into the middle of the charts on an authoritative international music chart. Every one of them was

better than the other.

Zhang Ye was very popular!

But so were the others! They were also building on their fanbases every day!

Although, among those at the top, there was a Heavenly King whose popularity was no longer as great as his younger days and was going downhill without gaining much popularity these days. But a starving camel is still bigger than a horse. With so many years of accumulated popularity, he was not someone Zhang Ye could easily surpass in a short amount of time. The S-list rankings had not been updated in so long. It had always been those few who ruled the entertainment industry and was a place so monolithic that there had barely been any changes to it.

Looking at those familiar names, Zhang Ye made up his mind. After getting engaged, his fighting spirit and motivation were kindled. All he was thinking about was how to break into that monolith and gain a foothold in the S-list rankings.

Impossible?

Unrealistic?

That wasn't something that Zhang Ye was willing to consider!

Because this was something that he had to do sooner or later!

There was still a very large gap between the A-and S-list rankings. If one could really break into the S-list, the position would probably not matter since it was theoretically not much of a difference who ranked higher or lower. They were revered all the same and were at the top of the food chain. But an A-list celebrity was just different from an S-list celebrity. No matter how close one's popularity score was to theirs, the status was just not the same—this was also why Zhang Ye was so stubborn about climbing to the very top. He had already opened his account on the Asian Celebrity Rankings Index, but he didn't pay much attention to it

because he knew that he needed to get to the top in China first. Only with that base could he have a future within Asia and aim for the international entertainment scene. Otherwise, if he were to aim for the international market without having gained a proper foothold domestically, it would obviously not be reliable. Everything had to be done in a fastidious and proper way.

He would just have to put this on the agenda then!

He needed to secure one of these top spots in the Chinese entertainment industry!

## **Table of Contents**

<u>I'm Really A Superstar</u>
<u>Synopsis</u>
<u>Copyright</u>
Chapter 1101: Changhe 9-dan gets utterly demolished!
Chapter 1102: Wu Changhe calls for reinforcements!
Chapter 1103: Zhang Ye vs. Hu Liang 7-dan!
Chapter 1104: Zhang Ye vs. Xu Han 8-dan
Chapter 1105: Zhang Ye vs. China Qiyuan!
Chapter 1106: Sweeping China Qiyuan single-handedly!
Chapter 1107: The world number one in Go makes his move!
Chapter 1108: Who's playing?
Chapter 1109: Who won?
Chapter 1110: YE appears again!
Chapter 1111: Just who could this godly person be?
Chapter 1112: An artificial intelligence issues a challenge to humanity!
Chapter 1113: Xiang Rong? I think I've heard of him before!
Chapter 1114: Zhang Ye's contribution!
Chapter 1115: Humanity vs. Artificial Intelligence (Start)
Chapter 1116: Humanity vs. Artificial Intelligence (Middle)
Chapter 1117: Humanity vs. Artificial Intelligence (End)
Chapter 1118: Approaching YE for help?
Chapter 1119: The Go world's last line of defense!
Chapter 1120: For humanity's sake, I am willing to accept the challenge!
Chapter 1121: An uproar at the press conference!
Chapter 1122: The final battle of the war between humans and the machines
Chapter 1123: The match begins!
Chapter 1124: Zhang Ye really knows how to play Go!
Chapter 1125: Capturing race!
Chapter 1126: Zhang Ye's Divine Move!
Chapter 1127: Face-smacking Zhang gets serious!
Chapter 1128 Found its weakness!
Chapter 1129 The Go masters from a different world!
Chapter 1130 The second game of the war between humans and machines!
Chapter 1131 A strange opening that dumbfounds everyone!
Chapter 1132 An inconceivable way of playing The Cosmic Style!

Chapter 1133 Peter gets dealt a blow!

Chapter 1134: Zhang Ye's Hand of God! Chapter 1135: Victory! Chapter 1136: The press conference! **Chapter 1137: New tactics?** Chapter 1138: Zhang Ye plays the first of the three most complex josekis! Chapter 1139: The astonishing variations of the Great Slant Joseki! Chapter 1140: Zhang Ye plays the second of the three most complex josekis! Chapter 1141: Playing all three of the most complex josekis! Chapter 1142: You're done here, it's my turn! Chapter 1143: Go can be played this way? Chapter 1144: Humanity wins! Chapter 1145: A hero is born! Chapter 1146: How lonely it is to be invincible! Chapter 1147: The eternal line of defense for humanity's wisdom! Chapter 1148: Love comes to fruition! Chapter 1149: The Celebrity Rankings Index is updated! Chapter 1150: A global mathematical conjecture proved! Chapter 1151: Can you be a little bit more mindful! Chapter 1152: The only dual faculty professor in Peking University! Chapter 1153: Sitting firmly at the top of the A-list! Chapter 1154: Zhang Ye's Asian Popularity Ranking! Chapter 1155: Establishing Zhang Ye's Studio! Chapter 1156: Hiring a bodyguard for the studio? Chapter 1157: The studio officially opens! Chapter 1158: The first big project! Chapter 1159: Zhang Ye is going to the Olympic opening ceremony! Chapter 1160: International Superstar Lillian! Chapter 1161: 'Beijing Welcomes You' makes its debut! Chapter 1162: Before the opening ceremony! Chapter 1163: Hello, fellow smoker! Chapter 1164: Because I'm his mother! Chapter 1165: An Olympic theme song that astounds the world! Chapter 1166: Soaring in the Asian popularity rankings! Chapter 1167: The crowd goes ballistic! Chapter 1168: The referees get beaten up! Chapter 1169: The surveillance footage gets brought to light! Chapter 1170: The Leg of God! Chapter 1171: International Buzz! Chapter 1172: A shocking statement from the Organizing Committee for the

Olympic Games! Chapter 1173: The sports world's friendly attitude towards Zhang Ye! Chapter 1174: Zhang Ye's Olympic commentary! Chapter 1175: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 1 of 5) Chapter 1176: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 2 of 5) Chapter 1177: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 3 of 5) Chapter 1178: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 4 of 5) Chapter 1179: Zhang Ye commentates the Olympics (Part 5 of 5) Chapter 1180: Zhang Ye's first music video single? Chapter 1181: Zhang Ye gets into another fight! Chapter 1182: The two extremes of the entertainment industry! Chapter 1183: A song called 'To Youth' Chapter 1184: Shooting the music video together! Chapter 1185: A smashing release! Chapter 1186: Earning rave reviews! Chapter 1187: An invitation to the Welcoming Ceremony! Chapter 1188: Starting a gang fight (First Half) Chapter 1189: Starting a gang fight (Second half) Chapter 1190: Let us finish singing this last song! Chapter 1191: Uncompromising through the years! Chapter 1192: Zhang Ye gets arrested again! Chapter 1193: A pure heart! Chapter 1194: Released! Chapter 1195: The prospective daughter-in-law comes to visit! Chapter 1196: Good kid, beautifully done! Chapter 1197: Zhang Ye gives his first lesson at his alma mater! Chapter 1198: Officially engaged!

Chapter 1198: Officially engaged!
Chapter 1199: 'When You Are Old'!

Chapter 1200: The top few spots of the entertainment industry!